

## CONTENTS

### PART I.

#### WEST TEXAS UNDER THE DOMINION OF SPAIN, FRANCE AND MEXICO

- I. Explorations and Expeditions.
- II. Old Missions. Forts and Early Colonization.
- III. Industrial, Social and Local Conditions.

### PART II.

#### WEST TEXAS BEFORE ANNEXATION AND AFTER THE BEGINNING OF AMERICAN COLONIZATION

- I. Colonial Development.
- II. Industrial Enterprises, Overland Transportation, Early Roads, and Well-Known Places.
- III. Important Expeditions.

### PART III.

#### THE FRONTIER FROM ANNEXATION UNTIL THE CESSATION OF INDIAN HOSTILITIES

Effect of Annexation and Further Explorations and Expeditions.

- II. Federal Forts, Posts, and Stations.
- III. Forts, Posts, and Stations (Continued).
- IV. Characteristics of Early Army Cantonments.
- V. Early Settlers, and their Domestic, Social, and Other Activities.
- VI. Early Roads and Overland Transportation.
- VII. The Civil War and Its Effect on the Frontier.

### PART IV. COUNTY ORGANIZATION AND COUNTY HISTORY

I. Creation of New Counties - Bexar County - Travis County - Comal County - Denton County - Gillespie County - Hays County - Medina County - Williamson County - Cooke County - Bell County - El Paso County - McLennan County - Tarrant County - Hill County - Johnson County - Bosque County - Coryell County - Burnet County - Uvalde County - Bandera County - Kerr County - Llano County - San Saba County - Lampasas County - Comanche County - Erath County - Parker County - Wise County - Young County - Jack County - Palo Pinto County - Brown County - Blanco County - Mason County - Hamilton County - Montague County - Clay County - Stephens County - Kendall County - Coleman County - Hood and Somervell Counties - Menard County - Eastland County - Shackelford County - Presidio County - Tom Green County - McCulloch County - Callahan County - Taylor County - Throckmorton County - Further Activities, Accomplishments and Reward of Early Western Frontiersmen.

### PART V. INDIANS OF WESTERN TEXAS

- I. The Early Indians of West Texas.
- II. Indians Found on the Frontier By the First Settlers.
- III. Indian Activities and Engagements From 1829-1840.
- IV. Activities and Engagements From 1840-1846.
- V. Relations With Texas Indians From 1846-1854.
- VI. Relations With Indians From 1854-1859.

- VII. Bitter Relations With the Indians on the Brazos Reserve, and Elsewhere.
- VIII. Additional Indian Raids During 1859.
- IX. West Texas Indian Troubles in 1860.
- X. Frontier Protection and Indian Activities in 1861 and 1862.
- XI. Frontier Protection and Indian Activities and Depredations During 1863.
- XII. Frontier Protection From Indian Activities During 1864.
- XIII. Indian Fights and Depredations During 1865.
- XIV. Indian Activities and Depredations During 1866.
- XV. Indian Activities and Depredations During 1867.
- XVI. Indian Activities and Depredations During 1868.
- XVII. Indian Activities and Depredations During 1869.
- XVIII. Relations With the Indians During 1870.
- XIX. Indian Activities and Depredations During 1871.
- XX. Indian Fights and Depredations During 1872.
- XXI. Indian Fights and Depredations During 1875.
- XXII. Indian Activities and Depredations, and Change in Government Policy During 1874-1875.
- XXIII. Miscellaneous Fights and Depredations, and Summary of Relations between the Savages and Citizens.

## **INTRODUCTION**

The old pioneer settlers and their descendants, old settlers associations and others have long wished to see a work that would accurately present a true and reliable account of the early West Texas frontier. It is true several books relating to some phase of the history of Western Texas have been written. Some were county histories. Others, personal reminiscences. Others related to the cattle industry, etc. But we know of no work previously published, which gives a detailed account of the early history of the West Texas frontier.

It is not our purpose to create strife between different sections of the state. But we are prone to say that it is indeed unfortunate some of our historians, heretofore, have failed to accord to Western Texas the consideration to which it is entitled. Many important historic events, which occurred in the western part of our state, are seldom, or never, mentioned. Whereas, things of less importance, which occurred in other sections, are almost invariably given a prominent place in our Texas history. Such failure, however, no doubt, is partly due to the fact that more recent historians have followed too closely the works of their predecessors. For thirty years after the citizens of the United States began to establish colonies in Texas, the population was confined, almost exclusively, to the Eastern and Southern parts of the state, and occupied practically the same territory previously inhabited by the Spanish and French. During this period several important works pertaining to the history of Texas, were published and naturally related primarily to the populated districts - the Eastern and Southern districts of Texas. These works have been guiding stars to more recent writers, and have helped to give the history of our state its framework and outline. Perhaps, then, it were but natural for more modern authors to follow too closely the works of earlier historians, and have failed to expand with the advance of civilization. As a consequence, we feel, that no apologies are due for offering this edition, devoted to the early history of Western Texas.

The present work, however, like all others, is subject to criticism and no doubt contains mistakes, for it is impossible to present so much material without occasionally making an error in spelling names, giving dates. etc. Nevertheless during the last four years this author has worked independently and alone financed himself and has expended much more time, trouble and money, than prudence would demand in his endeavor to prepare a work that is as reliable and accurate as can be written.

We began to gather data for the present work during the summer of 1925, and within three or four months, could have published a mass of material. But since 1925 and up until the present - June 24, 1929 - on an average, approximately two-thirds of the author's time has been devoted to this edition. During this period we have driven

approximately 30,000 miles, have made a personal campaign into practically all of the former frontier counties to gather information from county records, and to interview several hundred surviving old settlers, practically all of whom ranged from 70 to 97 years of age. And except in a few instances, and then only to ascertain names, etc., we only interviewed those old pioneers who were familiar with the frontier history, because of their personal experience and not by hearsay. Too these statements were nearly always found reliable. And although there were honest, the statements of the younger generations who borrowed their information from older members of their families were nearly always found unreliable. The author also made trips into Oklahoma and New Mexico, dug into the early files in the capitol at Austin, and spent approximately who months doing research work among the dusty and dingy old records and archives in the department of War, Department of Interior, Post Office Department, Census Bureau, and elsewhere in Washington, D.C.

Due consideration was given to documentary evidence on the one hand and to the statements of surviving old settlers on the other. The author used a checking system, and endeavored to consider both documentary and oral evidence in accordance with those recognized rules of law followed by able judges of the bench and bar.

But true to expectation, often the author noticed considerable variations in the statements of surviving old settlers. In such instances, each individual firmly felt his versions were correct. The author, however, endeavored to iron out the differences when possible by interviewing other early pioneers who were familiar with such disputed events by checking with the records, etc. And in practically every case, the plausible truth would soon appear. For example: On one occasion where the honest old pioneer differed, Mr. M\_\_\_\_\_ said to the author, "You never could have convinced me I was wrong had you not been in possession of that letter."

It has been our aim to not only present historic events as accurately as possible, but to arrange the material in chronological order in a style to show the relation of one event to another and to show the effects of various events upon others. We have covered, however, only the earlier periods of Western Texas and except in a few instances do not go beyond the cessation of Indian hostilities. No attempt has been made to give a detailed account of all battles, actions, etc., of the United States soldiers and Indians, nor of the marauding activities of West Texas desperadoes, for a detailed account of either of those subjects alone, would fill a volume. The activities of the Unites States soldiers should properly be covered in a separate work. And, needless to say, the desperadoes of Western Texas, except in a very few instances, operated after the Indian activities were brought to a close, and after those periods covered by this edition.

The history of Western Texas has not only been greatly overlooked, but too little attention has been given to the approximately three centuries of picturesque and important Spanish, French, and Mexican history of Texas, and to the history of our state at large. In fact, the curriculums of our high schools and colleges except in a very few instances contain no advanced courses in the history of Texas. We are interested in the history of our own state and advanced courses in the history of Texas should certainly be offered in all of our higher educational institutions.

On a number of occasions, in our treatment of Indians, often we refer to the savages in uncomplimentary terms, because of their brutal conduct. But we do not intend to create bitter feelings about any of the various tribes, for most of them have now been peaceable for more than fifty years, and it is the Christian duty of all of us to treat them kindly, and to accord to these people, the real Americans, an opportunity to be bettered by the advance of civilization.

It is impossible to give the names at this time of all of those individuals to whom the author is indebted for furnishing information for the present work, but the names of practically all are given in the foot-notes under various sections. But we have endeavored to be fair, and when the works of others were consulted and used as a reference, such reference has been mentioned in the foot-notes. In fact, we have gone further, and often given references to works from which we derived no information. But when possible, we have always endeavored to obtain original material and perhaps three-fourths of the data in this edition was obtained from original and primary sources.

But we are deeply indebted to Major Brooks, Mr. Rosafy, Mr. Beck, and others of the War Department; Mr. Simpson, in the office of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, the officials of the Post Office Department and Census Bureau; Assistants in the Library of Congress, and others who were employed in the various departments in Washington. We are also indebted to Mr. Arthur A. Curry, librarian, and his assistants in charge of the Texas Christian University Library, Miss Harriet Smither, and others in the Texas State Library, Mrs. Charles Scheuber, librarian, Mrs. Paul Baker, and others in charge of the Fort Worth Carnegie Library, county officials in charge of county records in various West Texas counties, the Adjutant-General and his assistants at Austin: Misses Carry Searcy and Irene Beaver, Messrs. T.O. Mayfield and William S. Bryant, the author's typists and stenographers. And last, but not least, the author is most deeply indebted to his devoted wife, who so often assisted in the preparation of the present work, and denied herself due necessities in order that the present work could be published.

**PART I  
WEST TEXAS UNDER THE DOMINION OF SPAIN,  
FRANCE AND MEXICO**

**CHAPTER I  
EXPLORATIONS AND EXPEDITIONS**

**1. Cabeza de Vaca and Companions.** – After suffering many misfortunes, Cabeza de Vaca and companions found themselves stranded along the shores of the Gulf Coast of Texas. The bewildered Indians of this section, in some instances, thought these unfortunate explorers divine beings from a different world. But they decided to push on toward the newly established settlements in Old Mexico, and departed from the Texas coast about 1535. Historians do not exactly agree concerning the route pursued; but practically all are of the opinion the expedition passed through the central part of Western Texas and crossed the Rio Grande either in the vicinity of El Paso, or somewhere farther south. The explorers, no doubt, crossed the head waters of the Colorado and may have gone as far north as the country bordering along the Brazos. From the Rio Grande, the expedition moved southwestward, and in a short time reached other Spanish explorers, who were penetrating through the wilds of New Spain.

Cabeza de Vaca and his companions were, perhaps, the first Europeans to pass across the prairies and plains and through the portals of the mountains of Western Texas.

**2. Francisco Vasquez de Coronado and Hernando de Soto.** – The news of the discoveries of Cabeza de Vaca and others in the new Spanish provinces, soon reached Europe. The interest there, as well as in Old Mexico, became so intense, and the narratives of the Northern Indians so grossly exaggerated, the adobe villages in the upper regions soon changed to cities of gold. But such stories were not without a reward, for they induced additional explorers to venture into the northern wilds.

The first expedition to receive our attention was in charge of Francisco Vasquez de Coronado. In April of 1540 Coronado and his expedition left San Miguel de Culiacan. Their route was across the Yaqui to the Corazones and Sonora Valley. They then advanced northward, and finally reached the present state of New Mexico. Here the party spent the major portion of the winter. In the following year this expedition crossed the river and advanced eastward toward the plains in quest of a place called Quivara, previously reported to be a rich and populous Indian district in the East. Not unlike the routes of practically all other explorers across an unknown country and over uncharted lands, it is impossible to exactly trace the course of Coronado and his men. Nevertheless, they were perhaps, the first Europeans to see the Panhandle and Plains of Texas. It is doubtful, however, they advanced as far north as the present state of Kansas, as some have

supposed. Nor did they find the rich and fabulous cities of the East. When Coronado and his command turned their eyes homeward, they passed through New Mexico and in due time safely reached the Spanish settlements in the interior of New Spain.

About two years after Coronado and his men made their expedition across the Plains of Texas, Hernando De Soto made an exploration from the East into the same territory. De Soto and party after sailing up the Mississippi a considerable distance, left their ships and advanced to the far West. No doubt this expedition discovered the western portion of Texas.

**3. Other Important Expeditions in Western Texas During the Sixteenth Century.** – An expedition headed by Augustine Rodriguez, a Catholic missionary, set out from San Bartolomi Valley, Southern Chihuahua during 1581 in quest of the country discovered to the north and northeast. Two other Franciscans, Padres Juan de Santa Maria and Francisco Lopez, about nine soldiers and approximately the same number of Indians accompanied Rodriguez. The expedition left San Bartolomi Valley on the 6th of June 1581 and followed the Conchos River to Old Mexico to where it empties into the Rio Grande near the present town of Presidio, Texas. From there they ascended the Rio Grande to New Mexico. The soldiers returned but the friars remained among the Indians for the purpose of doing missionary work.

In the following year Antonio Espejo, accompanied by Beltran and fourteen other soldiers pursued the same route in search of Rodriguez and his companions. But when Espejo reached the Tigua pueblos, he learned that Rodriguez and the friars had been massacred by the Indians. From the Tigua pueblos, Espejo pushed on eastward and visited the buffalo plains previously discovered by Coronado. Espejo, desiring to return to Mexico by a more direct route, followed the Pecos to its mouth. From there, he returned to the interior of Old Mexico.

Gasper Castano de Sosa, the governor of Nuevo Leon, in 1599, apparently without governmental authority and with a colony of nearly two hundred citizens came out of Old Mexico crossed the Rio Grande and ascended the Pecos River. Gasper Castano de Sosa visited and received the submission of about thirty pueblos, but in 1591, was arrested, chained and carried back to Old Mexico by Captain Morlete Juan Gomez and fifty soldiers, sent into the provinces of the north for that purpose.

Bonnilla and Humana, in 1595, advanced against some rebellious natives of the North. They extended their expedition into the land visited by Coronado. They too, apparently were acting without authority. A quarrel arose among themselves and Bonnilla was murdered by Humana.

Afterwards, Humana, and all of his men but two were massacred by Indians. The survivors brought the news of the fate of the expedition back to the Spanish settlements.

Juan de Onate seemed to be more successful than the three previous explorers, for he was commissioned to make a campaign into the northern provinces. In 1596 he led a large party of soldiers and colonists to the country bordering on the upper Rio Grande. Misfortune hindered him in his progress, but he reached the region of El Paso in 1598. The pueblos of that vicinity were soon subdued and Franciscan missionaries placed in the pueblos of six nations. Onate carried his expedition on into New Mexico.

**4. Discoveries of West Texas from 1600 to 1700.** – In 1601 Juan de Onate accompanied by Velasco and Vergara and eighty soldiers, started out in quest of the fabulous Quivira, which had caused so much consternation among the early conquerors and explorers. They, too, crossed the buffalo plains where they were joined by a large force of Indians. This expedition, like others, found Quivira tribes, but the Quiviras were living in wigwams and not so rich and prosperous as had been previously reported. The Indians, who joined the expedition in the vicinity of the buffalo plains, were anxious to make war against the Quivirias. But when the Spanish refused, it is reported the plains Indians waged war against the Spaniards themselves, and lost one thousand warriors. But we are of the opinion the number of Indians reported killed was greatly exaggerated. Onate then returned to New Mexico.

During 1611 he again led another expedition into the east and, no doubt, visited the Panhandle of Texas and other points in the western part of the state.

Several years later, a Catholic missionary by the name of Juan de Salas made an expedition among the Indians about three hundred and twenty-five miles east of Santa Fe. He was on a good will tour. The expedition, perhaps, reached the Brazos, somewhere in the vicinity of Old Fort Belknap. The Indians visited were called Jumanas.

In 1629, Estevan Perea and Didaeo Lopez, Catholic missionaries, ventured into the same territory and were very successful in converting the Jumanas. During 1632, Juan de Salas and Diego Ortega, with a small guard, again visited the Jumanas and named the river upon which they lived the Rio de Nueces because of the large number of pecans found growing along the stream. The river visited in this instance was, no doubt, the Brazos or Red or Colorado River and not the river called Nueces today.

During 1634 Azonzo Vaca led an expedition approximately nine hundred miles east of Santa Fe into the land of the Quivira. In 1650 Captain Hernan Martin and Diego del Castillo went to the country of the Jumanas, which had been

visited by Juan de Salas and Diego Ortega approximately eighteen years before. They remained with the Junamas about six months, and then advanced about one hundred and fifty miles farther down the river. Diego de Guadalajara, with thirty soldiers and two hundred allies, in 1654, was sent by the governor of New Mexico to the land of the Jumanas. And in 1662 Gov. Diego de Penalosa, if we are to believe his own report, which seems to be greatly exaggerated, made an expedition into the country of the Quivira. This last group of expeditions were not from Old Mexico, as we would suppose, but came from New Mexico, and penetrated through the very heart of West Texas and the Plains.

By 1683 New Mexico was enjoying several Spanish settlements. But that year an Indian uprising occurred and, as a consequence, the Spanish settlers of that section were forced to retreat southward. They made a temporary settlement in the vicinity of El Paso.

In 1683 a native of the tribe of Jumanas appeared at El Paso and petitioned the people to send a missionary to convert more of his people. In response to his supplication, Padres Nicholas Lopez, Juan de Zavalepa and Antonio Acebedo were sent on the expedition. The party went down the Rio Grande to Presidio del Norte. There Acebedo remained, and the expedition pushed on toward the land of the Jumanas. They took an eastward course and crossed the Pecos River. From there they continued in the same direction until they reached their destination. But it appears this expedition spent only a short period among the Indians and returned to the Spanish settlements.

The natives of the Texas territory now see a new light showing above the horizon in the east: A new nation at this period of history enters into a contest with the Spanish for the purpose of establishing a claim to the lands later known as Texas. Robert Cavelier Sieur de la Salle was commissioned by Louis XIV of France to plant a French colony on the Gulf of Mexico. The expedition announced that it was its intention to plant a colony near the mouth of the Mississippi. But they missed their mark and settled on Matagorda Bay. Here the French planted their colony. This expedition, perhaps, failed to reach any part of the territory covered in the present work. Nevertheless, we shall give an account of the French colony for it lays a predicate for future operations of both the French and Spanish in attempting to establish their claims to the border lands of Texas.

The expedition sailed from France in August of 1684. It consisted of three hundred persons. There were soldiers, laborers, servants, girls seeking husbands, families, and in fact a diversified class of citizenship. The expedition landed at Santo Domingo in September, and one of the ships, named

St. Francois, and laden with munitions, tools and supplies, was captured by the Spaniards. La Salle's being confined in bed two months with fever further delayed the expedition. But finally in November the three remaining ships, Joli, Belle and Aimable set sail for the Gulf Coast. After finally reaching the point where they desired to stop, the Belle entered Matagorda Bay, but the Aimable was wrecked while crossing the bar. This occurred February 20, 1685.

Dissenting opinions prevailed from the very start, and internal troubles continued to arise among the colonists. As a consequence the Joli, in charge of Capt. Beaujeu sailed back to France. The Colony now consisted of approximately one hundred and eighty people. The French built a rude fort and established their colony on the southwestern shore of Matagorda Bay. The new colony was called St. Louis but was later moved to a more suitable site farther up the river. Here strife and suffering continued. Some of the party were soon killed by the natives and a few others deserted and elected to live among the savages. One man was hanged, another killed by a rattlesnake and a few lost their lives by drowning. More than thirty people died of disease.

In November of 1685, La Salle set out with thirty men to discover the Mississippi; but he returned in March of the following year after being unable to find that particular stream. On the other hand he found his colonists in a most serious condition. So La Salle again resolved to attempt to travel overland to the Mississippi, and on this trip intended to go to Illinois and Canada for aid. He started out with twenty men in April of 1686 and left Joutel in command at St. Louis. But La Salle returned in October with only eight men, for twelve of his number had either perished or deserted and joined the Indians. And as in the first instance he again failed to find the Mississippi. By this time his original colony of a hundred and eighty had dwindled down to only fifty, and Canada appeared to be the only source of relief. In January of 1687, La Salle with twenty men again started for the far north. But when the party reached the Trinity River La Salle was killed by his own men. Others were murdered and about half of the survivors deserted and joined the Indians. The other half, under the leadership of Joutel, advanced to the Arkansas where they fortunately met a party of Frenchmen who had been sent from Canada to the mouth of the Mississippi as a relief to La Salle's ill-fated expedition. The relief party from Canada was under the leadership of Tonty. The following year another expedition was sent out of Canada in search of the survivors of the French colony. But this second relief expedition failed to find any of the colonists.

The French settlement, on the Texas Coast continued to suffer and finally in 1688 the Indians killed all of the survivors excepting about five, who were made captives.

In 1686-7 two Spanish expeditions by water under Juan Enrique Barroto and Andres Perez were sent out to find the French but only found the wrecked Aimable and nothing more.

It remained for Governor Alonzo de Leon of Coahuila to find the former site of the French post. A French refugee drifted to Coahuila and there reported the news of the French colony. Governor Alonzo de Leon of Coahuila left Monclova March 23, 1689, and crossed the Rio Grande above the mouth of the Pecos River. On his way eastward, he crossed and named the Nueces, Hondo, Medina and Guadalupe Rivers; and these streams still maintain the same names. But the Spanish governor and his men learned the fate of the colony from the natives before they reached their destination. When the Spanish reached the place where La Salle had planted his colony, only broken muskets, a dismantled cannon and other articles left by the French could be found. The colonists had perished and disappeared: The governor returned by the same route over which he came. As their trip was made in the spring, Governor Alonzo de Leon and his men were much impressed with the beauty of the country.

Governor Alonzo de Leon's report of the splendid territory over which he and his companions had traveled so impressed his superior officers, they resolved to send the governor on a second expedition. This second expedition left Monclova in March, 1690, and followed the former route. The governor and his party located on the Trinity River and their place of settlement was called San Francisco de los Tejas. The expeditions of the Spanish under Governor Leon found several surviving refugees of La Salle's ill-fated colony living among the natives, and heard of others. The counter movement by the Spanish to settle East Texas marks the beginning of a long struggle between France and Spain to establish their claim to Texas.

This brings us to the close of another century of early explorations and expeditions. And for nearly two hundred years Texas has been repeatedly traversed east and west, north and south by the Spanish. Since the landing of La Salle's colony France has had her eyes on Texas; and with the dawn of another century we see evidences of additional French explorations and expeditions pushing out toward the prairies and plains of the Lone Star State.



The bluebonnet, the State flower of Texas. This scene was snapped about nine miles east of Weatherford. When Alonza de Leon made his trip through Texas in 1689 he failed to find sufficient adjectives to satisfactorily describe the beauty of the Texas bluebonnet and other state flowers. And almost invariably the many pioneers interviewed by the author voluntarily praised the early virgin scenes of the Lone Star State. The above picture is of double inspiration to the author for it also presents his family to whom he is bound with an inseparable devotion. To them this work is also dedicated.

##### **5. Explorations and Expeditions from 1700 to 1800. –**

In 1700 M. Blainville a Frenchman, headed an expedition and made extensive explorations up Red River. Then again in 1701 M. de St. Dennis explored more extensively, both the red and Washita Rivers. A settlement was made as early as 1703 on the Washita. In 1705 the French pushed out as far as the borders of Coahuila. And in 1711 Padre Hidalgo penetrated into Texas territory from Louisiana. In 1719 Barnard de la Harp, together with a body of troops and other assistants ascended the Red River approximately four hundred miles, and established a fort known as St. Louis de Carlorette. Since this French fortification is more fully discussed in the succeeding chapter we shall only briefly mention its establishment at this time. In 1737 a French trading party led by the Millet Brothers, by a northern route, ventured as far out as Santa Fe. And a portion of the party returned by descending the Canadian and Arkansas Rivers.

France, being at war with England, in 1762 conveyed the Louisiana Territory to Spain. Since the Indians had previously been more friendly to the French than the Spanish, the new acquisition of territory called for a better alliance between the Spanish and Indians. Then it became necessary for the Spaniards to appoint a suitable agent to win the good will of the Texas tribes. As a consequence, De Mezieres, a Frenchman, was wisely chosen for the purpose. De Mezieres left Natchitoches in 1772 and led his expedition to the vicinity of Palestine, Texas, where he visited the Indian tribes of that section. The expedition then visited the Tonkawas and Tawakonis on the Brazos in the vicinity of the present town of Waco. From there De Mezieres and his party

moved northwestward and followed the river to the village of the Wichitas. These Indians at that time were living in one of the rich river bends along the Brazos, near the present towns of Palo Pinto and Mineral Wells. And we are inclined to believe their village was in Village Bend, which was later occupied by the Caddos, Ionis, Anadarkos, and remnants of other tribes. The latter tribes were at that time, however, living close to Red River, and in Eastern Texas. From this Wichita village the expedition marched directly south approximately three hundred miles to San Antonio.

In March of 1778 De Mezieres left San Antonio, and again visited the Indians in the vicinity of Waco. From there the expedition followed the cross timbers until it reached "An old French Fort," located on the Red River in the present county of Montague. As before, his mission was to peaceably gain the good will and co-operation of the Indians.

The addition of Louisiana as a Spanish territory necessitated the opening of roadways between that section and Santa Fe, new Mexico. Mission San Saba, in Menard County, as well as for other reasons, was established for the purpose of affording a direct communication between San Antonio and Santa Fe. As a consequence Pedro Vial, also a Frenchman, who was well known to the Indian tribes of Northern Texas, was appointed as a proper person to select a suitable route from San Antonio to Santa Fe. October 4, of 1786, he left San Antonio with one companion, and went north to the Colorado River, which was followed for a considerable distance. But Vial was injured when his horse fell, and then turned eastward to the Brazos where he found a Tawakoni village in the vicinity of the present town of Waco. He remained with these Indians six weeks and until he was able to resume his journey. After Pedro Vial recovered, he ascended the Brazos to the Wichita village, which had been previously visited by De Mezieres and his party. And from there he visited the Indians at an old French fort in Montague County, where more than 26 years before, Parrilla had been defeated. The expedition then ascended the Red and Canadian Rivers, and arrived in Santa Fe, May 6, 1787. But since his route was not direct another expedition was sent out under Corporal Hoza Mares. This expedition left Santa Fe July 31, 1787, and was accompanied by Christobal Santos and Alejandro Martin, Indian interpreters. From Santa Fe, Mares and his companions went first to the Pecos River; and after following that stream for a short distance took a route almost due east and considerably south of that selected by Vial and reached the French post on Red River August 5, 1787. From there they went west of south and evidently crossed the Brazos River somewhere in the vicinity of Granbury. But like other explorations their course cannot be exactly traced. The expedition, however, crossed the Colorado, San Saba, and Llano Rivers.

And not dissimilar to the course pursued by Vial, Mares' route was considerably out of the way. As a consequence

when Mares and his party left San Antonio in January of 1788, they selected a more direct route to Santa Fe. From San Antonio they went almost northwest until the expedition struck the headwaters of the Red River in the Texas Panhandle. From there they followed their former trail in a westward course to Santa Fe, and reached their destination the 17th of April, 1788. After Mares returned and in June of 1788 Vial received instructions to select a suitable route from Santa Fe to Natchitoches, and to return by way of San Antonio. From Santa Fe to St. Louis de Carlorette he and his companions were escorted by a squad of cavalymen under Santiago Fernandez. They left Santa Fe, New Mexico, June 24, 1788, and proceeded to the Pecos River. The party then pursued a direct course to St. Louis de Carlorette, which they reached July 20, 1788. Fernandez and his cavalymen rested here for four days, and then returned to Santa Fe, and reached their destination the following month. Vial and his party took a southeast course and reached Natchitoches the 20th of August. After being delayed by sickness the expedition reached San Antonio November 18, 1788. They were again delayed by sickness but left San Antonio June 25, 1789, with four Comanches as guides. The party went directly north until they reached the Brazos and followed practically the same course pursued by De Mezieres and his expedition when he returned from the Wichita village in 1772. From the Wichita village on the Brazos, near the present towns of Palo Pinto and Mineral Wells, Vial and his party took a northwest course and reached Santa Fe, August 20, 1789.

Pedro Vial, not unlike other Frenchmen, was a well known character on the northern and western frontier of Texas, and his activities among the Indians along the upper Brazos and Red Rivers continued up until the time the United States purchased Louisiana in 1803.

A new century again dawns upon us. And the explorations of the 18th century are to be brought to a close. The records, as a rule, only give us information pertaining to official explorations and expeditions. Usually no mention is made and no written memoranda preserved of many other unofficial expeditions.

**6. Explorations and Expeditions in West Texas from 1800 to 1827.** - West Texas now sees a new century fastly guiding and formulating her fate or good fortune. And a new type of explorers are to pass up the rivers and over the plains. Explorers from the United States now enter the arena of frontier activities. The first event to receive our attention is one commonly called Nolan's expedition. Since approximately 1785, Phillip Nolan had been engaged in an overland trade between San Antonio and Natchez. This trade has been reputed to be illegitimate but, nevertheless, it was likely sanctioned by the Spanish authorities. In October, 1800 he started on his last expedition into the wilds of Western Texas; but was armed with a passport

obtained on a previous journey from Don Pedro Denava, Commandant General of the Northeastern Internal Provinces of Mexico. From Natchez Phillip Nolan, accompanied by Ellis P. Bean, Mordici Richards, John Adams, John King, Robert Ashley, Joseph Reed, David Fero, Solomon Colley, and about six more Americans, five Spaniards and one negro, called Caesar, proceeded to the Washita. Before they reached this river, however, they were met by about fifty well-armed Spanish cavalymen. These cavalymen had been sent to stop Nolan's expedition. Nolan and his men asked the Spaniards their business. The Spanish replied they were in pursuit of some Choctaws, who had stolen horses. The soldiers, however, were evidently afraid to attack Nolan's expedition and permitted them to proceed without interruption. Nolan's expedition crossed the Washita the following day and encamped at a suitable location. They then continued their journey toward the Red River. But before that stream was reached Mordici Richards, John Adams and John King became separated from the main command. But these three adventurers finally found their way back to Natchez. The remaining party, eighteen in number, pushed forward with their journey and reached the Red River five days later. They built rafts, crossed the swollen stream and compelled their horses to swim. About four miles farther Nolan and his men came upon a large prairie where both buffalo and Indians were found. About six days later the expedition crossed the Trinity River. They then pushed on across the prairies and open plains and camped near a spring. Three days later, because their provisions were exhausted, the party was compelled to eat the flesh of wild horses, which were found in great numbers roving over the prairies of Texas. Phillip Nolan and his associates lived on horse flesh for about nine days and until they reached the Brazos River, where the expedition found an abundance of game. While they were camped on the Brazos, the party built a pen and caught about three hundred Mustangs. From there, the adventurers, in company with about two hundred Comanches, went to the South Fork of Red River for the purpose of seeing Nicoroco, the Comanche chief. They remained with the Comanches for a month. Nolan and his men then returned to their own camp on the Brazos. But by this time, the news of Nolan's expedition had reached the Spanish authorities in Texas and Chihuahua. As a consequence, one hundred and fifty Spanish soldiers, piloted by Indian guides, familiar with the location of Nolan and companions, proceeded to arrest the party. The troops came from Nacogdoches, and surrounded the camp of Nolan's expedition about one o'clock in the morning, the 27th day of March, 1801. The place is not exactly known, but a small river in Central Texas, upon which this difficulty was supposed to have occurred, has always been called Nolan's River. Five Spaniards, and one American, who were guarding the horses at the time of the arrival of the Spanish soldiers were immediately made prisoners. The remaining part of Nolan's expedition, twelve in number, including Caesar, fortified themselves in a pen of

logs, which the party had constructed as a safeguard against the Indians. About daybreak, the soldiers began firing upon Nolan's party. In the first ten minutes of fighting Phillip Nolan, the leader, received a fatal wound in the head, and Ellis P. Bean assumed command. By nine o'clock two others were wounded, and it was then agreed they should make an orderly retreat. This they did and finally reached a deep ravine. The fighting continued until about three o'clock in the afternoon, when a white flag was hoisted by the Spanish. The firing then ceased and the Americans were told that if they would agree to return to their own country, they would be allowed to retain their arms. The agreement was reached, and the party returned to their camp to bury Phillip Nolan, their leader. The next day, the Americans and the Spanish started for Nacogdoches. But when they reached the frontier Spanish town, Nolan's men were not permitted to return to Natchez as had been promised; and after waiting thirty days subject to further orders, they were made prisoners and sent to Old Mexico. Ellis P. Bean, after remaining in prison in Mexico for several years, finally made his way back to the United States, and wrote a very interesting memoir of his experiences in connection with this ill-fated expedition.

When the United States acquired possession of the Louisiana Territory, there was no well-defined and recognized boundary between the newly acquired property and the Spanish possessions farther west. And as this great western territory was little known and very largely inhabited by hostile Indians, immediate steps were taken to learn more of the new country. This was accomplished by a series of exploring expeditions.

While Lewis and Clarke were exploring the Northwest, the country bordering Red River was not being overlooked. In 1804-1805 the Dunbar and Hunter expedition explored the Red River to the mouth of the Washita. Then June 24, 1806, Zebulon N. Pike received orders to proceed without delay, as well as for other purposes, to perfect a permanent peace between the Kansas and Osage Indians and to establish peaceable relations with the Comanches and other tribes. And as his itinerary would likely take him to the headwaters of the Arkansas and Red Rivers, he was further ordered to proceed as cautiously as possible to avoid a conflict with the Spanish. He proceeds up the Arkansas and passed on into the Rocky Mountains, where he discovered Pike's Peak. Pike and his party then turned south, and intended to strike the headwaters of Red River, but struck the Rio Grande instead. The expedition proceeded a considerable distance down the Rio Grande and Pike and his men were still under the impression they were on Red River, but soon found themselves in the vicinity of Santa Fe. The party camped and a member of the expedition, Dr. Robison, was sent into Santa Fe, perhaps, for supplies and for information pertaining to the country. February 16, 1807, the Spaniards, having learned of their presence, sent some officers;

accompanied by an Indian, out to the camp of the Americans. They were arrested and carried before J. R. Allencaster, Governor of New Mexico. After their arrest Pike and his party were informed that forces had been sent down the Red River to turn back or arrest the expedition. But the Spanish forces had failed to find the American adventurers, inasmuch as they had ascended the Arkansas. While Pike and his party were in Santa Fe under arrest, Solomon Colley, a member of Nolan's unfortunate expedition, and once a sergeant in the United States Army, was brought before them. From Santa Fe, the prisoners were carried into the interior of Old Mexico. Pike was released and returned from Old Mexico through Texas and arrived at Nacogdoches July 1, 1807.

Simultaneously to Pike's endeavors to discover the headwaters of the Red River, a party under Captain Sparks, in 1808, ascended the same stream from its mouth until the expedition reached Texas Territory. It was intended that Capt. Sparks' expedition should ascend the Red River as far as possible. The party consisted of Dr. Peter Curtis, an authority on natural history and botany; Mr. Thomas Freeman, a surveyor; Capt. Sparks and Lt. Humphreys; seventeen private soldiers and a Negro servant. The explorers left Ft. Adams, on the Mississippi April 19, 1806. They were supplied with two flat bottom barges, surveying and astronomical instruments, and necessary supplies. When the party passed Natchitoches they obtained additional provisions. The expedition left the latter place June 2, 1806, and started on their journey. The explorers made a careful survey of the country, river, Indians, animals and plants.

And, perhaps, we should at this time state that in order to properly trace the streams on our maps, explorers across uncharted lands, like sailors on uncharted seas, frequently resorted to the use of astronomical instruments to secure the latitude and longitude of the meanders of such streams.

Capt. Sparks' expedition had not proceeded a great distance up the stream when Dr. Sibley and another party brought word that Spanish troops from Nacogdoches were marching to meet them. After proceeding about one hundred miles farther, word was sent by Indians that approximately three hundred Spanish soldiers with four or five hundred horses were camped back of a Caddo village farther up Red River. But as an intrigue intended for the Americans, the Spanish they had returned to Eastern Texas. The exploring party pushed sent word to effect that it forward, and approximately one hundred and twenty-five miles farther up the stream passed the Caddo village. Capt. Sparks and his party soon met the Spanish who outnumbered the Americans several times. They had already explored the river, however, to north latitude thirty-three degrees, thirty-four minutes and forty-two seconds. The party also obtained an abundance of scientific

information. The expedition started homeward July 30, 1806, and reached Natchitoches August 23 of the same year; and still the Red River remained unexplored by the topographical engineers of the United States Government.

Henry Kerr, a private individual, who was not commissioned by the United States Government, accompanied by a negro, left New Orleans September 1, 1809, with his eyes turned toward the far western stars. He decided to explore the country bordering along Red River; and to attempt to explore the country the topographical engineers failed to reach. He proceeded without interruption, and at this early date, far out on the frontier hundreds of miles from the nearest settlement, found an agent of the Hudson Bay Fur Company of St. Louis, Missouri. In the same region he also found an American citizen living a wild life among the West Texas Indians. But this American refused to disclose his name and his former place of residence. And just why he elected to live such a wild life, no one knows.

In 1820, Major Stephen H. Long, a topographical engineer of the United States Army, received orders to explore the headwaters of Red River. His expedition first ascended the Missouri, and then intended to strike across the country until he and his party struck a large stream which the Indians said was Red River. But after following the stream several hundred miles it was ascertained the expedition was on the Canadian and not Red River, as the party had previously supposed. As a consequence, the United States again failed to obtain accurate information concerning the headwaters of Red River.

In 1825-26-27 J. B. Brown and party were ordered to survey a suitable route from Fort Osage to Taos, New Mexico. This route followed the general direction the Santa Fe traders had traveled for several years from St. Louis to Santa Fe; and the survey, no doubt, touched a part of the Texas Panhandle. This expedition ordered by the United States government was for the purpose of better establishing a suitable route for the hundreds of early trappers and traders who were by this time going to practically every part of the great western dominion.

Ref: North Mexican States & Texas, by H. H. Bancroft; Voyages etc., of Cabeza de Vaca, trans. by B. Smith 1871; Thrall's Pictorial History of Texas; History of Texas, by Henderson Yoakum; Texas During the Middle of the Nineteenth Century, by Dr. Herbert E. Bolton; History of Texas, by Wm. Kennedy; An Account of an Expedition to the sources of the Mississippi, and Through the Western Part of Louisiana to the Sources of the Arkansas, Kansas, La Platte, etc., performed by order of the U.S. Government, during the years 1805-6-7; and A Tour through New Spain, by Major Zezulon M. Pike (1810); United States Explorations and Surveys 1852-56, (Thirteen volumes); Message from the president of the U.S., communicating discoveries made in

exploring the Missouri, Red and Washita Rivers, by Captains Lewis-Clark; Dr. Sibley and Dr. Dunbar, with a statistical account of the countries adjacent, (1806); An account of the Red River in Louisiana, drawn up from the returns of Messrs. Thomas Freeman and Peter Curtis to the War Department of the United States; Travels through the Western Interior of the United States, from the year 1808-1816, with a particular description of a great part of Mexico, or New Spain by Hen. Kerr; Explorations of Red River in 1852, by R. B. Marcy, assisted by Captain Geo. B. McClellan and others; Senate executive Document No. 54, 52nd Congress, 2nd Session, 1853; The Personal Narrative of James O. Pattie During an Expedition from St. Louis, Through the West. (Note: In each instance, information for government expeditions was derived directly from government records in Washington.)

## **PART I WEST TEXAS UNDER THE DOMINION OF SPAIN, FRANCE AND MEXICO**

### **CHAPTER II OLD MISSIONS, FORTS AND EARLY COLONIZATION**

**7. First Efforts of Spanish to Settle the Northeastern Provinces of New Spain.** - In the previous chapter we have followed a large number of Spanish, French and American explorers in all directions across the West Texas frontier. We shall now turn our attention to the early missions, forts and colonization in the territory embraced in the present work.

Due to the hostility of the Comanches and other Indians of West Texas, the number of missions, forts and settlements of that section were indeed very limited. But the first settlements of Europeans in the State of Texas were in the El Paso district and not in southern and eastern Texas as many people have supposed.

**8. The El Paso District.** - We have already related in the preceding chapter the movements of Juan de Onate, who led a large force of soldiers and colonists from the interior of Old Mexico to the provinces of the North. He was hindered by hardships on every hand, his progress retarded and funds exhausted, but he reached the region of El Paso in April of 1598, and took possession of that territory. Most of the pueblos submitted without resistance and Franciscan missionaries stationed in the pueblos of six different nations.

Then for several years following, the missionary work among the Indians and the establishment of Spanish settlements from the El Paso District on into New Mexico pushed forward at a more or less rapid rate. The settlements were ever inclined to cluster along the more important streams and principally along the Rio Grande.

Since the Spanish settlements were nearly always supplied with missions we find that the El Paso district was no exception to the rule. The Mission Nuestra Senora de Guadalupe was established by Garcia de San Francisco y Zuniga and Francisco de Salazar. Temporary buildings were erected in 1659 and the cornerstone of a more permanent structure dedicated April 2, 1662. The permanent structure was built on the right or west side of the Rio Grande about one and one-half miles from the river and was completed in about six years. Approximately thirty-six miles down the river from the Mission Nuestra Senora de Guadalupe, and in the El Paso district we have evidences of another old mission, which was called Nuestro Padre San Francisco de los Sumas. This mission was in existence before 1680, but we have been unable to ascertain the date of its establishment. It, too, was on the right or west side of the Rio Grande. Then Mission La Soledad, which is usually classified as an El Paso district mission, was in existence by 1680 and located about seventy leagues toward the interior of Old Mexico. But inasmuch as it was not on the Rio Grande, and was therefore not adjacent to Texas territory it will suffice to merely mention its establishment.

In 1680, due to the arrival of the Spanish refugees from the North, the El Paso district became the center of activities of the Spanish in the Northern provinces. In that year the Indians revolted and resolved to massacre every Spaniard in New Mexico. But their conspiracy was soon discovered. The settlers, soldiers and missionaries immediately prepared to defend themselves as well as possible. And after fighting some very bitter conflicts, the Spanish were forced to flee southward to El Paso. It seems their first stop was made at La Salineta, which was about twelve miles above El Paso on the Texas side of the Rio Grande. At this place Governor Otermin, who led the expedition, counted the number of refugees and reported approximately two thousand men, women and children. In addition there were a large number of Indian allies. But only about one hundred and fifty refugees were bearing arms. After remaining at La Salineta about three weeks the party moved down to El Paso, which was then on the Mexican side of the Rio Grande. There the Spanish made a permanent stand. They also petitioned their government for supplies and re-enforcements. The refugees located in three settlements in the El Paso district, namely, San Lorenzo, San Pedro de Alcantara and Santasamo Sacramento. These settlements reached from the Guadalupe mission to a distance of thirty-six miles down the river. Since refugees from New Mexico were accompanied by a large number of converted Indians and since others were soon added, it was advisable to segregate the Indians from the Spanish settlers. As a consequence, the authorities established for the benefit of these Indians, as many as three pueblos, known as Senecu, Socorro and Isleta.

Regardless of frontier conditions, El Paso seemed to enjoy an unprecedented prosperity. The government was petitioned to establish a presidio, and in 1682 Governor Otermin received orders to enlist men for that purpose. But the details were left to Cruzate, the newly elected governor. After securing proper equipment, before he left Mexico, Governor Cruzate arrived at El Paso in 1683. He selected a site for the new presidio half-way between Mission Nuestra Senora de Guadalupe and San Lorenzo.

Simultaneously with the organization of the new presidio, Fray Nicolas Lopez received orders to assist in the reorganization of the Spanish and Indian settlements. A new mission was established at Santa Getrudis, about twenty-five miles south of Mission Guadalupe. And, although there are evidences of a mission at Presidio del Norte, across the river from the present town of Presidio as early as 1670, nevertheless under the new organization plans were immediately perfected to establish seven missions near the mouth of the Conchos and in the vicinity of Presidio del Norte, which was known as La Junta, and across the river from Presidio, Texas. The Spaniards were now distributed among four distinct settlements in the El Paso district known as San Lorenzo, San Pedro de Alcantara, Senor San Jose, and La Isleta; and the Indians located at the pueblos known as Socorro, San Francisco, Sacramento, San Antonio de Senecu and La Soledad.

In 1684 the Indians again revolted and for a time the destruction of the El Paso district appeared imminent. The people went so far as to petition the government to abandon El Paso. The progress of the community was further jeopardized by virtue of the fact that both New Mexico and Nueva Vizcaya were claiming jurisdiction over the same territory in the El Paso district. But finally in 1685 New Mexico was given jurisdiction over the disputed territory.

From the El Paso district the main thoroughfare extended northeastward into New Mexico. By 1700 we find a large number of Spanish missions and cities strongly rooted far out on the western frontier. And from the landing of the refugees in 1680 on forward, the Spanish enjoyed such prosperity as the early frontier conditions would afford. By 1749 approximately fifteen hundred Spanish citizens were at El Paso. Within the next decade the number of Spaniards in the El Paso district practically doubled. In 1778 the population, exclusive of Indians, had grown to a community of five thousand citizens. But the next few years saw a considerable decrease in population. By 1800, however, the population had again increased to approximately five thousand. Santa Fe and Albuquerque at this time also possessed a population of approximately four thousand each and, in addition, there were other important towns in New Mexico. Taos was rapidly coming into prominence. El Paso and the other Spanish towns of the Northern provinces,

at that time, were, indeed, typically western cities of the Spanish type on the wild western frontier.

James O. Pattie visited El Paso in 1824, and in his writings he gives us a very vivid picture of the conditions existing in the El Paso district at that time. He said:

"I know not whether to call the Passo del Norte a settlement or a town. It is in fact a kind of continued village extending eight miles on the river. Fronting the large group of houses is a nursery of fruit trees of almost all countries and climes... I was struck with the magnificent vineyards of this place from which are made great quantities of delicious wine. The wheat fields were equally beautiful and the wheat of a kind I have never seen before, the stalks generally yielding two heads each. The land is exceedingly rich and its fertility increased by irrigation."

Other writers who preceded Pattie gave a similar description of the El Paso District.

By 1825 the Santa Fe traders from St. Louis were extending their excursions on into the El Paso district. But excepting the Spanish settlements along the Rio Grande and in New Mexico, during this period and for several years to come the vast domain of Western Texas still remained unsettled and the permanent home of hostile Indians.

**9. Old Spanish Fort.** - When the first American settlers found their way to the West Texas frontier, they soon discovered the ruins of an old fort standing on the south bank of Red River. Since Texas was formerly under the sovereignty of Spain, these dilapidated ruins were supposed to be of Spanish origin. As a natural consequence, they became known as the "Old Spanish Fort."

While the author was making a personal campaign among the surviving pioneers for the purpose of compiling data for the present work, he was not surprised to hear the name of these historic old ruins mentioned. None of the surviving old settlers, however, were able to supply any information concerning the origin of "Old Spanish Fort." Pioneer settlers of Montague and adjoining counties stated that the history of these early fortifications had always remained unknown, and the story of their origin remained a mystery.

After the West Texas frontier began to be settled, a number of citizens built their little log cabins not a great many miles from "Old Spanish Fort." Captain W. A. (Bud) Morris, who was numbered among these earlier settlers, stated that he visited these dilapidated old relics of a former civilization in 1859. At that time a part of the walls were still standing, they were circular in form and punctured with portholes approximately four feet from the ground. These ruins consisted of about six circular fortifications. They were

located approximately one hundred and fifty yards apart, and situated on an imaginary line running north and south.

When Colonel Diego Ortiz Parrilla led an expedition from San Antonio and San Saba against the northern Indians in 1759, he and his soldiers were greatly surprised to find a large number of Indians and, perhaps, Frenchmen entrenched behind the strong stockade. They were flying the flag of France and skillfully using French weapons and tactics of war.

According to the report of Parrilla, who visited this post one hundred years before it was discovered by Capt. Morris, mentioned above, these old fortifications consisted of high, oval shaped structures, surrounded by a stockade and ditch. The roadway leading to this post was similarly protected. The fortifications themselves appeared to be covered with straw. They were splendidly located in an open space on the Texas side of Red River, and in the present county of Montague. When visited by Parrilla in 1759, he observed large and well-fenced fields in the vicinity of these early fortifications. Maize, melons, bean and other products of the farm were produced. And near the post, at the time it was attacked by Parrilla, there lived a large number of Indian allies.

Cherishing a strong desire to properly report the story of this post, the history of which has heretofore been overlooked, the author consulted the works of many leading authorities, but failed to find a detailed account of this old fort. While compiling data in Washington, D.C., for the present work, the author continued this search for such information among the archives, files and records found in the War Department, Congressional Library and elsewhere. But the history of "Old Spanish Fort" could not be found. Nor was the author able to find any information in any of the histories of Texas filed in the Congressional Library, except in two or three instances. In these two or three instances the authors only briefly referred to "Old Spanish Fort," and their able works failed to disclose a detailed account of these early French fortifications, built on the south bank of Red River.

Finally, however, the author of the present work reached the end of the rainbow. In certain early records and reports made immediately following the Louisiana Purchase, relating to early explorations up Red River, and found in the files in the War Department, Washington, D.C., the author discovered much of the desired information. And in so far as we know, this is the first time a detailed account of this old fort has been offered, excepting as herein mentioned.

The old ruins of Montague County on the Texas side of Red River should never have been called "Spanish Fort" for the post was not of Spanish origin. It should have been called "Old French Fort" for it was established by the French nearly

one hundred and forty years previous to the organization of Montague County.

During the colonial period of the North American continent, it was the rule of international law that when a certain country owned and claimed a certain territory at the mouth of a river, such country was entitled to all lands on both sides of such stream all the way to its source. Consequently, France felt that both banks of Red River and adjoining lands were in the Louisiana territory. Since the landing of La Salle, the French had asserted a claim to Texas. The claim of France to Texas territory was also further substantiated by the expeditions of various French explorers who had followed the western stars as far out as Santa Fe and El Paso.

Too, during December of 1718 war was declared by France against the Spanish kingdom, and its effects were noticeable among the colonists of the new world. The French mobilized in 1719 at Natchitoches under the leadership of Benard de la Harpe and Louis de St. Denis. And the Spanish were driven from Adaes, Aes. Nacogdoches and other eastern points, and pushed back to the post of San Antonio de Bexar. Then, as a consequence, the appropriate time had arrived for the French to erect a fort on the south or right bank of Red River for the purpose of extending their operations farther inland, to establish better relations with the Indians, and to better perfect the claim of France to Texas territory.

Benard de La Harpe was selected as a suitable person for this purpose. In his very early writings he speaks of the establishment of a French military post at latitude thirty-three degrees and fifty-five minutes on the right, or south bank of Red River. He also states that the post was built upon the south bank for the purpose of asserting the claim of France to Texas territory. The post was built in 1719 and evidently called Fort St. Louis de Carlorette. But there was, no doubt, a typographical error made by the printers, for the account states that such post was only eighteen leagues from Natchitoches. We shall not enter into a detailed discussion concerning this error, but we wish to say such figures present an impossible situation. That distance up Red River would still be in Louisiana, fail to establish the claim of France to Texas territory, fall far short of being in the above latitude, and not only conflict with the remaining part of the report of La Harpe, himself, but also conflict with the reports of others.

Our attention is next directed to a report styled, "An account of the Red River in Louisiana, drawn up from the returns of Messrs. Thomas Freeman and Peter Curtis, who explored the same in the year 1806." This report states there was an old Caddo village one hundred and twenty-five miles up the river from Natchitoches, and the Caddos formerly lived four hundred and fifty miles up the stream. It further states that

the expedition deposited a government marker at latitude thirty-three degrees, thirty-four minutes and forty seconds, and in the vicinity of their former village. This government marker was deposited on the north side of Red River. The surveyors were informed by the Indians at the time that on the opposite, or Texas side the French once had a small military post. Then the former village site of the Caddos according to this report was about six hundred miles above Natchitoches, and in the vicinity of an early French post on the Texas side of the river.

In a government report made April 10, 1805, and styled. "A message from the President of the United States communicating discoveries made in exploring the Missouri, Red, and Washita rivers by Captains Lewis and Clarke, and Drs. Sibley and Dunbar with a statistical account of the countries adjacent," Dr. Sibley said the Caddo Indians were then living one hundred and twenty miles by the nearest route northwest of Natchitoches and lived about thirty-five miles west of the main branch of the river; and formerly lived on the south bank of the same stream three hundred and seventy-five miles farther on toward the head waters. According to this account the former site of the Caddo Village was about five hundred miles up Red River from Natchitoches, and on a beautiful prairie, surrounded by a very fertile country. According to the tradition of the Caddos this location had been their home from time immemorial. They were driven from the old village site, however, by the Osage Indians, in about 1795 and pushed approximately four hundred miles farther down the stream.

According to the report of Dr. Sibley the French maintained in an earlier day a military post at the former site of the old Caddo Village; and some French colonists were settled in the vicinity of the fort. These colonists operated a flour mill in the community, and the burr stones used in the mill were brought from France. The report further said the French colonists lived in the vicinity of this former post until about twenty five years before the date of the report. At that time the colonists had moved down the river and settled at Compti, about twenty miles above Natchitoches, and about four hundred and seventy miles from where they formerly lived. The move was made, no doubt, to offer better educational, industrial and religious facilities, and to seek better protection from the Indians. Dr. Sibley, in his report, further stated that he was speaking from personal knowledge of the history of Red River to a point seventy or eighty miles above Natchitoches; and derived his information of the territory farther on up the stream from others in whose veracity he had the greatest reliance. One source of information was from Mr. Francis Grappe, who was his assistant and interpreter of Indian Languages. According to Dr. Sibley, Grappe's father was formerly a French Officer and Superintendent of Indian Affairs at this French post or station. Francis Grappe, himself, was born near this old French post, spent the first thirty years of his life in its

vicinity, and often assisted his father as an Indian trader and hunter. Grappe was not only serving then as an Indian interpreter for the United States but had also served in a similar capacity in previous years for the Spanish. Dr. Sibley further said that a Mr. Breval, an Indian trader, and others verified the report of Mr. Grappe concerning the history and location of the old French fort, which was five or six hundred miles above Natchitoches.

In the writings of Major Ames Stoddard, which were printed in 1812, and which were in the nature of a report on the newly purchased Louisiana Territory, in speaking of the history of Louisiana he said:

"Historians have but partially noticed that country; none of their works seem to embrace in regular detail any considerable number of years; they are extremely barren of events and, unfortunately, contain many chasms."

Then he further stated that in 1719 Bernard de La Harp, with a body of troops, ascended Red River to the villages of the Caddoques or Caddos, and established a military post, which was called St. Louis de Carlorette. That the post was on the right or south bank of the river, about four hundred miles above Natchitoches, and at latitude thirty-three degrees and fifty-five minutes. That subsequently La Harp wrote the Spanish commandant at Assinai, informing him that he had been ordered by the French Government to assume such a station on Red River; but at the same time to cultivate a good understanding with the Spanish. La Harp also wrote a similar communication to the superior of missions in Texas and expressed a desire to open trade with the Spanish. The commandant answered that Spain desired to be at peace with France but that it was his duty to inform La Harp that the post was on Spanish territory and that if he did not abandon the location the Spanish would be obliged to force him to do so. The commandant however was hostile toward the French. The answer of the superior of Texas missions was more friendly, and he showed a willingness to communicate with the French; but stated their relations would have to be secret, inasmuch as the Spanish commandant of the Texas District was not friendly toward the Frenchmen. La Harp replied to the Spanish commandant that the post the French occupied was not on Spanish territory; that the Spanish well knew the province which they called Texas was a part of Louisiana; that the territory belonged to France and not Spain; that La Salle took possession of it in 1685; that the French possessions had been several times since renewed; that the French were the first to make alliances with the Indians; and that the land on all rivers flowing into the Mississippi belonged to the French. According to Stoddard, the French formed a small settlement and built a mill in the vicinity of this old military post. He further stated the French cultivated wheat, corn and tobacco in the vicinity of this early fortification, and enjoyed a considerable trade with the Indians. We are

further informed by the works of Stoddard that this French post was abandoned in 1762 when France ceded the Louisiana Territory to Spain. That was done to prevent England's capturing and claiming the territory, for England and France, at that time, were at war. But a few local citizens continued to live near the post for several years thereafter.

We can now readily see that all accounts of this early military post correspond to the report of La Harp in every respect, excepting in the number of miles the post was reported to be above Natchitoches. La Harp said the post was at thirty-three degrees and fifty-five minutes and eighteen leagues up the Red River from Natchitoches. All other reports, as we have already seen, place the distance from four to six hundred miles above Natchitoches. As we have already pointed out, evidently there was a typographical error in the works of La Harp. No doubt it was intended to be one hundred and eighty leagues instead of eighteen leagues. If that be the case, then La Harp's figures would have placed this post known as St. Louis de Carlorette at a distance of five hundred and forty miles up the river from Natchitoches instead of fifty four miles.

In the works of Henderson Yoakum, which were printed in 1856, we find just a very brief reference to the French post known as St. Louis de Carlorette. But it seems he must have been misled by the apparent typographical error in the works of La Harp for his location of the post does not conform to any of the early reports, which were made approximately one hundred and twenty five years ago to the United States Government, and which the author reviewed while doing research work in Washington, D.C. It is, of course, possible that these early reports themselves, contained errors; but all correspond to the report of La Harp in every respect excepting as to the distance up Red River.

In more recent years two or three nuggets of gold were found in the vicinity of these old ruins. As a consequence, the high excitement set the prairies afire with prospectors who went with their picks and pans to practically all parts of the country. We are, also, informed that a Mr. Ryan, while plowing in the vicinity of this former French stronghold plowed up five or six hundred dollars in gold.

But today there is hardly a single vestigial structure of this early French fortification.

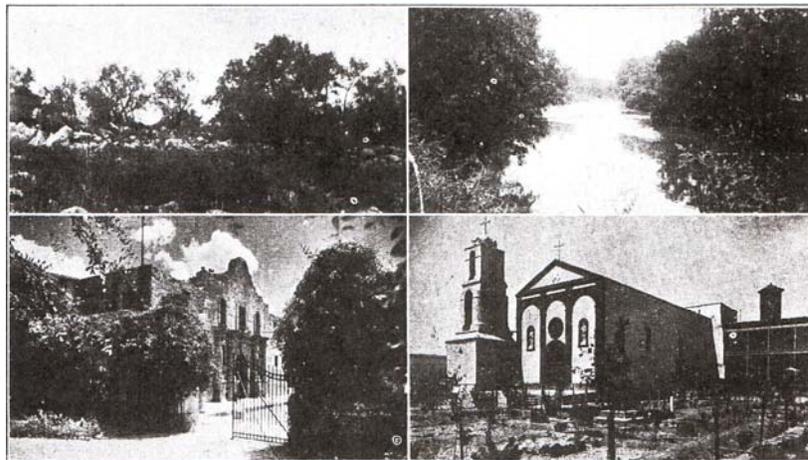
### **10. Spanish Settlements in Southern and Eastern**

**Texas** - It is the intention of the author to exclude that portion of the History of Texas, which does not relate to the western part of the state; for the history of Eastern Texas has been many times written by a number of able historians. But in order to better understand the movements of the Spanish in the territory embraced in the present work, it

becomes necessary to give a brief synopsis of the history of Spanish settlements in southern and eastern Texas.

The landing of La Salle and his ill-fated French colony along the shores of Matagorda Bay was a matter of much concern to the Spanish, who claimed Texas. Alonzo de Leon, as we have already seen, was ordered to march with a force to investigate the activities of the French. Inasmuch as a detailed account has been given of this expedition, we shall not attempt to relate the experiences of De Leon and his companions. But they were very greatly impressed with the coastal country of Texas and recommended that missions be established in Texas territory.

The Spanish, who were also very anxious to better establish their claim to Texas, ordered Alonzo de Leon to lead an expedition into Eastern Texas for the purpose of establishing missions. The party, consisting of about one hundred men, left Monclava, Mexico, in March of 1690. They proceeded to the land of the Tejas, and first settled near the Trinity River. The new settlement was called San Francisco de Los Tejas. Mass was said in a newly made wooden chapel the 25th of May, 1690, and the Mission San Francisco seemed to have been opened the first of June during the same year. Shortly afterwards a second mission, Santa Maria, was established in the same neighborhood. But inasmuch as a controversy soon arose between the mission and military authorities, and the Indians became insubordinate, about three years after the establishment of such missions, the friars buried the bells and such other property that could not be easily transported and returned to Coahuila. And as a consequence, Texas still remained uncolonized to any great extent by either the French or Spanish, excepting in the El Paso district.



Upper left: Ruins of Mission San Saba, and upper right: San Saba River near where Mission stood. See Sec. 11. Lower left: The Alamo. See Sec. 10. (Courtesy San Antonio Chamber of Commerce). Lower right: Mission Nuestra Senora de Guadalupe. See Sec. 14. (Courtesy El Paso Chamber of Commerce.)

But the dawn of a new century seemed to have greatly revived the two belligerent powers. We have already noted the French activities at the beginning of the new century. As a consequence, the Spanish again became alarmed and made preparations to colonize Texas on a far more extensive scale. Captain Domingo Ramon was ordered to Texas to establish missions in the territory adjacent to Louisiana. In July of 1714, the Spanish established four missions and a presidio in the territory between the Trinity and Red River. Two additional missions were added shortly afterwards, and the six missions were known as San Francisco, Purisima Concepcion (Asinai), Guadalupe (Nacogdoches), San Josa (Noachis), Dolores (Aes) and San Miguel de Cuellar (Adaes). February 9, 1716, Martin de Alacorn was appointed governor of Coahuila. He was further instructed to introduce fifty military soldiers of good character into the State of Texas. Consequently, about 1717, he led a colony to the San Antonio River, which was then called St. Anthony, and founded a presidio known as San Antonio de Bexar. But San Antonio had been a Spanish settlement for several years. Shortly afterwards the Spanish established several missions at various points in Texas. The Alamo was moved to San Antonio about that time. San Jose de Aguaya near San Antonio was established in 1718, but was not completed until 1771. This mission is said to be the most beautiful and the most artistic of all Texas missions. Huicar, a celebrated artist and sculptor, was sent from Spain to carve the statues and other ornaments of this classical old relic. Many years he devoted to this work before he completed his task. Mission Concepcion La Purisima de Acuna and San Juan Capistran were also established in the vicinity of San Antonio in 1731, La Bahia at Goliad in 1718, Mission Loretta near Matagorda Bay in 1721 and Rosario was established a few miles from Goliad in about 1730. The march of the colonists kept pace with the establishment of missions. Not unlike El Paso on the west, San Antonio in the east soon became the center of activities of the Spanish in Eastern and Southern Texas.

**11. Spanish Settlements on the San Saba and Nueces Rivers** - As early as 1731 the Spanish settlers and soldiers of San Antonio were reasonably well acquainted with the country drained by the Llano, Pedernales and San Saba rivers. And by 1748, more than once, the Spanish made campaigns against the Indians of that region in retaliation for depredations the natives were constantly committing on the Spanish settlements. The report of minerals in this section, during this period, also attracted the attention of the Spanish.

For some time the Spanish had been anxious to establish a mission somewhere in the vicinity of one of the above rivers, to establish better relations with certain tribes of West Texas Indians; to establish a presidio to facilitate the development of minerals of that region, and to establish a

few more milestones in the direction of Santa Fe. During the middle of the 18th century the West Texas Indians were warring among themselves. As a consequence, the Lipans were anxious to form an alliance with the Spanish for the purpose of invoking their aid against the Comanches, who were forever the bitter enemies of all the colonies of Spain. The Lipans further petitioned the Spaniards to establish a mission somewhere in the vicinity of San Saba River. The applications of the Lipans also encouraged the Spanish and were made at the proper time.

It was first proposed to establish a mission on the Pedernales, but this proposal was rejected. In the summer of 1753, however, Lt. Galvin and Fray Miguel Aranda received orders from the viceroy to raise a company at San Antonio for the purpose of exploring the Pedernales, Llano and San Saba rivers to select a suitable mission site. The expedition left San Antonio in due time, and after making extensive explorations in the upper country recommended the mission be located on the San Saba River. Interest at this time was also being manifested in the minerals of the region, and as a consequence, expeditions were organized for the purpose of prospecting for minerals. In 1754, Captain Rabago and Joseph Lopez received orders from the viceroy to make a more minute investigation of the site selected by Galvin and Aranda. The interest in such a mission became more intense when they also recommended the selection of Galvin and Aranda, and when Don Pedro de Terreros offered to appropriate one hundred and fifty thousand dollars to be used in the support of not exceeding twenty missions to be established among the Lipans in the vicinity of the site selected for a mission on the San Saba River. After some negotiations the above offer was again made without making any limit on the number of missions to be established. But the missions were to be founded by the Spanish authorities and Fray Alonzo Giraldo de Terreros was to be made the superior.

But it seems that in 1756 the authorities decided to establish first a mission on the San Saba at the particular place, which had been previously recommended by Galvin and Aranda and Rabago and Lopez. Accordingly Col. Diego Ortiz Parrillo was ordered to proceed to San Antonio for the purpose of making further preparation toward the establishment of this mission on the waters of the San Saba River. This he did, and during the following year Parrilla and his party proceeded to the site, which had been previously selected, and established a mission near the present town of Menard.

It seems, however, the Indians were afraid to settle in this vicinity for they feared the hostile Comanches, who generally stayed farther north. Their judgment in this respect, however, was evidently not erroneous. The alliance between the Lipans and the Spaniards was known to the Comanches, and as a consequence, the latter tribes became

even more hostile. Nevertheless, a small Spanish colony was planted in the vicinity of the mission and a presidio known as San Luis de Las Amarrillas established.

The new colony, however, had not been planted more than a year when they were besieged by a large band of Comanche warriors. According to some reports, the Spanish settlers were practically all massacred. But we are inclined to believe that such reports are exaggerated. There were, however, a number of casualties on both sides. And the hostility of the Indians resulted in greatly retarding the commercial and religious activities of the Spanish at old Mission San Saba.

But the Spaniards were unwilling to let the attack on their new mission pass without revenge. As a consequence Col. Parrilla called a conference of the leading men of Texas to meet in San Antonio in January of 1759 for the purpose of projecting a military enterprise against the Indians. Plans were perfected, and in the summer of 1759 an army of six hundred men, nearly one-half of whom were Indians under the leadership of Parrilla, prepared to wage war against the hostile tribes of the North. From San Antonio Parrilla and his men proceeded to the San Saba River. From the new mission on that stream they took a due northeast course to "Old Spanish Fort" in Montague County, which had been established by the French forty years before. On the way they encountered a village of the Tonkawa tribe. After killing fifty-five Tonkawas, Parrilla and his men captured one hundred and forty-nine Indians. October 7, Parrilla and his mixed army of Spaniards and Indians reached the old French fort on Red River. Here they were much surprised to find a large body of Indians, and, perhaps, Frenchmen, secretly fortified behind a strong stockade and flying the flag of France. They were also skillfully using French weapons and tactics of war. For four hours the Spaniards were attacked by Indians from both within and on the outside of such fortifications. The Spanish directed two swivel guns at the stronghold, but apparently with little success. The Indian cavalymen were each attended by two infantrymen, who were carrying and loading extra guns. During the most stormy part of the battle, and up until his death, a very important Indian chieftain rode a fine horse in front of his warriors in the foremost of fighting and from one end of his forces to the other. This chief was garbed with a helmet of white buckskin, which was plumed with red horse hair. The chief showed much dexterity in the management of his men and the use of his horse and arms. But he was finally shot down by the Spanish, who considered him a special target. It was reported that no less than six thousand warriors resisted Parrilla and his men, but the author is of the opinion these figures were greatly exaggerated. According to reports, along late in the evening Parrilla's army began to desert, and being greatly overpowered in the conflict, the Spanish retreated and left their two cannons and extra baggage behind. Parrilla sustained a loss of fifty-two men, and the opposing side believed to have lost an equal number.

Parrilla and his men were pursued practically all the way to Mission San Saba, which they reached October 25, 1759. This military expedition is particularly interesting inasmuch as it occurred on the West Texas frontier approximately one hundred years before the arrival of the first American settlers. It is, of course, impossible to exactly trace the route of the expedition, but since they took a direct course from Menard to Montague, they, no doubt, passed through the strip of country now occupied by the counties of Concho, McCulloch, Coleman, Brown, Comanche, Callahan, Eastland, Erath, Stephens, Palo Pinto, Young, Jack, Wise, Clay and Montague.

For a time, it seemed the Spanish control of not only the San Saba River country but of all Texas, was seriously threatened, not by the French, but by the Indians. Political and social equilibrium, however, was soon restored for peace treaties were negotiated with the northern tribes who returned the two cannons. As a consequence Capt. Phelipe de Rabago, in 1760, was placed in command of Mission San Saba and the settlement in the vicinity. Although the Spanish had been menaced by the constant depredations of the Indians since the establishment of the mission, nevertheless, they again entered upon a constructive program. The wooden presidio was replaced by a substantial fort, made of stone and mortar.

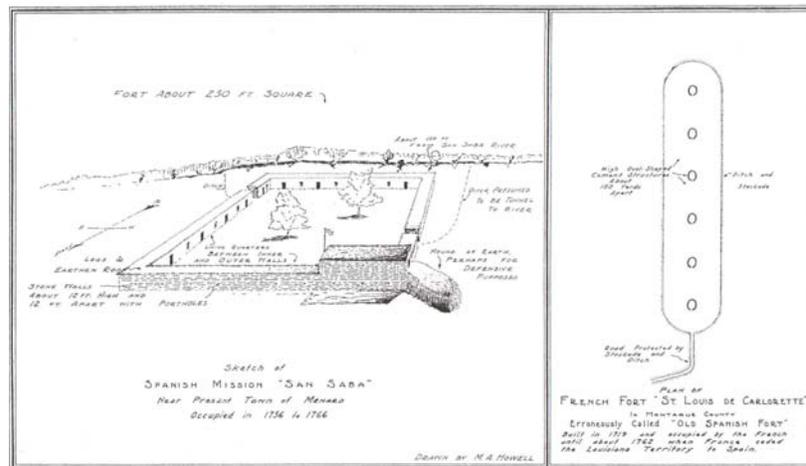
Then in January of 1762, Captain Rabago, with thirty soldiers and a band of Lipans led by Chief Cabezon, went to the head waters of the Nueces River where they met Diego Ximenez and Joachin Banos, two friars, who brought the necessary supplies for the establishment of new missions. Jan. 23, 1762, they established a mission on the head waters of the Nueces. The mission was called San Lorenzo, and garrisoned with twenty soldiers. A few weeks later, about fifteen miles farther down the same stream and on the opposite side, Captain Rabago also established another mission known as Nuestra Senora de La Candelaria.

In March of 1766 Marques de Rubi made a tour of inspection of the frontier missions, posts and provinces. He first visited San Lorenzo and San Saba. From there he went to San Antonio and on into Eastern Texas. The Comanches and other tribes continued to constantly depredate upon the small Spanish outposts. A number of hard fought battles had occurred between the Spanish soldiers and Indians on the Llano River and in the vicinity of the missions. As a consequence, Marques de Rubi recommended that the small Spanish possessions far out on the frontier be abandoned. The San Saba Mission was moved to the Mexican side of the Rio Grande, and only the old stone structures remained to relate the mission's early history.

What would have been the result of the efforts of the Spanish to settle in Western Texas, had it not been for the bloody hands of the hostile Comanches? No doubt, today,

many more Spanish missions would likely be standing on the important streams and Texas a part of Mexico.

Let us turn our attention to more recent events concerning the ruins of Mission San Saba. There is an inscription to be seen today on the gatepost of the west entrance of the San Saba Mission. It reads, "Bowie Mine, 1832." Mr. Ben Ellis, mentioned in a succeeding paragraph, reported that this inscription was carved as early as 1864. But the author cannot say it was carved by Bowie himself. These old ruins were generally known to the early settlers of Texas. As a consequence, James Bowie and a part of the explorers were reported to have visited the old San Saba mission in that year while exploring for the evacuated Spanish mines of that section. These old ruins were also visited at other times by Indian fighters, buffalo hunters and others who traveled along the banks of the beautiful San Saba.



Data for the diagram of Mission San Saba was obtained by the author directly from old ruins near Menard and from Mr. Benjamin Ellis, who lived in this old Mission as early as 1864. See Sec. 11. (We are indebted to M. A. Howell of Palo Pinto for contributing this drawing.) The diagram of the "Old Spanish Fort" is, of course, largely imaginary but will illustrate the position of cement structures. See Sec. 9.

In 1864, because of drouthy conditions and a scarcity of grass and stock water, a number of the early settlers of Stephens County moved their stock to the San Saba River, and settled in the vicinity of the old Spanish ruins of that section. The Ellis and Roberson families, who were among the number, for a time, lived in old Mission San Saba, a portion of which was then in a sufficient state of preservation to afford comfortable quarters for these early American settlers. During 1926 it was the author's pleasure to make a personal study of this former Spanish mission and presidio. My guide and local advisor was Mr. Ben Ellis, of Menard, who moved into the old mission in 1864. He kindly related the status and condition of the old ruins as he and others found them at that time. Although the old mission near Menard is mentioned in some of our most

comprehensive histories, nevertheless, not unlike other things of historical importance in Western Texas, this early Spanish fortification has failed to receive due consideration. But today these old ruins can still be seen near the picturesque little city of Menard.

Ref: Those mentioned within this and preceding chapter; The Beginning of Spanish Settlements in the El Paso District, by Annie E. Hughes; New Mexico and Arizona, by H. H. Bancroft. We are very largely indebted to the works of Dr. Herbert E. Bolton and Herbert Howell Bancroft, for information pertaining to the movements of general Parrilla and his men.

## **PART ONE WEST TEXAS UNDER THE DOMINION OF SPAIN, FRANCE AND MEXICO**

### **CHAPTER III INDUSTRIAL, SOCIAL AND LOCAL CONDITIONS**

**12. Stock Raising.** - When Alonzo de Leon, in the spring of 1690, led his colonists from Monclova, Mexico, into Eastern Texas, they left horses and cattle at different points along their route. And at each Spanish settlement we almost invariably find a large number of stock. Also, the Comanche Indians were constantly making their long forays into Old Mexico and other frontier settlements, and would always bring back into West Texas a large number of horses and cattle. Then, too, there is always a tendency for stock on the open range to drift into new territory. As an example, during the Civil War, when the country was unfenced and still infested with Indians, large steers from Palo Pinto County, in North Texas, drifted as far as Uvalde County in South Texas. Due to these facts and conditions, when Louis de St. Denis visited Texas in 1714 he reported that cattle were to be found in Texas in large numbers. By the middle of the Eighteenth Century horses, cattle and sheep were plentiful around the Spanish posts, and thousands of horses and cattle ran wild on the plains and prairies of Texas.

Then it is not surprising that, before 1800 ranching and stock raising, among the Spanish settlements was operated on an extensive scale. In fact, it was one of the leading industries of the Spanish provinces of the North.

**13. Agriculture.** - The first Spanish and French explorers into Texas territory in many instances found the Indians engaged in a primitive type of agriculture. And the Spanish settlers, who settled in the vicinity of the old missions, also engaged in this industry, which became more extensive as the settlements advanced. The El Paso district was not only noted for its agricultural products, but also for its splendid fruits. And the Spaniards of that section produced an abundance of fine wines, which were imported into the interior of Mexico. By the time Texas gained her

independence cotton, corn, sugar cane, indigo, tobacco, maize, grains and practically all the common products were commonly known to the American and Spanish settlers at that time, and raised on an extensive scale. Fruits, vegetables, nuts and honey were also extensively raised and gathered.

**14. Mining and Prospecting for Minerals.** - The mining industry of the Spanish, in the northern provinces of New Spain, was also of paramount importance. The alluring tales of mineral resources and of rich and prosperous cities among the natives were very largely responsible for the early Spanish settlements in the North.

But mining was never developed extensively in Western Texas. Inasmuch as there was an over-abundance of mineral wealth in South America, Mexico and Spanish provinces bordering along the Rocky and Sierra Nevada Mountains, and elsewhere, the small mineral deposits of Texas received but a secondary consideration. Furthermore, Western Texas was farther from a market, and the home of the most dreaded and dangerous Indians.

Nevertheless, no little amount of attention has been given to the minerals of Western Texas. Long before the close of the eighteenth century hunters, traders, Indian fighters and others brought into San Antonio pleasing stories of valuable mineral deposits near the mouth of the Llano River and elsewhere. In 1753 some expeditions were formed at San Antonio to explore and locate silver at a place called Cerro del Almagre, supposed to be near the mouth of the above river. In 1756, previous to the establishment of the San Saba Mission, Bernardo de Miranda received orders to investigate the minerals of that section. He left San Antonio on the 12th of February, 1756, and was accompanied by approximately sixteen soldiers, five Spanish citizens, some peons and an Indian interpreter. They located a silver mine near Honey Creek Cove. A shallow shaft was sunk and samples of the ore sent to Mexico to be assayed. The five Spanish citizens of the expedition established ten claims in the vicinity of the mine.

As we have already seen, in 1832, James Bowie led an expedition from San Antonio in search of the same mine. And from the day of the first discovery of silver in that section, up until the present, interest in minerals along the Llano River has never ceased. In recent years, several mining companies have been formed.

**15. Hunters, Traders, Trappers and Overland Transportation.** - We have already related that as early as the first quarter of the eighteenth century the French established a trading post among the Indians on the eastern side of the mountains of New Mexico. And in 1739 the Millet brothers led a trading party as far out as Santa Fe. The negotiations of the French with the Indians were always

more successful than the Spanish, who seemed to invoke the hostility of the Texas tribes. When France ceded Louisiana to Spain in 1762, the Spanish realized this fact, and employed Frenchmen to explore the country and negotiate with the Indians. The records show these Frenchmen had previously traded extensively with the Indians and were known far out on the western frontier. And for many years previous to 1803 when the United States purchased the Louisiana Territory, the French traders, trappers and hunters were visiting practically every part of Western Texas. The Spanish were also engaged in the same industry but not so extensively as the French.

In 1806-7 when Zebulon M. Pike made his expedition into the Rocky Mountains and was arrested by the Spanish near Santa Fe, he and his companions made a close study of the great west. When Pike reached the United States in 1807 and made his report, both American and French traders, trappers and hunters, more than ever, ventured out into the western wilds. Most of the expeditions left St. Louis, but others left Natchitoches, San Antonio and elsewhere. And it can be safely said that these parties visited practically every section of the western portion of the United States, and also penetrated into the Spanish territory.

By 1820 the "Commerce of the prairies" had grown to a considerable magnitude. An overland trade was established between St. Louis and points in the east, and Santa Fe and other points in the West. Much of this trade passed through the Panhandle of Texas. It was so extensive, a recognized roadway ran from St. Louis to Santa Fe, and was called the Santa Fe Trail. But the various expeditions of traders, trappers and hunters not unlike other enterprises were curtailed and harassed by the hostile Comanche and other Indians. Consequently, it is not surprising that the first settlers of the West Texas frontier often found the scattered bones of some long lost stranger bleaching in a summer sun.

The overland transportation between the early Spanish settlements and the interior of Old Mexico was partly done with wagons; but a large number of burros and packmules and horses were also used for trading purposes. In fact, thousands of such animals laden with bars of silver, hides, tallow, wines, flour and other commodities followed the long and lonely trails to the interior.

Ref: Commerce of the Prairies, by Josiah Gregg (1844); Message from the President of the United States in compliance with a resolution of the Senate concerning the fur trade and inland trade through Mexico (1832). Topographical Description of Texas, by Geo. W. Bonnell, (1840); History of the Republic of Texas, by M. Doran Millard (1842); A New History of Texas, by Edward Stiff (1847); Letters from an Early Settler of Texas, by W. B. Dewees, (1856); The American Fur Trade of the Far West,

by H. M. Chittenden; the Fur Trade of the Far Southwest, (1822-1834), by J. J. Hill and Ewing Young; History of Texas Revolution by Rev. C. Newhall; and references given in preceding chapters.

## **PART II WEST TEXAS BEFORE ANNEXATION AND AFTER THE BEGINNING OF AMERICAN COLONIZATION**

### **CHAPTER I COLONIAL DEVELOPMENT**

#### **16. Early Mexican Grants and Impresarios. -**

Immediately following the Louisiana Purchase, Texas was frequently visited by citizens of the United States. The purchase of Louisiana in 1803 not only turned the attention of the Americans to the Louisiana Territory, but also to Texas.

It is beyond the scope of the present work, however, to give a detailed account of the Colonial development of Southern and Eastern Texas. But in order to predicate the future operations in the western part of the state, we shall give a brief synopsis of the early Mexican grants and impresarios.

The expansion of American settlements in Texas, on an extensive scale, dates primarily from the several grants made by the Mexican Government to Moses and Stephen F. Austin, Green DeWitt, Hayden Edwards, Benjamin K. Milam, Arthur G. Wavell, Stephen J. Wilson, John L. Woodbury, David G. Burnet, Dr. John Cameron, James Grant, John C. Beale, Sterling C. Robertson, successor and assignee of Robert Leftwich, and others. Approximately twenty-six colonial grants were made by the Mexican Government to the above named parties for the purpose of colonizing the virgin territory of Texas. But the most of these grants were failures.

The 21st day of May, 1827, John Cameron received a grant to settle one hundred families north of the thirty-second degree of latitude and west of the one hundred and second degree of longitude. This would place him upon the plains and in the Panhandle of Texas and in New Mexico. October 18, 1828, he, also, obtained a large grant to establish a colony south of the Red River in Central North Texas. In February of 1828 John L. Woodbury and John Cameron received a grant authorizing them to work the iron and coal mines supposed to exist in Western Texas near the head waters of the Colorado and Brazos Rivers. These three grants covered a great portion of the northern half of Western Texas. But these grants were failures and practically nothing was done to establish colonies in the northern and western part of Texas territory.

In February of 1831 Stephen F. Austin and Samuel Williams received a large grant to settle eight hundred Mexicans and

other families just south of Cameron's grants, and in the territory much of which is now covered by the counties of Williamson, McLennan, Coryell, Bosque, Hamilton, Comanche, Lampasas, Mills, Brown, San Saba, McCulloch, Coleman, Callahan, Eastland, Shackelford, Stephens, Palo Pinto, Parker, Tarrant, Hood, Johnson and Somervell. In 1827 Stephen F. Austin received a grant to establish colonies on the Colorado and its tributaries in the vicinity of and to the north and west of the present city of Austin.

The 12th of January, 1826, Benjamin R. Milam received a grant to settle three hundred families in the district lying northwest of the San Antonio and Nacogdoches road and between the Guadalupe and Colorado Rivers.

February 23, 1828, Stephen J. Wilson and Richard Exter, two Englishmen, who lived in Mexico City, received a grant to establish one hundred families north of the thirty-second degree latitude and west of the hundred and second degree longitude. This grant, like one of those of John Cameron's, was out on the plains and in the Panhandle section of Texas and in Eastern New Mexico. Exter died, and Dr. John C. Beales, an Englishman who also lived in Mexico City, was permitted to take Exter's place in such colonial enterprise. In the spring of 1833, Wilson and Beales sent a surveying party under the leadership of A. La Grande from Santa Fe to make a survey of the grant. This surveying party began operations in the vicinity of Midland about the 27th of June, 1833. The surveyors worked northwestward until about the 30th of October, 1833, when they reached the Obscure Mountains. By that time the weather had become so severe, that A. La Grande and party were forced to abandon their work, which was never resumed.

Dr. John Charles Beales and James Grant, a Scotchman from Mexico City, were granted the privilege of establishing a colony of eight hundred families in the territory between the Nueces and Rio Grande Rivers and north of the San Antonio and Laredo road. The first colonial settlement of this grant was planted on Los Moras Creek at a point twelve miles above its juncture with the Rio Grande, and somewhere near the southern part of Kinney County.

The 10th of November, 1833, Dr. Beales, with fifty-nine colonists most of whom were Englishmen sailed from New York on the schooner, Amos Wright, for Aransas Bay on the coast of Texas. They landed about the middle of November. And Jan. 3, 1834, the colonists were conveyed by Mexican oxcarts to Los Moras Creek. The party arrived the 16th of March, 1834, and named the new location Dolores. A town site was surveyed and allotments of land made to the new homeseekers. But the colony did not long endure. Drouthy conditions caused crop failures and the fear of Indians and Mexican outlaws augmented its sufferings. The 10th of March, 1836, two years after their arrival, the last of the colonists left Dolores and started for the coastal country of

Texas. This party was composed of eleven men, two women and three children, one an infant. When the small band of colonists reached the San Antonio and Laredo road where it crosses the Nueces River they established their camp a mile or two up the stream to avoid coming in contact with Santa Anna's army, for just at this time the Mexicans were invading Texas. While camped here, they could hear the Mexican troops passing both directions along the roadway. April 2, the colonists resumed their journey and next camped near a splendid lake. It was here they met their misfortune. About fifty or sixty mounted Comanche warriors came thundering like a storm out of the dark night and swept most of the unfortunate little party into eternity. At the time, some of the men were sleeping and others variously occupied. The men were killed and the women and children carried into captivity. The next morning the only infant, belonging to Mrs. Harris was also brutally massacred. The Comanches extended their incursion on to the Texas settlements and then returned to the head waters of the Arkansas. Later William Donoho ransomed from the Indian Mrs. Harris and Mrs. Horn, the two women of the ill-fated party and a Mrs. Plummer who was captured at the Parker's Fort Massacre May 19, 1836, when Cynthia Ann Parker was captured. These noble women were again restored to civilization. And although their liberty was gained, their sacred possessions were lost.

**17. Peter's Colony.** - After Texas became a republic, and as soon as the new government became sufficiently organized, the early Texans saw the need of introducing a large number of new colonists. Consequently, the 4th day of February, 1841, the Texas Congress passed a law authorizing the president to contract with W.S. Peters et al, to introduce a large number of colonists into Northern Texas.

This act provided that each single and married man W. S. Peters and his associates induced to settle in their colony receive three hundred and twenty, and six hundred and forty acres, respectively; that the colonists build a comfortable cabin upon the land, and keep it under fence, and keep at least fifteen acres in cultivation. The president was also authorized to allow W. S. Peters and his associates, as compensation for their services, ten sections for each hundred families, and ten half-sections for each hundred single men introduced into the colony.

The 16th day of January, 1843, an act was passed providing for a modification of some of the provisions of the previous acts and requirements set out in previous contracts which had been entered into during 1841-42, between the President of the Republic of Texas, and W. S. Peters et al. The above act of January 16, 1843, provided that the president be authorized to extend the time in which colonists could be introduced from three to five years; that not exceeding ten thousand families be introduced and that

a minimum of two hundred and fifty families be located each year. Then January 20, 1843, immediately following the passage of the above act, the President made a fourth contract with W. S. Peters and his Associates, which, like others, was supplementary to and a Part of the original contract made August 1, 1841. These acts and contracts created what was then called and has since been commonly known as Peter's Colony.

According to the contracts the northeastern corner of Peter's Colony was located at the point where Big Mineral Creek emptied into Red River. Such point is now in Grayson County. From there the east boundary line of Peter's Colony extended due south one hundred miles through Grayson, Collin, Dallas, and into the eastern part of Ellis County. From here the south boundary line extended due west one hundred and sixty-four miles through Ellis, Johnson, Hood, Erath, Eastland, and to a point in Callahan County. It then extended due north through Callahan, Shackelford, Throckmorton, Baylor and Wilbarger Counties, until the west boundary line intersected Red River. The north boundary line followed the meanders of Red River to the place of beginning. This grant included a part or all of the counties of Grayson, Collin, Dallas, Ellis, Johnson, Hood, Erath, Eastland, Callahan, Shackelford, Baylor, Throckmorton, Wilbarger, Wichita, Clay, Montague, Denton, Cooke, Tarrant, Wise, Parker, Jack, Palo Pinto, Archer, Young and Stephens Counties, and included the very heart of one of the finest parts of Texas.

After the colony began to expand, W. S. Peters and his associates organized themselves into a company, known as the "Texan Immigration and Land Company." And thereafter the business was transacted largely in the name of the company. Today much of the land in the above named counties is often mentioned and known as the T. E. and L. Company Surveys.

The value of this enterprise in colonizing North Texas cannot be overestimated. W. S. Peters and his associates advertised extensively for colonists and homeseekers in the states of Kentucky, Tennessee, Missouri, Arkansas, and elsewhere. And it is due to this fact that so many of the early settlers, who located on the northern and western frontier, were from the above named states. In fact, as early as 1855 there was a town in Grayson County named Kentuckytown. It was, no doubt, so named because of the large number of local settlers from Kentucky. Some of the Texas maps printed during the 40's indicated a Kentucky settlement in Northern Texas.

At first, the settlements in Peter's Colony were in the eastern portion. The western part did not begin to settle on an extensive scale until about 1855, but surveys were made in the western counties of Peter's Colony, as early as the late 40's. Many of the colonists who came to Collin, Grayson,

Denton and other eastern counties, and settled in Peter's Colony during the 40's pushed on out into Parker, Palo Pinto, Jack, Wise, Young, Stephens, Erath and other western counties during the 50's.

**18. Fisher and Miller's Grant.** - February 5, 1842, a law was passed providing that the president be authorized to contract with other responsible parties to promote immigration enterprises similar to that of W. S. Peters and his associates. As a consequence, June 7, 1842, President Houston made a grant to Henry F. Fisher and Burchard Miller to establish a colony in the territory along the Pedernales, Llano, San Saba, Concho and Colorado Rivers. This grant began at the mouth of the Llano River and followed up that stream to the source of its south fork. From there it extended due south fifty miles, and then north forty-five degrees, west to the Colorado River. From this point it followed the meanders of the Colorado back to the mouth of the Llano, and included approximately three million, eight hundred and twenty-eight thousand acres. And when many of the colonists located in the vicinity of the present city of Fredericksburg and elsewhere, this colonial grant was later extended farther south to include that territory.

Fisher and Miller agreed to settle six hundred European families upon said grant within a period of eighteen months; and to ultimately establish six thousand families thereon.

These immigrants were governed with the same law as the settlers of Peter's Colony and were subjected to the same requirements.

After making preliminary negotiations, Henry F. Fisher went to Germany for the purpose of collecting his colonists. Only ten months remained to introduce the six hundred families. September 1, 1843, however, the Republic of Texas extended the time twelve months longer. June 24, 1844, a contract was made between Henry F. Fisher on behalf of Fisher and Miller and Count Castell, representing the Adelsverein, whereby Fisher and Miller assigned two-thirds of their interest in the grant to the latter, who, in turn, agreed to assume the major obligations of promoting the colonial enterprise.

From 1844 to 1845, this German immigration coalition introduced a large number of immigrants into the sleepy mountainous sections of Gillespie and adjoining counties. It was the intention of the colonists, at first, to move farther north and west. But they suffered the usual hardships of frontiersmen, and misfortune forced them to stop near the present town of Fredericksburg, where the colonists later decided to permanently remain. After the German settlements were once started, they began to expand in all directions, and the towns of Fredericksburg, Boerne, New Braunfels, Comfort, Center Point and other West Texas villages soon sprang into existence. Fredericksburg, no

doubt, is and has always been the center of activity of the Germans who settled in this section of Texas.

It is unnecessary to state that in spite of the many hardships and Indian depredations, these European immigrants made sagacious settlers and trustworthy citizens.

**19. Castro's Colony.** - January 5, 1842, President Houston entered into a contract with Henry Castro to settle a colony in the territory beginning about four miles west of the Medina, within a period of five years. Since Castro was anxious to have the river as an eastern boundary, he bought from private parties sufficient lands to extend his territory to the banks of this beautiful stream.

President Houston at the same time, appointed Castro, a trustworthy and educated Frenchman, to be Consul-General from the Republic of Texas to France.

September 3, 1844, Henry Castro, who was always esteemed by friends and praised by historians, arrived on the Medina at the head of the first party of immigrants. A village was organized and located on the west bank of the river and named Castroville, in honor of Henry Castro. This colony, like others, suffered the usual hardships of frontiersmen, and was constantly harassed by hostile Indians. But Castro succeeded in accomplishing his task and planted the first permanent colony between the Medina and the Rio Grande, and westward of San Antonio.

He was forced, however, to largely finance the entire enterprise, which necessitated his spending over one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Castro chartered, at his own expense, seven ships to move approximately seven hundred immigrants. And within a few years also defrayed much of the expenses of introducing over five thousand settlers into the new territory. Castro also furnished his colonists with provisions and necessary supplies while they were establishing permanent homes.

**20. Extent of Colonial Expansion.** - March 2, 1836, when Texas declared her independence she found herself in possession of sufficient territory to establish an empire. Yet her population was insufficient to establish even a single city of an appreciable size. And, like the United States, certain portions of the boundaries of the newly born Republic were not well defined. December 16, 1836, the Congress of the Republic of Texas passed a law, however, inscribing the territory to which the new nation asserted her claim. It was defined as follows: "Beginning at the mouth of the Sabina River and running west along the Gulf of Mexico, three leagues from land to the mouth of the Rio Grande; thence up the principal stream of said river to its source; thence due north toward the forty-second degree of north latitude; thence along the boundary line as defined in the treaty between the United States and Spain to the beginning."

Texas claimed that portion of New Mexico on the eastern side of the Rio Grande and considerable territory farther north. Santa Fe was in the territory claimed up until 1850 when the United States for a consideration of ten million dollars purchased all of the territory claimed by Texas to the west and north of the present boundaries.

When Texas became a Republic there were, of course, extensive Spanish settlements in the vicinity of El Paso and farther down the stream toward Ojunga. But elsewhere, except in the vicinity of San Antonio, the lands of West Texas remained practically unsettled. The frontier of the Texas settlements, at that time, extended in an irregular direction from San Antonio to Nacogdoches and then northward to Red River. Practically all of the settlements in Texas were within one hundred and fifty miles of the Gulf. The territory in the vicinity of Waco, Fort Worth, Dallas and farther north and west was wild, open and unsettled, and the home of roaming bands of Indians and buffalo. There were, however, a few settlements as far out as Bell and Guadalupe Counties. But the westward movement of settlements was turned back by the invasions of hostile Indians and ingression of Mexican soldiers. Nevertheless, the constant tendency of the settlements was to push northward and westward and toward the headwaters of Texas streams.

The authorities do not agree concerning the population of Texas during the different periods of the republic. Henry F. Morfit, who was sent as a commissioner by President Jackson to gather first hand information concerning the military, political and civil conditions of the people of Texas during the early days of the Texas Republic, placed the population at fifty-eight thousand and five hundred individuals, including Mexicans, Indians and negroes. Of this number only about thirty thousand were estimated to be white citizens. By 1841, approximately fifty-four thousand white citizens were in Texas, and by the time Texas joined the Union, the population had increased to almost one hundred thousand. But at this date the population was still largely confined to the eastern and southern districts of Texas. In 1846 the irregular line of frontier settlements, which extended furthest west, extended through the present counties of Cooke, Denton, Tarrant, Hill, McLennan, Bell, Williamson, Travis, Blanco, Gillespie, Kendall, Comal, Bexar, Medina, and then to the Rio Grande. All Texas territory to the west, excepting the district of El Paso and New Mexico, was still unsettled.

Since the present work covers the counties of Cooke, Denton, Tarrant, Hill, McLennan, Bell, Williamson, Travis, Hays, Comal, Bexar, Medina, Uvalde, Kinney, and Texas territory westward of these counties, it will be readily observed that when Texas joined the Union only a very small per cent of the West Texas frontier was settled.

Ref: Those within chapter and preceding chapters: History of North and West Texas, by B. B. Paddock; German Elements in Texas, by Moritz Tilsing; Laws of Texas, compiled and arranged by H. P. N. Gammel Sr.; J. De Cordova's Map of Texas, published in 1849.

**PART II  
WEST TEXAS BEFORE ANNEXATION AND AFTER THE  
BEGINNING OF AMERICAN COLONIZATION**

**CHAPTER II  
INDUSTRIAL ENTERPRISES, OVERLAND  
TRANSPORTATION, EARLY ROADS AND WELL  
KNOWN PLACES**

**21. Hunting.** – Not unlike the French and Spanish who traveled across the Texas prairies previous to the advent of the Americans, the first settlers made extensive hunting expeditions after the buffalo, bear, deer, wild turkey and other game as well as wild horses and cattle. These hunting excursions often extended far out into the unbroken plains and prairies and into the valleys and canyons of Western Texas. Needless to say, the hunters almost invariably invoked the hostility of the natives, inasmuch as the settlers were encroaching upon their sacred hunting grounds.

22. Fur Trading and Trapping. - We have already seen the extent of the trapping and fur trading with and among the Indians during the days that Texas was under the dominion of Spain and France. The overland trading, however, started on a more extensive scale after Zebulon M. Pike and others made their expeditions into the wilds of the great west. Some authorities date the beginning of the overland trade just subsequently to these explorations, while others are inclined to place the origin of the industry about 1821. Primarily, there is a distinction between trading and trapping among the Indians. But since the two subjects are related, we shall not attempt to discuss them separately.

In 1831, the great Western Prairies were alive with both citizens of the United States, and Frenchmen who were constantly bartering with the Indians and trapping in their territory. These traders and trappers were visiting practically every part of the great western dominion for the purpose of trapping and trading merchandise to the natives in exchange for hides, furs and pelts. And long before Texas was annexed to the United States, these industries developed into a major enterprise and practically every part of Western Texas was frequently visited by traders and trappers.

In the works of Joseph J. Hill, whose writings cover the fur trade from 1832 to 1834, he says that from 1821 to 1823, there were no less than one hundred trappers and traders that visited all of the tributaries of the Rio Grande. And Lew Cross stated there were perhaps no less than five or six

hundred trappers working in the Great West. A large percent of these periodically visited the headwaters of the Cimarron, Canadian, Red, Trinity, Brazos, Colorado, Rio Grande and other Texas streams and their tributaries.

The Indian traders were required both by the United States and the Republic of Texas to obtain a license to trade with the Indians, but as we should naturally expect, these laws were not always observed. In practically all of the early reports detailing extended expeditions across the prairies, we invariably find references to these adventurers coming in contact with traders and trappers hundreds of miles from civilization. We can imagine at least a few of their many experiences. The early homeseekers, whose eyes were turned toward the western stars and the bright lands of California, were often saved from the bloody hand of the savages by the sudden arrival of some of these early traders and trappers.

23. Trading Posts. - The Adobe-Walls fight, in 1874, between hunters of buffalo and hostile Indians, occurred at the old Adobe ruins of what was once, perhaps, Bent's Fort or Trading House. This trading house was first established at the mouth of Fountas Creek in the State of Colorado. About 1829, however, in order to get in touch with the enormous trade between St. Louis and the northern provinces of Mexico the post was moved to the Panhandle of Texas and established on a tributary of the Canadian and northward of the present town of Miami. It was known as Bent's Fort and so named because Col. William Bent was its founder. In 1839, three years after the Republic of Texas declared her independence there were approximately one hundred men employed by this post.

Coffee's trading house was first established on the Oklahoma side of the Red River near the upper cross timbers and perhaps not many miles from the mouth of the Washita. And before 1843 Coffee also had a trading house, commonly known as Coffee's Second Trading House, located on the Oklahoma side of Red River, perhaps not a great distance from the present town of Hollis. Coffee's third trading house was on the Texas side of Red River, not many miles from the mouth of the Washita.

Before annexation Warren's Trading House had been established on the Bosque not a great distance from the present town of Meridian. Browning's Trading House was on the Trinity, only a few miles below Bird's Fort, which afterwards became known as Birdville.

The 14th of January, 1843, the Texas Congress passed a law providing for a better and more friendly understanding with the Indians. This act provided for the establishment and maintenance of a series of trading posts extending from the Red River to the Rio Grande; and further providing that the first of these posts be established at or near the south fork

of the Trinity, somewhere between the upper and lower cross-timbers. This, of course, would be somewhere in the vicinity of Bird's Fort. The second post was to be established at or near Comanche Peak, now in Hood County.

The nearest post to this peak was, perhaps. Torrey's Trading House, established in the spring of 1844, about eight miles north of the city of Waco, on Tehuacana Creek, by Messrs. George Barnard and David Torrey. This frontier trading post was in existence for a number of years. Robert S. Neighbors and other Indian agents often made this post their headquarters.

A third trading post was to be established at or near old Mission San Saba, in the vicinity of the present town of Menard. The act also provided that a fourth trading post be established at Parto Vandero and the fifth, and last, at the junction of the Los Moras and Rio Grande. The last location was in the northern portion of the present Maverick County. About 1847 George and Charlie Barnard established a trading post near the present town of Fort Spunky in Hood County. This post became known as "Barnard's Trading House" and like others, did an extensive trade with the Indians and proved to be a profitable industry. But in 1855 when the Indians were located upon the reservations in Young and Throckmorton Counties the trade suddenly ceased. As a consequence Barnard's Trading House was relocated adjacent to the lower Indian reservation, which lay immediately south of the present city of Graham. As has already been mentioned, that from time immemorial, it was customary for the Comanches to extend their long forays into Old Mexico for the purpose of stealing, murdering and carrying the Mexican women and children into captivity. These excursions were so regularly made the Indians had well beaten trails leading into Old Mexico from Western Texas. According to reports, on one of these forays they captured a splendid Mexican lady, a member of the family of Cavassas. She remained in captivity for approximately six or eight months and during the time witnessed the killing of another Mexican girl, who like herself, had been captured by the Indians and who was her friend and companion. But amid the thickest of thorns some time the sweetest flowers bloom. This splendid lady, who had so greatly suffered while in the hands of the savages, like a wild rose blooming in brush and briers far from civilization, was discovered by Mr. Charlie Barnard, who bartered her from the Indians. Shortly afterward she became his devoted wife.

Growing out of this unusual romance the seemingly inevitable again happened. Mrs. Barnard made an effort to communicate with her people in Mexico. But apparently her efforts were in vain. Some time later, however, her twin brother accidentally passed her part of the country. The resemblance of the two was at once recognized, and by this means, and no other, after being tossed for many months

by the turbulent waves of misfortune, these twins were again united. Inasmuch as most of the frontier counties of West Texas were not settled until along in the fifties and later, it is interesting to note the number of trading posts which were established among the Indians. This industry reached sufficient magnitude to be both recognized and licensed by the republic. And their establishment, no doubt, had a tendency to accelerate the westward movement of the early West Texas frontier. Although not all of the posts were established, nevertheless, the projected idea of the establishment of a chain of trading houses from the Red River to the Rio Grande had some influence, no doubt, in deciding where to locate a series of federal military posts across the Texas frontier during the late forties and early fifties, and immediately following the Mexican War.

As early as 1843, conservative estimates place the number of trading posts, which were scattered along the rivers and streams of the Great West, at no less than one hundred and fifty. And that approximately five hundred men were employed to barter with the Indians. In the report of Lew Cross, made in 1832 to the President of the United States, he places the value of the fur trade between the Americans and Indians on the Great Western Plains, at approximately three hundred thousand dollars. And West Texas contributed her pro rata part to such industry.

**24. Early Surveying.** - In addition to the overland traveling, expeditions in conquest of Indians, trading, trapping, etc., during the days of the Texas Republic, it was not an uncommon occurrence for surveying parties to leave the settlements for the purpose of locating lands in many of the West Texas counties which remained unsettled until 1855. Surveying expeditions were made in Palo Pinto, Erath and adjoining counties as early as 1840. In fact, Erath County derived its name from Major George B. Erath who, during the thirties, forties and fifties, made many surveys in this vicinity.

The Indians confidently felt that the lands of Western Texas rightfully belonged to them. As a consequence, the various surveying parties worked out of the lower settlements and trading posts had many conflicts with the natives.

**25. Overland Traveling and Early Roads.** - Since there were only a few scattered settlements along the West Texas frontier prior to annexation, naturally there were few roadways. The Santa Fe Trail from St. Louis to New Mexico passed through the Panhandle of Texas. It was not only used as an artery of commerce in an extensive trade between the United States and the Mexican provinces but was also used by trains of homeseekers, whose eyes were turned toward California.

The 26th of May, 1838, the Texas Congress passed an act providing that R. B. Craft, William Barton and Capt. Lynch be appointed commissioners to mark out a road from

Bastrop to the upper three forks of the Trinity River near the present city of Fort Worth. The act further provided that Bailey English, Robert Sloan and Levi M. Pace also be appointed commissioners to mark out a roadway between the upper three forks of the Trinity to extend somewhere along Red River between the upper cross timbers and Spanish bluffs.

Again, February 5, 1844, after the establishment of Peters Colony the Texas Congress passed an act to establish a national road known as the "Central National Road of the Republic of Texas." This act provided that Jason Wilson, W. M. Williams, John Tarry, Rowland W. Box and James Bradshaw be appointed commissioners to mark out the above named highway, which was to extend from the main Trinity at a Point near the present city of Fort Worth to Red River opposite the mouth of the Kiamisha. Local roads were also continually added as the settlements advanced. But unsettled sections, as a rule, except in a few instances, were only crossed by the trails of Indians and buffalo. Furthermore, before 1849 no recognized roads traversed Texas from the settlements in the eastern and southern parts of the state to El Paso and other points in the West.

**26. Well-Known Places.** - We are often led to believe that during the thirties or forties, which was several years before the settlement of Montague, Clay, Wise, Jack, Young, Parker, Palo Pinto, Stephens, Hood, Erath, Comanche, Brown, Coryell, Lampasas, San Saba, Mason and many other West Texas counties, extending to the Rio Grande, that the unsettled sections of Western Texas were little known. But such ideas are erroneous. In fact, the early frontiersmen were going to practically every part of the state, and many land-marks were well known. As early as the forties Caddo, Ioni, Keechi, Palo Pinto and other important streams of Palo Pinto County were already named and well-known to many of the Texans of the lower settlements. Likewise, Cedar Creek of Stephens County, Paluxy of Erath and adjoining counties, and many other streams at that early date were also named and well-known. The most important rivers had been named by the Spanish during preceding centuries. The Palo Pinto and Bosque Rivers, Cow Creek and San Gabriel, are indicated on the map of Stephen F. Austin, which was printed in 1839. Comanche Peak of Hood County, the Double Mountains of Stonewall County, Santa Anna Mountains of Coleman County, were named, well-known and important land marks to the early travelers, buffalo hunters and Indian scouts, who traversed through the wilds of Western Texas.

Ref. Those given in Chapter III and other preceding chapters and this chapter: Following old maps: A Chart of S. W. Region by E. Burgrin (1846) and an unnamed chart or drawing made about 1844, both of which are in office Topographical Engineers, War Department, Washington, D. C.; Reports of Secretary of War and Commissioner of Indian Affairs 1846-55; Laws of Texas by H. P. N. Gammel.

**PART II**  
**WEST TEXAS BEFORE ANNEXATION AND AFTER THE**  
**BEGINNING OF AMERICAN COLONIZATION**

**CHAPTER III**  
**IMPORTANT EXPEDITIONS**

**27. Chihuahua Traders.** - The governor of Chihuahua conceived an idea that if a direct line of communication be established from Chihuahua in a northeasterly course through Central West Texas, it would eliminate a distance of several hundred miles, which traders were required to travel over the older route, by way of El Paso and Santa Fe to St. Louis. It was also believed that no little amount of the valuable trade which Santa Fe and other points in New Mexico were enjoying would be diverted directly to Chihuahua. As a consequence, and to encourage adventurers, the governor of Chihuahua agreed to reduce the import duties to a very low rate upon such merchandise that any pioneering expedition would transport directly from Missouri across Texas in a southwestern direction to Chihuahua. In addition, the governor promised that he would provide the necessary escort of dragoons to protect such an enterprise.

The expedition was undertaken chiefly by Mexicans and Dr. H. C. Connally, an American merchant, and set out from Chihuahua, April 3, 1839. It consisted of over one hundred men, fifty of whom were the dragoons furnished by the governor. There were seven wagons to transport the men and provisions, and the party went directly from Chihuahua to Ojinaga across the river from the present town of Presidio, Texas. From there the expedition took a northeasterly course and passed somewhere through the strip of country now occupied by the counties of Presidio, Brewster, Pecos, Terrell, Crockett, Schleicher, Tom Green, Runnels, Coleman, Brown, Comanche, Erath, Hood, Callahan, Eastland, Shackelford, Stephens, Palo Pinto, Parker, Young, Jack, Wise, Archer, Clay, Montague, etc. But not unlike other expeditions, the exact route is not known. The caravan crossed Red River, which was supposed to have been the Brazos. From there they took a due north course in search of the Red River, which they had already crossed but which they thought was still ahead. Consequently they soon discovered the expedition was on the banks of the Canadian. From there the Chihuahua traders were piloted by some Delaware Indians to Fort Towson.

It was their intention to return to Chihuahua in the fall. But since they had lost their course and were approximately three months reaching Fort Towson the expedition waited until the spring of 1840 to make the return trip.

In returning, the caravan passed through the Red River settlements in Northeastern Texas. And, although it consisted principally of Mexicans all of the members of the party were very hospitably received and entertained by the early Texas settlers of that section of the state. Dr. Connally said":

"I have never been more hospitably treated or had more efficient assistance than was given by the citizens of Red River; all seem to vie with each other in rendering us every aid in their power; and our Mexican friends, notwithstanding the hostile attitude in which the two countries are toward each other, were treated with a kindness which they still recollect, and with the warmest feeling of gratitude."

This was, indeed, a great contrast to the treatment the Texan-Santa Fe expedition, a similar adventure, received from the Mexicans during the following year.

The returning caravan now consisted of sixty-seven wagons laden with merchandise and about two hundred and twenty-five men including the escort of fifty Mexican dragoons. The party left the settlements in Northeastern Texas in April, 1840, and expected to strike their former trail beyond the cross timbers somewhere in the vicinity of Hood, Palo Pinto, Erath, Eastland, Stephens or Young County. To be sure, there were no such counties in Texas at that time. But since the former trail was practically obliterated, they failed to recognize the former route and were soon lost in the breaks of the Brazos, evidently somewhere in the vicinity of Palo Pinto or Young County, But they turned their course farther south for a few days and finally struck their old trail on a tributary of the Colorado, perhaps somewhere in the vicinity of Brown, Mills or Coleman County. After this, the traders traveled without further trouble and soon reached the Pecos. This stream was ferried by fastening several empty water kegs to the wagon bed. (It will be noted that about nine years later Col. R. B. Marcy, who established Marcy's Return Route, or the Old California Trail, also used water kegs to ford the Pecos and returned to the settlements of North and Eastern Texas over somewhat the same route followed by this expedition.)

When the expedition again reached Presidio del Norte its members were informed that Governor Irigoyen, who had encouraged the enterprise and who promised to reduce the import duties, was dead. As a consequence, the new officers threatened to impose full duties upon the merchandise. This delayed the expedition for forty-five days and until a compromise between the two factions was reached. The expedition again reached Chihuahua, August 27, 1840. Because of the long delays and hardships experienced by Dr. Connelly and his associates, and because of the death of Governor Irigoyen, this pioneer enterprise failed to establish a

direct line of communication from Chihuahua through the central portion of Western Texas to Missouri.

But this expedition, the history of which had largely been overlooked by historians, was another instance where Western Texas was traversed by traders long before the arrival of the first settlers.

**28. The Texan-Santa Fe Expedition** - The Texan-Santa Fe Expedition sponsored by the President of the Republic and intended to be only a peaceable enterprise was, no doubt, made for a two-fold purpose. In the "Narrative of the Texas-Santa Fe Expedition," written by George Wilkens Kendall and printed in 1844, we are informed that the policy of Mirabeau B. Lamar, President of the Republic, was to open a direct trade between the Texas settlements and Santa Fe by a route known to be much nearer than the great Missouri trail. In his works, Mr. Kendall said, "To divert the trade was certainly the primary and ostensible object." But, no doubt, it was also the intention of the expedition to attempt to peaceably establish the jurisdiction of Texas over her western territory, which lay on the eastern side of the Rio Grande, and which had long been claimed by Texas. January 4, 1850, about five years after Texas had been annexed to the Union, the Legislature passed a law organizing the county of Santa Fe, for Texas felt such western territory belonged to her.

Too, President Lamar and other high officers had been informed that a great majority of the people of New Mexico were exceedingly anxious for Texas to fully establish her jurisdiction over this territory. In the above works of Mr. Kendall, who accompanied the expedition, he said:

"The President was led to conceive this project by a well-founded belief that nine-tenths of the inhabitants (of Santa Fe and other Mexican points to the east of the Rio Grande) were discontented under the Mexican yoke and anxious to come under the protection of that flag to which they owed their fealty. I say a well-founded belief - the consideration which influenced him were assurances from New Mexico - positive assurances - that the people would hail the coming of an expedition and at once decree allegiance to the Texas Government."

The expedition rendezvoused on Brushy Creek about twenty miles north of Austin. Two companies numbering approximately eighty men were detailed to work forward as an advance guard. Second in the line of march came the wagons in single file and the beef cattle that were to furnish the party with the supply of meat. A company of men was also detailed to drive the cattle, to cut away the brush and banks of the streams and do other similar duties. The rear guard brought up the long procession which included the remaining three of the six companies of soldiers attached to the expedition. These soldiers, in addition to the usual

provisions, carried one brass six-pound cannon. There were about fifty people attached to the expedition in various official capacities. In addition, approximately two hundred and seventy citizens voluntarily made the trip.

The party left Brushy Creek, twenty miles north of Austin, the 21st of July, 1841. The members of the expedition saw buffalo before they reached Little River.

The party was late in getting started and, as a consequence, it became necessary to requisition the authorities at Austin for an additional supply of beef. This again delayed the expedition fifteen days. About the same time General McLeod, who had charge of the enterprise, contracted a fever and was carried to Bryant's station on the Brazos about twenty miles to the east of the camp. During his absence Major Howard assumed command. Orders were given June 29th for an early march the following morning and all were anxious to go. Many members of the party were preparing to travel across the Western prairies for their first time.

June 30, the party saw their first herd of wild horses, thousands of which were running wild over the Texas plains. It was known to the expedition that hunters, traders and trappers had often seen a splendid white steed, which ranged in the vicinity of the upper cross timbers. This fine horse was known to always lead his herd and was highly prized by adventurers who had failed to catch him. Needless to say, it was the desire of the members of this enterprise to have an opportunity to see this splendid steed, which was known far and wide as "The White Steed of the Prairies." But, it seems, this privilege they failed to enjoy.

The Texans reached Cow Creek July 1. July 5 they camped on the Bosque, perhaps not a great distance from the present town of Meridian. The high and steep banks of this beautiful stream occasioned no little trouble in crossing. It became necessary to hitch as many as twenty yoke of oxen to each wagon to ascend the deep banks. Mr. Kendall said, "Had Bonaparte met with the Bosque while crossing the Alps he would have been compelled to have returned." July 8 General McLeod again assumed command. The expedition next camped on the sandy banks of the Brazos. It was the intention of the party to cross this stream as soon as possible and travel up the divide between the Brazos and Trinity. July 11 the Texans were traveling along a chain of rough hills which separated the western bank of the Brazos from the prairie. Several wagons being broken, the Texans waited until the 14th to make a new start. But when the 14th arrived the party crossed this historic old stream, and had considerable trouble ascending the sandy banks on the other side. This crossing was very near the present town of Granbury, for Kendall several times speaks of Comanche Peak's being not a great distance to the west.

The expedition moved cautiously because news had been received that a large party of Cherokees, Caddos and members of other tribes had planted themselves in a fertile bend of the Brazos to make a surprise attack upon the Texans. But, no doubt, such news was only an example of intrigue perpetrated by the Indians for the intended purpose of diverting the expedition from their sacred hunting grounds.

After the party crossed the Brazos the expedition moved northward and westward on a high divide which lay to the east of the river. Kendall said:

"To the west of the river the immediate vicinity was more desolate, but the fertile bottoms of the Brazos with their luxuriant growth of timber were still visible, and the Comanche Peak rising high above other hills gave grandeur and sublimity to a scene which would have otherwise been far from monotonous."

Thus far the expedition had moved nearly due northward. But July 21, while the party was still within the cross-timbers and, perhaps, in the western part of Parker or the eastern part of Palo Pinto County, the course of the expedition changed to a northwest direction. From Parker or Palo Pinto County the expedition, perhaps, passed through the strip of country now in Jack, Clay and Archer Counties. When they emerged from the timber, old hunters who accompanied the expedition told the Texans they were now nearing Red River. A Mexican named Carlos who had often trapped in Northern Texas also informed the citizens they were nearing Red River. But it seems they struck the Rio Utaw or Wichita instead. The Mexican recognized the Wichita and told the party he had often trapped there, was well acquainted with the country and was perfectly at home. The Texans, by this time, were considerably beyond the trail which had been made by the Chihuahua traders during the previous year and which was still discernible. The point of intersection of the trails of the two expeditions was perhaps somewhere in Jack or Palo Pinto County.

This enterprise met misfortunes on every hand. The Texans encountered difficulties with the Indians and their supplies were practically exhausted long before the party reached Santa Fe. In fact, their suffering became so serious the Texans were forced to resort to drastic measures. Mr. Kendall said, "The party devoured tortoises, snakes and every living and creeping thing with a rapacity which nothing but the direst of hunger could induce." Because of such distressing conditions the Texans sent Messrs. Howland, Baker and Rosenberry to San Miguel in search of necessary provisions and supplies, and to ascertain, if possible, the consensus of the people concerning the expedition. This advance party, after traveling a few days, met a small

party of Mexican traders, who stated that San Miguel was seventy or eighty miles in the distance. But that at Anton Chico, a much nearer place, they could obtain a supply of mutton from sheep herders. A part of the Mexican traders volunteered their services and went to the aid of the expedition. These Mexicans directed the Texans over a shorter route. Howland, Baker and Rosenberry continued on their journey until they reached the Rio Gallinas, where they found an abundance of sheep.

Subsequently, the Texans sent W. P. Lewis, who could speak Spanish, George Van Ness, Howard Fitzgerald and George W. Kendall, with a letter of introduction to the Alcalde, informing him of the approach of the expedition, and also informing him that the expedition was a commercial enterprise, peaceable in its nature, and that it was their mission to purchase and send provisions back to the main body of Texans. These messengers also carried numerous copies of President Lamar's Proclamation, detailing the objects of this expedition, and stating that if the inhabitants of New Mexico did not desire to peaceably come under the jurisdiction and flag of Texas, the party would immediately return to their home. Lewis and his party, 14th of September, left the Rio Gallinas for San Miguel. The shepherds of Gallinas had informed them that the country was in arms against the Texans, and that the messengers - Howland, Baker and Rosenberry - had been arrested and imprisoned at Santa Fe.

The Texans were told that Armijo was informing the people that it was the intention of the expedition to burn, slay and destroy as the party advanced. Lewis and party were also arrested by a force under Salazar, who took them to San Miguel. At San Miguel they were tied together in pairs and driven to Santa Fe, like oxen. About sunset they met Governor Armijo in command of nearly six hundred men. Armijo saluted them and called for their identification. William P. Lewis answered they were from the United States. George Van Ness, who was not afraid to disclose his identity, told Armijo that they were all Texans excepting Mr. Kendall, who was an editor from the United States. Armijo pointed to the star and the word Texas on the uniform of Lewis and said that United States merchants do not wear the uniforms of Texas. Since Lewis could speak Spanish, Armijo selected him as an interpreter. The other messengers were returned to San Miguel. The following day they witnessed the murder of Howland and Baker who were, no doubt, killed by order of Mexican officers for they were shot after attempting to escape to convey the news of New Mexican hostility toward the Texans. By this time Col. William G. Cooke, who was one of the commissioners, with ninety-four Texans moved from Gallinas to Anton Chico. They were informed by Salazar that Lewis and party had been kindly received and sent to Santa Fe. But the 17th of September, Cooke was surrounded by Governor Armijo and his soldiers. The Texans were about to open fire when W. P. Lewis, and the governor's nephew advanced with a

white flag. Lewis informed Cooke there were six hundred men around him, four thousand more would arrive in a few hours and that five thousand soldiers were rapidly marching from Chihuahua. Lewis further stated that Governor Armijo had authorized him to say that if the Texans would give up their arms they would be permitted to remain eight days for the purpose of trading with the Mexicans. Because of this treachery the Texans were deceived and voluntarily surrendered.

Armijo bound the Texans as felons and started them on a long journey toward the City of Mexico, more than twelve hundred miles away. He also sent forth an expedition to meet General McLeod and his companions who were in a starving condition at Laguna Colorado, a lake about thirty miles from Rio Gallinas. The Texans were too weak and fatigued to offer any resistance. The governor offered to protect them and their private property if they would surrender. This they did. But they were searched and robbed, bound in pairs and marched to San Miguel where they arrived the 12th of October, 1841. Armijo confiscated the goods of the Texans and, if reports be true, presented Lewis a supply as a reward for his treachery. The 17th of October the prisoners were started to the City of Mexico by way of Santa Fe in charge of Salazar. The brutal treatment accorded the Texans by Armijo and this Mexican general was worse than horrible. John Henry Brown, in his History of Texas, said:

"John McAlister, a brave and worthy man, was one of the prisoners. His ankle was inflamed so that he could travel no farther and so announced. Salazar ordered him to move on. He exposed his ankle, declaring his inability to walk. Salazar, in a rage, declared he would shoot him if he did not move. McAlister then exposed his breast and told him to shoot. Thereupon, the monster sent a ball through his heart, cut off his ears, and having him stripped of shirt and pants, left his body by the roadside."

But in El Paso the Texans were placed in charge of a more humane officer and thereafter received much better treatment. At Chihuahua the Mexicans, who remembered the kind treatment accorded by the Texans during the previous year, gave the prisoners clothing and other necessary supplies. The party was placed in prison in the City of Mexico until their release was secured in the summer of 1842 by General Waddy Thompson, then Minister from the United States.

When we observe the conduct of Armijo and some of his followers it is not surprising that many of the citizens of New Mexico were anxious to see the Texas flag flying over territory east of the Rio Grande. In summarizing the status of public opinion in that province Mr. Kendall said:

"President Lamar's extension of the views and feelings of the people of Santa Fe and vicinity was perfectly correct. Not a doubt can exist that they all were, and are (1843), anxious to throw off the oppressive yoke of Armijo, and come under the liberal institutions of Texas; but the Governor found us divided into small parties, broken down by long marches and want of food; discovered too, a traitor among us; and taking advantage of these circumstances, his course was plain and his conquest easy."

**29. Mexican Invasions and the Mier Expedition.** - The treatment Governor Armijo and his followers tendered the Texans in 1841 was still fresh in the minds of every patriot who loved the Lone Star State. The feeling of the Texans was further augmented by the arrival of Gen. Rafael Vasquez the 5th of March, 1842, in the vicinity of San Antonio. He demanded the surrender of the city. After a consultation of war Capt. Jack Hays and his Texas Rangers, who were stationed there at the time, decided to retire to the Guadalupe River. The Mexicans who promised to protect the citizens and their property entered San Antonio and took charge of the city's government. But two days later the Mexicans voluntarily retreated across the Rio Grande as unexpectedly as they entered Texas territory.

The Texans, during this same period, were further embittered against the Mexicans as a consequence of the unwarranted arrival of Gen. Adrian Woll also in the vicinity of San Antonio. The September term of the District Court was in session at the time and Judge Hutchison, former Lieutenant Governor Roberson and about fifty-one others, including lawyers and officers of the court, were made Mexican prisoners. General Woll also attacked a detachment of Texans who were encamped about six miles from the city. This occurred the 17th of September, 1842, and the fight lasted about six hours. A large number of Mexicans were killed and wounded. Ten Texans were injured in the conflict but none killed.

General Woll and his men also charged fifty-three Texans who were marching to join this encampment. Being so greatly outnumbered the Texans raised a white flag. This was ignored. Thirty-three of the reinforcements were killed in battle, fifteen surrendered, a few wounded and only two escaped unhurt. Shortly afterward General Woll retreated toward the Rio Grande.

Houston was president at the time, and being of the opinion that the records of the Republic were not safe in Austin, February 5, 1842, sent a message to the Texas Congress suggesting that the archives be moved to a place of greater security. The Texas Congress, however, did not act on the question. When Houston learned of the invasions of General Rafael Vasquez and General Adrian Woll and their men, he called a meeting of his cabinet in the city of

Houston to discuss the advisability of moving the archives. But many of the leading citizens of Austin and elsewhere were bitterly opposed to the records being moved, and as a consequence, considerable internal dissension arose.

But the hostile invasion of the Mexicans was of primary importance to the leading men of Texas. And to retaliate for the invasions of the Mexicans and the treatment accorded the Texan-Santa Fe Expedition, General Alexander Somervell, in command of approximately twelve hundred Texans, left the Medina November 25, 1842, with his eyes turned toward Laredo. When they reached the Rio Grande, however, General Somervell and approximately nine hundred of his men returned home. The remaining three hundred crossed the river and charged the Mexicans at the little town of Mier. The Texans, however, were greatly outnumbered, poorly equipped, and were in no condition to meet a large army. After engaging in no little amount of hard fighting, and after a considerable number on both sides had been killed and wounded, the Mexicans raised a white flag, and told the Texans they would be kindly treated if they would agree to surrender. Because of the large number of wounded, the Texans agreed to this armistice; and when they did, the citizens of the Lone Star State were made prisoners. Later the Texans attempted to escape, but were recaptured, and Santa Anna decreed the Texans should be punished. Every tenth man was ordered shot. Consequently, about one hundred and seventy-six beans, one-tenth of which were black, and the remainder white, were placed in a container. Each prisoner was forced to draw, and those who drew black beans were shot.

Many men who were conspicuous in the earlier history of Texas numbered among these prisoners.

**30. Snively Expedition.** - In 1843, the Texans were informed that Governor Armijo, who had so brutally mistreated the members of the Texan-Santa Fe Expedition, was soon to return across Texas territory from Missouri in charge of a rich Mexican train of supplies without first securing the permission of the Republic of Texas to invade her territory. As a consequence, the 28th day of January, 1843, Col. Jacob Snively applied for permission to raise an army of men sufficient to capture the Mexican train. The expedition, instead of being composed of outlaws as some writers would lead us to believe, was an organization composed of some of the leading men of Texas and was sanctioned by the government.

These citizens organized, the 24th of April, 1843, near the present town of Denison. One hundred and ninety men under the leadership of Col. Jacob Snively followed the trail established three years before by the Chihuahua traders until the Texans were somewhere in the vicinity of Montague or Bowie. From there they traveled in a northwest direction and crossed Red River near the mouth of the Little Wichita.

Subsequently they passed through the Wichita Mountains and then later crossed both the North and South Canadian. The Texans continued their journey and after crossing the Cimarron reached the Arkansas the 27th of May, 1843. A camp was established about eight miles from the Missouri-Santa Fe Trail. Traders and trappers from Bent's Fort informed the expedition that about six hundred Mexican troops under Gov. Armijo were in readiness to escort the caravan from the boundary of the United States to New Mexico. Colonel Snively sent out a scout to reconnoiter their camp. These scouts corroborated the statement of the traders and trappers. June 20, a detachment from the command of Colonel Snively and Governor Armijo had an engagement in which seventeen Mexicans were killed and eighty captured. The Texans also took from the Mexicans a large supply of horses, saddles, arms and provisions. Colonel Snively did not lose any men in this engagement. The Mexican prisoners of war, however, were not handled like Armijo treated the members of the Texan-Santa Fe Expedition, two years before. These prisoners were detained near a splendid spring of fresh water, and kindly treated by the Texans.

The 24th of June, approximately five hundred Indians suddenly appeared, no doubt, with the avowed purpose of attacking the expedition. But when they could see the strength of the citizens, these Indians professed to be friendly.

June 28, a scout reported that it had failed to discover the advance of the Mexican caravan. Discontentment soon arose among the men, many of whom desired to return to their homes. So a division of the expedition was a natural consequence. Seventy men under Captain Eli Chandler, started toward the Texas settlements June 29. Colonel Snively, who was a splendid citizen, loyal Texan, and able official, also liberated the Mexican prisoners. The wounded soldiers were supplied with horses. In addition, Armijo's men were given sufficient number of guns for defense against the Indians, and such other provisions as could be spared. A new camp was pitched farther up the Arkansas to await the arrival of the Mexican caravan. The Texans were confident the new camp was west of the hundredth meridian and on the south side of the Arkansas and upon Texas territory. Subsequent surveys proved that the Texans were in fact, on Texas soil.

Shortly afterwards, the expedition captured a Mexican from whom Snively and his men learned that the caravan, escorted by one hundred and ninety United States dragoons, was not many miles away. These dragoons were in charge of Capt. Phillip St. George Cook. Scouts discovered the caravan June 30 and reported the dragoons had two pieces of artillery. When they arrived, regardless of the protests of the Texans, Cook crossed the Arkansas, came into Texas territory, and demanded unconditional surrender of Snively and his men.

This, the Texans were forced to do, and were allowed to retain only ten guns to protect the remaining Texans who were five hundred miles from home. Fortunately, however, for the Texans, a large number of the men had previously buried their arms in the sandy banks of the Arkansas. Cook and his men then recrossed the river and not until then did he apparently realize the seriousness of his mistake. As a consequence, he sent a messenger to Colonel Snively that as many of his men who preferred, could follow the dragoons to Independence, Missouri. Forty-two Texans accepted the invitation. Colonel Snively, however, hurriedly dispatched a courier to Captain Chandler to advise him and his men concerning the action of Captain Cook. As a consequence, July 2, the two factions again united. Two days following, the Indians stampeded sixty of their horses; but in the conflict that followed, the savages lost twelve of their warriors. In this engagement, the Texans lost one killed, and one wounded.

July 6, the Mexican caravan crossed the Arkansas. Many of the Texans were in favor of attacking the expedition, but others opposed. Colonel Snively resigned his leadership, July 9, and sixty-five of his men selected Charles A. Warfield as their leader. The Texans pursued the caravan until the 13th, when it was fully established that the Mexican escort was too strong to be attacked. Warfield resigned and Snively was again elected as their leader. July 20, the Texans were again assaulted by the Indians. But the natives were soon repulsed. In due time, Col. Jacob Snively and his men reached their respective homes.

When the news of this expedition reached St. Louis and other points most of the papers bitterly denounced the Texans as robbers and pirates. John Henry Brown, in his History of Texas, said:

"The Republican alone, of the St. Louis press, seemed willing to hear both sides. Captain Myers F. Jones and party published a short defensive card, supplemented by a friendly one from Mr. Joseph S. Pease. The author of this work (John Henry Brown, referring to himself in his History of Texas) had just returned and, happening to be in St. Louis, could not submit in silence, and published in the Republican a complete recapitulation of the outrages, robberies and murders committed in 1841 and 1842 by the Mexicans upon the people of Texas, and closed with a denunciation of the conduct of Capt. Philip St. George Cook.

"The effect was salutary and caused a revulsion in the public mind that resulted in Prentice, of the Louisville Journal, and other journalists, warmly espousing the cause of the Texans."

Joseph S. Pease, a hardware merchant of St. Louis, who accompanied Captain Cook and the United States dragoons,

bitterly denounced the captain in demanding the unconditional surrender of the Texans. The United States Government later acknowledged Captain Cook's mistake.

But this important expedition, no doubt, had its beneficial results for it served as an open declaration of the claim of Texas to the northwestern territory and had much weight in the Compromise of 1850 between Texas and the United States.

Ref: Commerce of the Prairies by Josiah Gregg (1844); Texan-Santa Fe Expedition, by Geo. W. Kendall; works mentioned in preceding chapters, especially History of Texas by John Henry Brown; The Indian Wars and Pioneers of Texas by J. H. Brown, etc.

### **PART III THE FRONTIER FROM ANNEXATION UNTIL THE CESSATION OF INDIAN HOSTILITIES**

#### **CHAPTER I EFFECT OF ANNEXATION AND FURTHER EXPLORATIONS AND EXPEDITIONS**

##### **31. Federal and State Activities After Annexation. -**

Before annexation, the internal affairs of Texas had been so unsettled, only a scattered few had planted their pioneer homes along the West Texas frontier, and the infinite waste of the Great West had hardly been touched. As a consequence after annexation, it became necessary for both the State and Federal Government to send out a series of explorations and expeditions into West Texas territory the purpose of treating with Indians, acting as their agents, establishing overlap roads and international boundaries, tracing the streams and their tributaries, surveying proposed routes for railroads, etc.

Under the articles of agreement made and entered into at the time the two nations merged together, Texas retained title to her lands. But the United States agreed to assume control of the Indians. Then immediately following annexation and in 1846 the Federal Government entered into a treaty of peace with the Texas tribes and appointed Robert S. Neighbors and others as Indian agents. These agents made repeated expeditions into practically all parts of West Texas. But a more detailed consideration will be given to this phase of our history in a part of the present work devoted to native races.

Since the Mexican War almost immediately followed annexation, for approximately three years, Federal and State activities were temporarily suspended. But after the war, the eyes of the world were turned toward West Texas.

##### **32. The Texas-El Paso-Chihuahua Expedition of 1848.**

- Subsequently to the Mexican War the citizens of San

Antonio and elsewhere were anxious to establish a roadway and overland trade with El Paso, Chihuahua and other western points. It was also the desire of both the national and state governments to open roads over each section of West Texas. But one of the first expeditions made after annexation, was sponsored by the state government and private enterprise and under the command of Capt. John C. (Jack) Hays. His party was composed of about thirty-five citizens from San Antonio, Fredericksburg and other points, and an equal number of rangers, who had been stationed at Castell, a German settlement on the Llano. The rangers were under the immediate command of Samuel Highsmith. John Conner, a Delaware Indian, and one Lorenzo, a Mexican, who had been many years a captive among the Comanches, acted as guides and interpreters for the expedition.

The citizens from San Antonio and Fredericksburg arrived at the camp of Captain Highsmith and his men on the Llano about August 1, 1848. The rangers were supplied with thirty days' rations and a pack mule to each four men.

The expedition ascended the Llano to the source of the southern or Paint Rock Fork. From there the Texans crossed the divide to the headwaters of the Nueces and then to the San Pedro. It required three days to cross this stream and its basin. As a consequence the party voted to change the name of the San Pedro to El Rio del Diablo, or Devils River, the name by which this stream has since been generally known. After the expedition crossed the Pecos and were in the rough and rugged regions between that stream and the Rio Grande, Lorenzo and John Conner, the guides, became lost, provisions practically exhausted and little game could be found. The flesh of pack mules was the menu for nearly two weeks. The expedition then met a party of Mescalero Indians, who, in exchange for Indian presents, supplied necessary provisions and directed the Texans to the Rancho San Carlos on the Mexican side of the Rio Grande. From there the party went to Fort Leaton, near the present Presidio, Texas. Here the expedition rested for more than two weeks and were favored with a barbecue by the Leaton brothers. They were also sent supplies by the Bishop of Chihuahua.

Since the party intended to be gone only about sixty days, and since they suffered no little amount of hardship, and winter close at hand, the expedition decided to return home.

After marching two and one-half days without water the adventurers reached Lost Springs. From there the party went to the Horse Head Crossing of the Pecos. The Pecos was followed to Live Oak Creek, where Fort Lancaster was afterwards established. Here the party separated. A part of the expedition took a direct course for San Antonio. Others under Colonel Hays returned by the Los Moras. The rangers under Captain Highsmith struck across the country toward

the head waters of the Conchos. At the head of Brady Creek, a severe snow storm greatly augmented the painful suffering of the rangers, who were poorly clothed. No doubt, this was the ultimate cause of the death of Captain Highsmith, who died a few weeks after reaching his camp on the Llano. A German doctor, with the expedition, became deranged, wandered away and became lost from his party. There is a peculiar law among various tribes of Indians, which prohibits their injuring the insane, cripple and others who are abnormal. So when he fell into the hands of the natives they nursed him to normality. But the doctor was considered forever lost by his companions. When he arrived safely home, however, at a later period, his family and friends were, of course, joyfully surprised.

The suffering of this expedition not unlike others previously made, had a stunning effect on future operations. Nevertheless, there was hardly a cessation in the various explorations and expeditions.

**33. Marcy's Return Route or the California Trail.** - April 2, 1849, Capt. R. B. Marcy received orders to lead an expedition for the purpose of exploring a suitable route from Fort Smith Arkansas, to Santa Fe, New Mexico. He was instructed to employ a physician to accompany the expedition. Consequently Dr. Julian Rogers was employed for the purpose. The detachment organized at Fort Smith and consisted of twenty-six non-commissioned officers and privates of Company F, First Dragons under the command of Lieut. Buford. In addition there were fifty non-commissioned officers and privates from the Fifth Infantry under the command of Lieuts. J. Updegraff and M. P. Harrison. A large number of citizens, who were moving to California, also joined the expedition.

Lieut. J. Updegraff with twenty men was sent forward to assist Captain Dent of the Fifth Infantry in making an examination of the country south of the Canadian as far as "Edward's Trading House."

May 5 we find the main command emerging from the timbered belt in Oklahoma and crossing Mustang Creek, which derived its name from the large number of wild horses in that vicinity. Here Captain Marcy secured a supply of hickory, since he was informed that the expedition would find no more for some distance. This hickory was secured for the purpose of repairing wagons and other articles broken on the way. May 9, after encountering rains and bad weather, the expedition camped nearly opposite old Fort Holmes. The 16th, however, orders were given to move, for Lieut. Updegraff was about to join the main command.

June 1, the expedition was nearing the one hundredth meridian where they were visited by four Kiowa Indians, who were painted for war. These Indians were armed with rifles, bows, lances, shields, etc., and informed Captain

Marcy and his command they were on a horse stealing foray into Chihuahua, Mexico, to be gone about one year.

June 18 twin boys were born to one of the emigrant families. They were named Marcy and Dillard. Captain Marcy said that if he never reached the gold country himself, his name would, nevertheless, be represented there.

June 14 the train, after traveling some distance under the cap rock, emerged out on the plains. The expedition reached Santa Fe about four p.m. June 28, 1849.

Here Captain Marcy and his command rested about six weeks to permit both men and animals to recuperate. During this time Captain Marcy made many inquiries concerning a practical route leading from the Rio Grande, considerably south of Santa Fe eastward through the western part of Texas. But this route lay directly through that part of the country which was infested by the Comanche, Apache and other hostile Indians. But few Mexicans could be found who knew anything of this particular territory, which lay to the east of the Mexican settlements of New Mexico. Those that did were unwilling to act as guides and afterwards return home through the Comanche-infested country. Fortunately, however, Captain Marcy finally found a Comanche Indian living at San Miguel, who was born and reared in Western Texas, and familiar with the principal streams, watering places and suitable camping sites. This Comanche was of the opinion that wagons could pass without difficulty from a point on the Rio Grande known as "Joya de Cibaletta" to the head waters of the Colorado. The Indian also told Captain Marcy there were but three routes where the West Texas plains could be crossed, on account of the scarcity of water. One of these lay to the north of "Joya de Cibaletta" and the other to the south, and almost opposite El Paso. Inasmuch as nearly all of the California emigrants were obliged to turn southward from Santa Fe and go by the Rio Grande, it occurred to Captain Marcy that if a practical route could be opened from the vicinity of El Paso in a direct course across Texas toward Fort Smith, such a route would shorten the distance to California several hundred miles. Captain Marcy was also told that several parties of emigrants had already reached El Paso from the Texas settlements. So Marcy, being satisfied that he could successfully return by that route, employed the Comanche as guide.

One man was left sick in Santa Fe, and Lieut. Sackett took the place of Lieut. Buford, who was promoted to a command in California. Otherwise there were no changes in Captain Marcy's personnel and corps of assistants.

The expedition moved down the Rio Grande to Donna Ana, a Mexican village of about three hundred people. At this place Captain Marcy learned that the expedition could not travel eastward. And here, too, he employed an additional guide.

But September 1, 1849, the expedition took a course nine degrees north of due east toward a gap in the Organ Range, known as San Augustine Pass. September 2, while traveling under the base of these mountains, the party struck a road from El Paso to some salt lakes. This road was followed for three miles and until Marcy and his command reached a mountain spring, where they camped. The Sacramento Mountains could be seen from this point. After reaching the territory in the vicinity of El Paso, the command took a course nineteen degrees north of east. September 9, they camped at a fine spring at the terminus of the Guadalupe Mountains, and at a point where the perpendicular cliffs were nearly two thousand feet high. This may have been the Delaware Springs. Marcy said that at that time the grizzly bear, big horn or cimarron and black tailed deer were common in this part of Texas.

The expedition struck the Pecos September 16. This stream was followed until the 21st, when Captain Marcy and his command camped and rested for a day. Orders were then given to advance. Since the Comanche guide had only crossed that part of the country but once, he was not sure about water. As a consequence, a scout was detailed ahead. In due time word was brought back that water was found sixteen miles farther to the east. So the expedition moved forward.

The party reached the "Big Spring" from which the city of Big Spring derived its name, October 3, 1849. This spring was then one of the favorite camping places of Indians. The Comanche guide said that he had been to this spring many times, and that in an engagement fought here between the Comanches and Shawnees several years before, his brother was killed. After Captain Marcy established his return route or the "Overland Trail to California," this spring was always a noted camping place for emigrants.

October 6, the command reached the west fork of the Colorado. October 7, Lieut. Harrison was detailed to examine a ravine two miles ahead. By dark he had not returned, so Captain Marcy had the cannon fired. The cannon was again fired very early the next morning. After he did not return, searching parties were sent out. In due time the body of Lieut. Harrison was found. He had been murdered by Indians, scalped and stripped of clothing. Lieut. Sackett was ordered to follow the Indian trail with a detachment, but they were unable to overtake the natives, who had several hours to their advantage.

October 9, Captain Marcy and men reached the Clear Fork of the Brazos, and October 11, passed about ten miles south of the Double Mountains of Stonewall County. These mountains had been visible nearly all day. October 12, the command reached the Double Mountain Fork of the Brazos, which was called Tack-an-ho-no by the Comanches. The party was delayed here until the 17th because of rains.

October 20, while camped on a tributary of the Clear Fork of the Brazos, five mounted Indians were seen in the distance. The party motioned for them to come forward, which they did, after some hesitation. These Indians soon went away, and in a short time several hundred Indian men, women and children were visiting the command. Beaver, a Delaware Indian guide, who had been with the expedition since it left Arkansas, said "The Indians are my friends, the Kickapoos." In this he proved to be correct. These Indians were on their way to the Colorado, where they expected to winter.

It was with this same tribe, the Dove Creek fight was fought in 1865. The chief of the Kickapoos at that time was an old man named Papequana, who said he had long been a friend to the white men. The expedition was also visited by the Comanches, who presented letters of introduction from Major Robert S. Neighbors, Colonel Montgomery and Major Gates. These letters stated the Comanches were at that time at peace with the whites and should be treated kindly.

At that date, it was customary for the Kickapoos to take merchandise from the settlements in the fall, and go to Western Texas to winter and to exchange their goods with the wild tribes of the plains, for horses, furs, etc., which in turn the Kickapoos took back to settlements in the spring and summer of the following year and traded to the whites for more merchandise. By this means the Kickapoos established a direct communication between the citizens of the East and the wild tribes of the West.

The chief of the visiting Comanches was Senaco. After extending to the chief and his followers the usual felicitations and presenting presents, the party moved forward.

October 24, Captain Marcy and his command reached the main stream of the Brazos very near the present city of Newcastle, where each year under the able guidance of Messrs. V.A. (Bill) Ribble, Mann Johnson, Henry Williams, John Crow, J.B. Terrell and others, the "Old Settlers Reunion" meets to celebrate the early history of that section. Captain Marcy was much impressed with the fertile and wild timbered lands along the Brazos at this point. He said:

"Should our government at any future time decide upon establishing a military post as far west of the frontier settlements of Texas as this, I am of the opinion that near this place would be the best that could be selected."

In addition to the natural environment, he stated that such a location was a central point between the various Texas tribes. It is singular to note that about twenty months later Fort Belknap was established at this identical place.

The expedition moved on through the present counties of Young, Jack, Clay, Montague, Cooke, and crossed Red River at Preston in Grayson County. They reached Fort Smith, Arkansas, November 20, 1849. This early trail became known as Marcy's Return Route, or the "California Trail," and thereafter was repeatedly used by emigrants to California.

It will be noted that this expedition was made several years before the settlements of most of the frontier counties. It will also be noted that Captain Marcy followed from the Pecos to the Red River somewhat the same route over which the Chihuahua traders returned, about nine years before; and no doubt Marcy was familiar with that and other expeditions. Concerning the establishment of this route, Captain Marcy said:

"From all I can learn of other routes to California, I am induced to believe that should our government at any future time determine upon making a natural road of any description across the continent, the southern route is evidently worthy of consideration. We found upon none of the northern routes as much water, timber and rich soil. On the other routes there are many more mountains to pass over, and during a part of the year are buried with snow."

**34. W. F. Smith's Route.** - February 9, 1849, W. F. Smith, Second Lieutenant of the Topographical Engineers, received orders to move with his command to locate, if possible, a suitable road for military and commercial purposes, between San Antonio and El Paso. From San Antonio, the command moved to Fredericksburg. Lieut. Smith said the road to the latter place, at that time, was well known, and frequently traveled. From Fredericksburg the expedition partly traveled the "Old Pinto Trail" to the head waters of the south fork of the San Saba. From there the party moved to Live Oak Creek, a tributary of the Pecos, where Fort Lancaster was later established. The Pecos was crossed, either at or near the Horse Head Crossing. Here the Comanches often crossed on their long forays into Old Mexico. The expedition then moved on to El Paso. Scarcity of water, however, caused Lieut. Smith and his men to return by the San Pedro or Devil's River route, which lay farther south.

**35. Francis T. Bryan's Route.** - June 9, 1849, Francis T. Bryan, Brevet. 1st Lieut. of the Topographical Engineers, received orders to also survey a suitable route from San Antonio to El Paso. Lieut. Bryan left San Antonio with thirty men, June 14, 1849, reached Fredericksburg three days later, June 30, crossed Kickapoo Creek and July 2 crossed Dove Creek, where the Dove Creek fight was fought in 1865. July 10, Lieut. Bryan's command crossed the Pecos at the famous Horse Head Crossing between the present Crane and Pecos Counties. It was named that early, and Lieut. Bryan in his report commented about the name. July 18, the

command camped on Delaware Creek, and July 22 camped at a spring at the foot of the Guadalupe Mountains. This, no doubt, was the same spring near which Captain Marcy camped September 9, next following. From there the expedition pushed on toward El Paso, and along their way saw where wells had been dug at various places by parties going to California. When the command struck the Rio Grande Valley, they were surprised to see large orchards, vineyards, corn fields, etc., near Isleta. Lieut. Bryan said that the route traveled presented no great obstacles. This route followed by Lieut. Bryan had been suggested by Major Robert S. Neighbors, Indian agent.

**36. William H. C. Whiting's Route.** - October 1, 1849, Lieut. Wm. H. C. Whiting, of the Topographical Engineers, in obedience to orders, commanded an expedition that left Fort Lincoln on the Rio Seco, in the present county of Medina, to survey a suitable road from there to Fort Washita, in Oklahoma. From Fort Lincoln, his command moved to Fort Martin Scott, near Fredericksburg. This route took the party through the famous Bandera Pass, where Captain Jack Hays had his famous fight a few years previously. From there the command went to Fort Croghan in Burnet County, Fort Gates in Coryell County, Fort Graham in Hill County, Fort Worth in Tarrant County and on to Fort Washita and Fort Smith. To be sure, practically all of these counties were then unorganized. Lieut. Whiting said the route was already well defined.

**37. N. Michler's Route.** - One of the several surveys made during 1849 by the Topographical Engineers of the United States Army, was under the immediate command of Brevet. 2nd Lieut. N. Michler who was ordered to examine the territory between the south branch of Red River and the Rio Pecos. This party left Fort Washita about two days after Captain Marcy's arrival from Santa Fe, and left the Red River November 23. They reached the main fork of the Brazos December 4, 1849. Not unlike Captain Marcy, and the other explorers, Lieut. Michler was much impressed with the rich virgin country adjacent to this historic old stream. The command then advanced to the head waters of the Clear Fork of the Brazos, crossed over to the head waters of the Colorado and December 21, 1849, camped at the famous Big Spring, from which the city of Big Spring derived its name. Two days later the party again took up their march and moved to the Pecos where they crossed at the Horse Head Crossing. From there Lieut. Michler and his command advanced overland to the Concho and San Saba Rivers, and practically followed Lieut. Bryan's route to San Antonio.

**38. Lieut. Col. J. E. Johnson's Route.** - Joseph E. Johnson, who rose to fame during the Confederacy, in 1849 received a letter from Brigadier General Harney, to organize two companies for the purpose of exploring the country between San Antonio and El Paso. He placed Lieut. Bryan in charge of one and assumed command of the other. General

Johnson and his command practically reviewed the route previously surveyed by Lieut. Smith.



Santa Helena Canyon along the Rio Grande, about one hundred miles below Alpine. The high cliffs tower far more than two thousand feet above the river below. Here the shy old eagle, the Mexican lion and black bear still find solitude, high among the cliffs and crags. Boundary surveys were made in thin section as early as 1849. See Sec. 39.

**39. United States and Mexican Boundary Commissions and Surveys.** - The Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, dated February 2, 1849, provided that the boundary line between Mexico and the United States be as follows: Beginning three leagues from land in the Gulf of Mexico opposite the mouth of the Rio Grande; thence up the middle of that river following the deepest channel to where it strikes the southern boundary of New Mexico. The

Gadsden Treaty of Mexico City, dated December 30, 1853, did not materially change the boundary between Texas and Mexico. In these treaties, it was provided that commissioners be appointed by the two powers for the purpose of surveying the boundary line.

These surveys began in 1849 and continued for many years to come. The early reports are somewhat conflicting, and it seems some of the different commissioners appointed by the United States were hostile toward each other.

According to the report of W. H. Emory, under the first treaty, Robert B. Campbell was United States Commissioner and W. H. Emory, chief astronomer and surveyor. Then subsequently W. H. Emory became commissioner for the United States. John Russell Bartlett was appointed commissioner in 1850. The Bartlett commission went from New York to Indianola, Texas, by water, and from there to San Antonio and Fredericksburg and to the famous Horse Head Crossing. From the Horse Head Crossing, the party went by the way of Delaware Creek and Delaware Springs at the foot of Guadalupe Mountains. From these springs they moved on to El Paso where they arrived November 13, 1850. Bartlett in his report speaks of the United States being represented at different times by John B. Miller, Capt. E. L. F. Hardcastle, Lieut. A. Whipple, etc.

But regardless of the hostile attitude of the representatives for a number of years they saw extensive service at a very early date in the vicinity of El Paso, Isleta, San Elizario, Fort Leaton and elsewhere along the Rio Grande. They frequently visited the several military posts. Like the several other expeditions, they helped to blaze the early trails of Western Texas, and often worked in conjunction with similar commissions appointed by Mexico.

**40. United States and Texas Boundary Commissions -** Before 1850, Texas claimed a part of the territory of New Mexico, Oklahoma and farther north. But the boundary line between Texas and adjoining states, had never been distinctly defined. In 1850, the United States, already indebted to the state of Texas for property acquired after annexation, and for damages in other ways, passed an act, among other things providing, that if the state of Texas relinquish her claim to all territory to the north and west of her present boundaries, and also relinquish all other claims, the United States would pay Texas the sum of ten million dollars. November 25, 1850, the state of Texas accepted the offer.

June 5, 1858, the United States appropriated eighty thousand dollars to defray the expenses of making necessary surveys, and the appointment of a commission to work jointly with a similar commission from Texas.

In 1857, a commission under the command of Lieut. Col. Joseph E. Johnson surveyed the southern boundary line of Kansas. During the same year, Lieut. Col. Johnson and his command also surveyed much of the boundary of Northwestern Texas.

In 1859, the hundredth meridian, which marks the eastern boundary of the Texas Panhandle, was surveyed by a commission under A. H. Jones and H. M. C. Brown. The same year Daniel D. Major, by making astronomical observations, located the point where the hundred meridian touches Red River. In 1860, J. H. Clark headed a surveying expedition that made extensive surveys in locating the boundary. Likewise, similar expeditions, from time to time, even up to the present, have been sent into all parts of the territory, ceded by Texas to the United States, for the purpose of surveying the boundaries of the several states. Only recently, a corrected survey of the one hundredth meridian gave Texas thousands of acres formerly under the jurisdiction of Oklahoma.

Such expeditions are interesting, for they show the extent of overland journeys made by these early surveying parties, they show the knowledge of the boundary lines at that time, and they show how Texas acquired its present western and northwestern boundaries.

**41. Survey of Red River in 1852 by R. B. Marcy and Party.** - Before 1852, several attempts had been made by the United States to explore the headwaters of Red River, but all such attempts had failed.

As a consequence, Captain R. B. Marcy, March 5, 1852, received orders to proceed without delay to make an examination of the Red River and the country bordering its banks. He was instructed to begin at the mouth of Cache Creek, and end with the river's source.

His command, which included Captain Geo. B. McClellan, received provisions at Fort Smith, Arkansas, and Preston, Texas. The supply train went by way of Fort Arbuckle and then to the mouth of Cache Creek. But Captain Marcy, himself, advanced to Fort Belknap where his company was stationed at the time.

He reached Fort Belknap April 30, 1852. May 2, Marcy and his men left this post for the mouth of Cache Creek, which was about eight miles above the mouth of the Big Washita.

May 12, Captain Marcy accompanied by two Indians swam the Red River, which was on a rise. He then proceeded about twenty miles toward Fort Arbuckle before he met the train of supplies coming from Fort Smith. The supply wagon had been delayed because of heavy spring rains. The party reached Cache Creek, however, May 13, but were again delayed until May 16, on account of high water.

Marcy and men then followed the ridge between Cache Creek and Red River, as they moved forward on their long journey. The Wichita Mountains were soon visible. Not unlike other similar expeditions made by the topographical engineers, a corps of scientists were along for the purpose of studying birds, animals, plants, minerals, etc. Many birds and animals common today were closely studied, and blackberries, raspberries, gooseberries, plums, grapes, etc., growing wild, were found in great numbers. Delaware Indians were also along as usual to serve as guides and interpreters for the expedition.

May 29, Captain McMillian traced the hundredth meridian to Red River, and wrote an inscription on a cottonwood tree fifty feet from the water. June 9, Captain Marcy and his men arrived on the banks of a fine stream, which they called "Sweetwater Creek," because of its excellent water. This stream, which is in Wheeler County, bears the same name today.

The expedition reached the head of the northern branch of Red River June 16. The astronomers took the latitude and longitude of the place and calculated that the expedition at that point was only about twenty-five miles from the Canadian River. Captain Marcy made a trip over to the Canadians, to ascertain the correctness of the calculation, and to balance and compare the surveys of this expedition with that of 1849. Actual measurements proved the astronomers were correct. The Indians were perplexed at these calculations. As a consequence, they frequently requested the astronomers to figure out where the various wild Indian tribes were located at that time.

After exploring the headwaters of both the north and south branch of Red River, July 4, 1852, the expedition started homeward. When the party reached Fort Arbuckle, all were astonished to learn that a Keechi Indian had reported the members of the entire command had been murdered. This false report was scattered far and wide along the frontier, and caused some of the early settlers to move eastward.

**42. Proposed Route for Pacific Railway.** - A. B. Gray was in command of an expedition which left San Antonio January 1, 1854, with instruction to survey a suitable route for the Southern Pacific Railroad, somewhere near the thirty-second parallel. The expedition went by Fredericksburg, Fort Mason and Fort Chadbourne. Here the latitude and longitude were figured. The astronomers estimated that Fort Chadbourne was four hundred and seven miles from Shreveport and three hundred and seventy-six miles from El Paso. From Fort Chadbourne, the surveying party went to the famous Big Spring. From there the expedition advanced to Mustang Springs and El Paso.

February 12, 1854, Captain John Pope, in obedience to orders left Donna Ana, in charge of an expedition to make a survey of a suitable route for the Pacific Railroad along or somewhere near the thirty-second parallel. He followed the general course of Captain Marcy's return route, and like others came by the Big Spring. The party went from there to Fort Belknap. From Fort Belknap, Captain Pope and his party practically followed Marcy's return route to Preston, in Grayson County. About the same time these expeditions were made through Texas, there were others made farther north. But the actual building of transcontinental lines was several years delayed, because of the outbreak of the Civil War.

Ref: Those previously given; Report of Secretary of War 1849-50; Exploration of Red River in 1852 by R. B. Marcy assisted by Capt. G. E. McClellan as reported in Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 54, 32 con. 2nd Ses, 1853; Thirty Years of Army Life on the Border by R. B. Marcy (1866); U.S. Explorations and Surveys 1853-56, 13 vols.; Report of W. H. Emory in Sen Ex Doc 108, 34th Congress, 1st Ses. 1857; U.S. Geological Sur. Bulletin No. 194, 1902; Sur. of a Route for S. P. R. R. by A. B. Gray; Explorations in Tex. by J. R. Bartlett, 1854, etc.

### **PART III**

#### **THE FRONTIER FROM ANNEXATION UNTIL THE CESSATION OF INDIAN HOSTILITIES**

#### **CHAPTER II**

##### **FEDERAL FORTS, POSTS AND STATIONS**

**43. San Antonio.** - San Antonio has been a military stronghold for more than two hundred years. The Fort of San Antonio De Valero was built by the Spanish in 1714 on San Pedro Creek, about three-quarters of a mile from the Bexar County Courthouse. From there the post was moved to the Alamo a few years later. From time to time, since, numerous military camps have been established in the vicinity of San Antonio, which is today and has always been the center of activity in this section. When Texas became a republic, soldiers were almost always kept in and near the city.

As a precaution against a conflict with Mexico, October 28, 1845, the United States established a military post at San Antonio. The garrison was temporarily withdrawn the 10th of February, 1852, but was re-garrisoned later. The post at San Antonio was relinquished by the United States to the Confederacy February 16, 1861, but again passed under the control of the Federal government subsequently to the Civil War. The headquarters of the 8th Military District previously to that time, was located at San Antonio, with the exception of a few brief intervals. This city has been the headquarters of the military department of Texas most of the time since the Civil War.

**44. Fort Brown.** - This fort, like San Antonio, numbered among first camps of Federal forces in Texas. It is, to be sure, not in the territory covered by the present work. But it was one of a cordon of posts established along the Rio Grande from Brownsville to El Paso, for the purpose of protecting the border, and was equally a part of the series of military posts that covered the frontier. The original site of Fort Brown was about one mile below the present location. It was under the command of General Zachary Taylor, who placed a battery of four eighteen-pounders in a position to command Matamoras. Supplies at first were obtained from San Antonio, St. Louis and New Orleans.

The post was first called Camp Taylor and garrisoned by a detachment of the Seventh Infantry and Third Artillery, under the command of Major Jacob Brown.

May 3, 1846, while General Taylor was marching with a large part of his command to Point Isabel to protect stores and supplies there, the Mexicans under the command of Arista stormed the fort, then under the command of Major Brown, and the bombardment was continued for about thirty-six hours. A summons, demanding the surrender of the post was sent to Major Brown and his command. But the summons was ignored. Then May 6, the bombardment was again resumed. General Taylor heard the firing, and immediately etched with two thousand men to the relief of the cantonment. His command encountered the Mexicans May 8 at Palo Alto, before the fort was reached, and won a complete victory. General Taylor then hurried to the relief of the post, but was again intercepted by the enemy on the 9th at Resaca de la Palma. In this battle the Mexicans were again defeated. Camp Taylor by this time had been stormed more than one hundred and sixty hours. Major Brown, in charge of the post during this bombardment, was badly wounded and died on the 9th. May 17, following, the name of the post was changed from Camp Taylor to Fort Brown, in honor of Major Jacob Brown, who bravely fell in defense of this fort. From then to the beginning of the Civil War, excepting for short intervals, from one to four companies were kept at Fort Brown, and during this period this cantonment was the most southern of all United States army posts.

The cantonment was abandoned March 20, 1861, by order of Major General D. E. Twiggs. The post was again occupied, however, by Federal forces in the summer of 1865. In the spring of 1867, the camp was almost demolished by a severe storm. Since its establishment, not unlike the post at San Antonio, Fort Brown has been occupied almost continuously up to the present time.

**45. Fort Bliss.** - The post of El Paso was first occupied by the United States troops at the close of the Mexican War. Major Benjamin L. Beall, in command of three companies of the First Dragoons, established this cantonment February

11, 1848. The command, however, was soon moved away. September 14, 1849, the post of El Paso was re-established by Companies A, B, C, D and E of the Third United States Infantry, under the command of Brevet Major Jefferson Van Horn; but was again abandoned about September 1, 1851, and Fort Fillmore, New Mexico established. January 11, 1854, Companies B, E and K of the Eighth United States Infantry under Brevet Colonel E. B. Alexander, occupied a position about one mile below El Paso (Franklin). March 8, 1854, the name of the post was changed to Fort Bliss, in honor of Brevet Major William W. Bliss, who died August 5, 1853. Troops were withdrawn March 31, 1861, because of the Civil War. But the post was reoccupied by Federal forces October 15, 1865. The name of this post was changed to Camp Concordia March 11, 1868, and again to Fort Bliss March 23, 1869. January 17, 1877, the post was abandoned and the troops withdrawn. January 1, 1878, Fort Bliss was reoccupied. An act of Congress passed February 4, 1879, appropriated \$40,000 to purchase a suitable site to erect a more permanent cantonment, at El Paso.

**46. Ringgold Barracks.** - Camp Ringgold was established October 26, 1848, by a detachment of soldiers from the First United States Infantry under the command of Capt. J. H. La Motte. The post was located near Rio Grande City, and named for Major David Ringgold, who was killed May 8, 1846, on the battlefield of Palo Alto. The name was changed to Ringgold Barracks July 16, 1849. And afterwards it was called Fort Ringgold. The post was abandoned March 3, 1859, and troops transferred to Camp Hudson; but was again reoccupied December 29, 1859. Troops were withdrawn in 1861, because of the conflict between the states, and the camp was again regarrisoned in 1867. Ringgold Barracks has been maintained as a military post, excepting for short intervals up until the present time.

**47. Fort Martin Scott.** - This post was named for Lieut. Col. Martin Scott, who was killed in action September 8, 1847, in the battle of Molino del Rey in Mexico. It was established in January of 1849 about two miles from Fredericksburg on the old San Antonio and Fredericksburg road. Fort Martin Scott was first occupied by Company K of the 8th United States Infantry in 1849 and 1850, and was headquarters for Companies C, E, G and K in 1851. Companies G, I and K in 1852, and Company K in 1853. It was first called Camp Martin Scott, but the name changed to Fort Martin Scott by an order dated December 28, 1849. When the site of this camp was first selected, it was then on the extreme outer edge of the settlements, and located as an advanced guard to civilization.

In 1849, the United States established a cordon of posts, namely: Fort Worth, Fort Graham, Fort Gates, Fort Croghan, Fort Martin Scott, Fort Lincoln, Fort Inge, Fort McIntosh and Fort Duncan, which extended from the Red River to the Rio Grande. These posts were located just after the Mexican

War, and were primarily for the purpose of offering protection to early settlements. Fort Martin Scott was one of the first of this cordon of posts to be established. But since a second cordon of army camps extending from the Red River to the Rio Grande was established, much farther west in 1851 and 1852, Fort Martin Scott was soon abandoned. Troops were withdrawn from this post December 29, 1853.

**48. Fort McIntosh.** - Fort McIntosh served a two-fold purpose. It was one of a series of posts extending from Brownsville to El Paso, and likewise belonged to a cordon of posts extending from the Red River to the Rio Grande. This post was established on the Rio Grande, near Laredo, March 3, 1849, and called Camp Crawford until January 7, 1850, when the name was changed to Fort McIntosh, in honor of Col. J. S. McIntosh. It was abandoned in 1858 and the stores moved to Fort Brown. Fort McIntosh was later occupied by two companies of the First Infantry but was again abandoned March 12, 1861, because of the outbreak of the Civil War. This Post was regarrisoned in 1865 by a company of the Second Texas Cavalry.

**49. Fort Inge.** - Fort Inge was the second of the first series of posts established between the Red River and Rio Grande. It was located on the Leona, a tributary of the Frio, at an old camp-site of Captain Warefield and his company of Texas Rangers. This cantonment was located about three miles south of Uvalde, and served as a stopping terminal along the lower San Antonio and El Paso road. It was established March 13, 1849, and named in honor of Lieut. Z. M. Inge, who was killed May 9 in the battle of Resaca de la Palma. Troops were withdrawn from Fort Inge during the Civil War. But the post was reoccupied after the war, and permanently abandoned February 28, 1869.

**50. Fort Croghan.** - Fort Croghan, the fourth of a series of posts, established in 1849, was located on Hamilton Creek about fourteen miles above its confluence with the Colorado, and situated very near the present town of Burnet. The post was established March 18, 1849, and named in honor of Col. Geo. Croghan, who died January 8, 1849. Because of the establishment in 1851 and 1852 of a second series of posts, Fort Croghan was abandoned in December, 1852.

In 1850 and 1851, Fort Croghan was under the command of Brevet Major Geo. H. Blake, who was in command of a company of the Second Dragoons. In 1851, Brevet Major Black was in charge of the post, and commanded two companies of the Eighth Infantry. In 1852, one company of the Second Dragoons were stationed at Fort Croghan and were commanded by Capt. and Brevet Major H. H. Sibley, whose rose to the rank of a general during the Confederacy.

**51. Fort Duncan.** - This post was a fifth of the series established in 1849, and located near Eagle Pass on the Rio Grande. It was established March 27, 1849. Troops were

withdrawn June 18, 1859, and transferred to Camp Verde. But the post was regarrisoned March 18, 1860, and again abandoned March 20, 1861, because of the conflict between the North and South. The post was reoccupied after the Civil War. In 1870, there were eighty Seminole Indians attached to the fort.

**52. Fort Graham.** - Fort Graham was established one mile east of the Brazos in Hill County during March or April in 1849. Various records on file in Washington materially differ concerning the date of its establishment. Certain records state that this post came into existence March 27, and another April 17. Nevertheless this fort was located at the old Jose Maria Indian village, about one hundred and forty miles north of Austin, and about eighteen miles west of Hillsboro. It was first called Camp Graham in honor of Lieut. Col. W. M. Graham, who was killed in the battle of Molino del Rey in Mexico September 8, 1847. Fort Graham was occupied in 1849, 1850 and 1851 by Company H of the Eighth United States Infantry. And not unlike several other forts established in 1849, was abandoned October 6, 1853, because of the establishment in 1851 and 1852 of a second cordon of posts farther west.

Fort Graham was commanded in 1849 by Brevet Lieut. Col. Bomford, in 1851 by Brevet Major H. H. Sibley, and in 1852 by Capt. and Brevet Lieut. Col. W. J. Hardee.

**53. Fort Worth.** - Fort Worth was established June 6, 1849, by Company F of the Second United States Dragoons, consisting of forty-two men under the command of Brevet Major Ripley A. Arnold. This new post was named Camp Worth, October 17, 1849, in honor of Brevet Brigadier General William J. Worth, colonel of the Eighth Infantry, who died in San Antonio May 7, 1849. November 14, 1849, the name of the new post was changed to Fort Worth.

Dr. J. M. Standefer was employed to act as assistant surgeon since there were no medical officers present with the command. October 6, 1849, the garrison was increased by the arrival of Company F of the Eighth United States Infantry, consisting of thirty-nine men and two officers. These officers were Capt. Robert P. Maclay, who became a Confederate Brigadier General during the Civil War, and Second Lieut. John Bold, who died May 25, 1852. The first lieutenant of the company at that time was James Longstreet, who was in the North on detached service. Longstreet became renowned as a Confederate general during the Civil War.

December 25, 1849, Second Lieut. Samuel Starr of the Second Dragoons arrived at the post and remained until the following year. Lieut. W. P. Street was promoted and assigned to Company F of the Eighth Infantry to fill the vacancy created by the promotion of Lieut. James Longstreet.

These troops constituted the garrison of Fort Worth until April 6, 1851, when Company F of the Eighth Infantry was moved to Fort Gates. June 17 following, Company F of the Second Dragoons was retired by Companies F and H of the Eighth Infantry. Fort Worth was then placed in command of Capt. James V. Bomford, who later became a brigadier general because of gallant service during the Civil War. January 8, 1852, Company F of the Second Dragoons returned to Fort Worth and relieved the infantry. This company constituted the sole garrison of the post until August 13, 1852, when Company B of the Second Dragoons consisting of one officer and sixty-four men arrived at the post. There were no other changes in the command until the cantonment was abandoned.

Fort Worth occupied a strategic position on the Trinity, near the present Tarrant County courthouse, and near the confluence of two of the major prongs of the Trinity. When the fort was visited by Lieut. W. H. C. Whiting in 1849, he recommended that a new post be established in the territory above Fort Worth, because one small garrison was unable to protect one hundred and twenty miles of frontier, the distance to Fort Washita. The old fort was abandoned September 17, 1853, because of a second cordon of posts established farther west.

**54. Fort Lincoln.** - Fort Lincoln was established July 7, 1849, fifty miles west of San Antonio, on the Rio Seco, and named in honor of Brevet Capt. George Lincoln, who was killed in action February 23, 1847, in the battle of Buena Vista, Mexico. Fort Lincoln was occupied in 1849 by two companies of the Second Dragoons, under the command of Brevet Major Longstreet. In 1851 the post was garrisoned by one company of the Second Dragoons and one company of the First Infantry under Captain Newton.

**55. San Elizario.** - San Elizario was established September 15, 1849, by Companies I and K of the Third United States Infantry on the Rio Grande near an old Mexican and Spanish town by the same name about twenty miles below El Paso. The post was abandoned September, 1851.

**56. Fort Gates.** - Fort Gates was first called Camp Gates, and established October 26, 1849, on the Leon River in Coryell County, a few miles below Gatesville. The camp was occupied by Companies D and I of the Eighth United States Infantry in 1849 and 1850, and Companies I, D, F and H in 1851. This cantonment was named in honor of Brevet Major C. R. Gates of New York, who won distinction for gallant service during the Mexican War, and who died June 28, 1849. Because of a second cordon of posts established farther west, Fort Gates was abandoned in March, 1852. It was the last of the first series to be established, and the first to be abandoned.

**57. Fort Merrill.** - Fort Merrill was situated on the south bank of the Nueces at the crossing of the old San Antonio and Corpus Christi road. It was established Feb. 26, 1850, and named in honor of Capt. Moses E. Merrill, who was killed September 8, 1847, in the battle of Molino del Rey in Mexico. The camp was abandoned December 1, 1855, but was a camp site for soldiers up until a later period.

**58. Fort Belknap.** - Camp Belknap was established June 24, 1851, immediately south of the present city of Newcastle and was the first of the second series or cordon of posts established in 1851, in advance of the white settlements. Today in the southern edge of Newcastle, there still remains a gigantic well, which marks the first location of Fort Belknap. This well was dug to a considerable depth, but the soldiers were unable to find sufficient water to supply the camp. As a consequence, November 1, 1851, the post was moved about two and one-half miles farther south, to a more suitable location, and near a splendid supply of water. Fort Belknap was inspected September 3, 1853, by Brevet Lieut. Col. W. G. Freeman, assistant adjutant general. At that time he reported that excellent springs were within a few hundred yards of the post. A large well was also dug at the new camp-site and a splendid supply of water found. The new location of Fort Belknap was on the old California Trail, established by R. B. Marcy in 1849.

Fort Belknap was established under the command of Brigadier General Williams G. Belknap, lieutenant colonel of the Fifth United States Infantry, for whom the post was named. General Belknap was a citizen of New York, won renown in fighting the Florida Indians, and in the battles of Palo Alto, Resaca de la Palma and Buena Vista, during the Mexican War. He died November 10, 1851. The post was first garrisoned by a detachment of Companies G and I of the Fifth United States Infantry, but was augmented by detachments of other companies of the Fifth Infantry, under the command of Capt. Carter L. Stevenson of Virginia, who became a brigadier general in the Confederate army.

In many respects Fort Belknap was one of the most important of all the early United States Army posts established in Texas. Its importance was greatly increased because the two Texas Indian reservations were surveyed and located on opposite sides of this post in 1854, and occupied early in 1855. Not only in the present work, but also in the early governmental records at Washington, we find this post frequently mentioned. It held an advantageous position near the Old California Trail, or Marcy's Return Route. The post was also an important stopping place on the Old Butterfield Stage Line, which, previous to the Civil War, carried both passengers and mail from St. Louis to San Francisco and vice versa.

Many important events happened at and near this fort. It was on the streets of Fort Belknap that somebody shot

Major Robert S. Neighbors, who, for several years, had been the superintendent of Indian affairs in Texas.

Before the conflict between the North and South, Fort Belknap and Camp Cooper were the most northern of all Texas posts.

During the Civil War, this early army camp was occupied by a detachment of the frontier regiment, which was stationed in a series of camps extending from the Red River to the Rio Grande, to protect the exposed frontier settlements.

Fort Belknap was regarrisoned in May, 1867, by Company F of the Sixth United States Infantry. But after the stars and stripes were raised at Fort Griffin, and during the night of August 30, 1867, Fort Belknap was, perhaps, forever abandoned.

The following troops saw service at Fort Belknap: Ten companies of the Tenth Infantry under the command of Col. G. Loomis in 1851; in 1852, five companies of the Fifth Infantry under the command of Col. G. Loomis; in 1854, three companies of the Second Dragoons, Eighty-seventh Infantry; in 1855-56-57, from two to four companies of the First and Seventh Infantry under the command of Capt. and Brevet Major G. R. Paul; in 1858, one company of the First Cavalry and First Infantry under the command of Capt. R. W. Johnston, and in 1867, one company of the Sixth Cavalry under the command of First Lieut. G. Schreyer.

**59. Fort Mason.** - This post, like Camp Cooper, can justly claim the distinction of being the headquarters of General Robert E. Lee, a distinction unjustly claimed for many of the early military posts. General Albert Sidney Johnston was also stationed at Fort Mason, which was established July 6, 1851, near the present city of Mason on the right bank of Comanche Creek, a tributary of the Llano River. This place was named for Brigadier General Richard B. Mason of the First Dragoons, who died July 25, 1850. Fort Mason, like Fort Belknap, belonged to the second cordon of posts established in 1851-52. It was first occupied by Companies A and B the Second Dragoons under the command of Brevet Major H. W. Merrill. Company A was transferred from Fort Croghan and Company E from Fort Martin Scott. The post was abandoned January 23, 1854, and reoccupied March 8, 1855 by Company A of the First Dragoons.

Col. Albert Sidney Johnston, in command of Company B, C, D, G, H and I of the Second Cavalry reached Fort Mason January 19, 1856.

Fort Mason was abandoned February 6, 1859, and again reoccupied September 4 of the same year. And because of the Civil War, Federal troops were withdrawn March 29, 1861. The post was again reoccupied December 4, 1866.

But was finally abandoned March 23, 1869, no doubt, because Fort Concho had been established farther west.

The following troops saw service at Fort Mason: In 1851 two companies of the Second Dragoons under the command of Brevet Major Merrill; in 1852, two companies of the Second Dragoons under the command of Capt. and Brevet Col. C. A. May; in 1856, six companies of the Second Cavalry under the command of Major G. H. Thomas; in 1857, two companies of the Second Cavalry under the command of Major G. H. Thomas; in 1858, detachment of the First Infantry, under the command of Second Lieut. W. E. Burnett; in 1867, one company of the Fourth Cavalry under the command of Capt. J. A. Thompson; in 1868, four companies of the Fourth Cavalry and Thirty-fifth Infantry.

**60. Fort Phantom Hill.** - Fort Phantom Hill or the "Post on Clear Fork of the Brazos River," was located on the Clear Fork about seventy-five miles southwest of Fort Belknap, and about fifteen miles east of the present city of Anson. Late in the year of 1851 Major J. J. Abercrombie, who became a brigadier general during the Civil War, received instructions to proceed in command of Companies B, C, E, G and K of the Fifth Infantry, to a suitable point about eighty miles southwest of Fort Belknap, to establish a post which, according to official returns, became known as the "Post on the Clear Fork of the Brazos."

Companies C and G of the Fifth Infantry arrived at this post November 14, 1851, and Companies B, E and K arrived two days later. Major Abercrombie's company was relieved of the command of the post April 27, 1852, by Col. Carlos A. Waite. August 24, 1853, four companies were withdrawn and transferred to Ringgold Barracks on the Rio Grande. September 24, 1853, the remaining companies were reinforced by the arrival of Company I of the Second Dragoons under the command of Brevet Major Henry Sibley, who became a Confederate brigadier general during the Civil War. These troops formed the garrison until April 6, 1854, when reveille sounded for the last time.

Since this post was abandoned in 1854, and before the surrounding counties were settled, many theories have been advanced concerning old Fort Phantom Hill. One of these theories relates to the old chimneys which stood so long after it was abandoned.

It has been reported that the post was abandoned at the outbreak of the Civil War, and Federal soldiers burned the buildings previously to their departure for the North. Needless to say, this was impossible, for the post had been abandoned more than six years before.

It has also been reported that General Robert E. Lee, at one time, was in command of this post. This report is also untrue. Robert E. Lee, of course, saw service during the Mexican

War and passed through Texas at the time. But it was not until 1856, two years after this post was abandoned, when he was assigned to a command in Texas. The official records on file in the War Department, which include his monthly reports, and which were closely checked by the author, show that Robert E. Lee was not in Texas at any time during the existence of Fort Phantom Hill. This is further shown by the several able works relating to the life of Gen. Robert E. Lee and by a report of the post made by Mrs. Emma Johnson Elkins who, with her parents, moved to Fort Phantom Hill in 1852, and lived there until the post was abandoned two years later. According to Mrs. Elkins' report, which was printed and published in Hunter's Magazine in the issue of May, 1911, we are given the same information concerning Robert E. Lee's being at this post, as is disclosed by the records on file in Washington. Mrs. Elkins said, "It has been alleged, and many times believed that at one time Col. Robert E. Lee commanded Fort Phantom Hill. Some even to this day insist that he did. Colonel Lee never commanded at that post; of this, I am quite certain."

The records in Washington disclose that this post has nearly always been mentioned as the "Post on the Clear Fork of the Brazos." In a few instances, however, it was called Fort Phantom Hill. But, in the above report Mrs. Elkins further said, "I have read different statements as to how this post received its singular name, but all of these statements were erroneous. Different names were suggested, but all disapproved when it was finally settled upon around a campfire one bright moonlight night.

"A group of officers and party of men were in camp a short distance from the new post, when one of the parties, seeing a tall white figure on the hill (probably an Indian with a white blanket around him), exclaimed, 'A ghost,' another said, 'A phantom on the hill.' This, said one of the officers, suggests a name; we will call the hill Phantom Hill. This name was unanimously adopted." But it does not appear that this title ever received official recognition. Nevertheless, in Texas, the Post has been almost universally called Fort Phantom Hill.

Ref: Author obtained data for this chapter from dusty old files in War Department, office Com. of Ind. Affairs, Washington, D.C.; Repts. of Sec. of War And Com. of Ind. Affairs, 1849-75; U.S. Ex. Doc.; Personal Inspec. of ruins of old posts, interviewing of surviving old settlers, and from the following Government bulletins, some of which were printed, and others not, and found in the files of the War Dept. and Congressional Library: Rept. of Inspec. of 8th Military Dept, (1853); Description of Military Posts and Stations of the U. S., compiled by Gen. E. B. Marcy, (1872); Description of Military Posts, etc., compiled in Surgeon-General's office, (1875); a Dictionary of the U.S. Army from beginning to Jan., 1853, by C. K. Gardner, (1860); Outline and Description of U.S. Military Posts and

Sta., 1871-72 - Quartermaster-General's office, Washington, D. C; Rept. on Barracks and Hospitals with Description of Military Posts, by J.S. Billings, (1870); and other bulletins in the War Dept. All material obtained from original sources.

### **PART III**

#### **THE FRONTIER FROM ANNEXATION UNTIL THE CESSATION OF INDIAN HOSTILITIES**

#### **CHAPTER III**

##### **FORTS, POSTS AND STATIONS (Continued)**

**61. Fort Terrett.** - February 5, 1852, Lieut. Col. Henry Bainbridge, in command of Companies A, H, I and K of the First Infantry, established Fort Terrett approximately one hundred and fifty miles northwest of San Antonio, and about two hundred yards southeast of the head springs of the North Fork of the Llano. This camp was called "Post on the Llano River" until October 6, 1852, when the name was changed to Fort Terrett, no doubt in honor of Lieut. John C. Terrett of the First Infantry, who was killed September 21, 1846, in the battle of Monterey, Mexico. The post was abandoned January 16, 1854, and the troops transferred to San Antonio.

**62. Fort McKavitt.** - This army post was established March 14, 1852, on the San Saba River about two miles from its source. The post was located near the west line of Menard County. It was first garrisoned by Companies B, D, E, F and H of the Eighth United States Infantry and called Camp McKavitt, in honor of Capt. Henry McKavitt, who was killed September 21, 1846, in the battle of Monterey in Mexico. The altitude of this post was reported to be 2,060 feet, and water partly supplied by a spring. The camp was abandoned by order of General David Twiggs, at the beginning of the Civil War. But it was reoccupied April 1, 1868. In March of 1869, Brigadier General R. S. MacKenzie, colonel of the Forty-first United States Infantry, was in command of Fort McKavitt, and stated that the San Saba valley was a rich garden ready to be planted.

**63. Fort Clark.** - Fort Clark was established June 15, 1852, near the present town of Brackettville, and adjacent to the Los Moras Springs. The first troops were under the command of Major Joseph H. LaMotte. The post was named in honor of Major John B. Clark, who died August 23, 1847. The camp was abandoned March 19, 1861, because of the Civil War, by order of General David E. Twiggs, then in charge of the department in Texas. It was regarrisoned, however, December 12, 1866, by the arrival of Company C of the Fourth Cavalry, in command of Capt. J. E. Willcox. In March, 1868, from Fort Clark General Mackenzie and his command went to Fort McKavitt. This post has been visited by many important army officers. Because of its splendid supply of water, healthful location and strategic position,

Fort Clark is one of the very few of the early posts still in existence.

**64. Fort Chadbourne.** - Fort Chadbourne was first called Camp Chadbourne, and named for Lieut. Theodore Chadbourne, who was killed in the battle of Resaca de la Palma, May 9, 1846.

Fort Chadbourne was located on a tributary of the Colorado River, named Oak Creek. The Indians called this stream Tan-tar-se-o-ab-keep-hoo-mough, meaning Mesquite Creek. The post was located in the northeastern part of the present county of Coke, and established October 28, 1852, by Companies A and K of the Eighth United States Infantry. It was the last of the second series of camps established in 1851-52 to supplant the cordon of army camps established in 1849. There were however, a number of other posts established on the West Texas frontier prior to the outbreak of the Civil War, and after the establishment of Fort Chadbourne.

According to governmental records in Washington, a great peace conference was held at Fort Chadbourne with the Indians in 1854. June 9 of the same year, a terrible hail storm struck the cantonment. Hail stones drifted eight feet deep in the beds of creeks and twenty wagon loads were conserved to be used at the camp. These hail storms continued for two weeks, and in the autumn of the same year, the grasshoppers came from the northeast for three or four days in such great numbers, they resembled a severe snow storm.

Before the Civil War, there was an unwritten law in the army to the effect that neither army officers nor privates became real soldiers until they saw service in the far West on the Indian frontier. It is safe to presume that the enlisted men at Fort Chadbourne at that time, due to these unusual events, were fully initiated and became real veterans.

**65. Fort Davis.** - This army camp was established October 7, 1854, on Lincoln Creek near the present county seat of Davis County. The post was four hundred and seventy-five miles northwest of San Antonio, and two hundred and twenty miles east of El Paso. It was located on the old San Antonio and El Paso road established in 1849, and its establishment was primarily for the purpose of protecting our people traveling to and from the West. The camp was first occupied by Companies A, C, D, F, G and H of the Eighth United States Cavalry, under the command of Lieut. Col. Washington Seawell. It will be noted that Fort Davis, like some of the other posts established so far from the settlements, was garrisoned with a larger number of soldiers. This post was first called "Painted Camp on the Limpia" and "Camp on the Limpia." But October 23, 1854, the name was changed to Fort Davis, in honor of Jefferson Davis, who was then ably serving as Secretary of War.

By order of Gen. D. E. Twiggs, in command of the Department of Texas, the post was abandoned April 13, 1861, because of the outbreak of the Civil War. But was reoccupied July 1, 1867, by Troops C, F, H and I of the Ninth United States Cavalry, under the command of Brevet Maj. Gen. Wesley Merrill. Fort Davis was abandoned as a United States military post July 3, 1891.

Lieut. Col. W. Seawell, Lieut. Col. and Brevet Major General W. Merrill, Col. Edward Hatch, Lieut. Col. W. R. Shatter, Col. G. L. Andrews, Major Z. R. Bliss, saw service at this post during the period between 1854 and 1875.

**66. Fort Hudson.** - This post was established in 1854, at the second crossing of the San Pedro or Devil's River in Val Verde County. It was first called "Camp on the San Pedro" and the name later changed to Camp and Fort Hudson. Its establishment was primarily for the purpose of protecting the overland transportation to and from El Paso and other western points. By order of General David E. Twiggs, it was abandoned March 17, 1861, and the troops withdrawn because of the secession of the Southern States. We find no records of this fort being regarrisoned after the Civil War.

**67. Fort Lancaster.** - About one and one-half miles above the confluence of Live Oak Creek with the Pecos River in Crockett County, we find the ruins of old Fort Lancaster. It was established August 20, 1854, and called Camp Lancaster. The name was changed to Fort Lancaster Aug. 21, 1856. Companies H and K of the First Infantry were the first to occupy this post, which was one of the old forts along the lower San Antonio and El Paso road, and established to protect the travelers between those two points. By order of General David E. Twiggs, the post was abandoned March 19, 1861, because of the beginning of the Civil War.

The following troops saw service at Fort Lancaster: In 1854, one company of the First Infantry, under Capt. B. H. Arthur; in 1855, two companies of the First Infantry under Capt. S. D. Carpenter; in 1856, two companies of the First Infantry under Capt. R. S. Granger; in 1857, two companies of the First Infantry under Capt. R. S. Granger; in 1858, two companies of the First Infantry under Capt. S. D. Carpenter.

**68. Camp Cooper.** - This camp, like Fort Belknap, Fort Griffin and other cantonments, ranks among the most interesting of the several frontier posts. Camp Cooper was located in the territory, now known as Throckmorton County and adjacent to the upper Indian Reservation, which was occupied by the restless Comanches. Camp Cooper was on the Clear Fork of the Brazos, about seven miles above the present historic town of Fort Griffin. Companies A, F and H of the Fifth Infantry left Fort Washita July 9, 1851, under the command of Capt. John A. Whitall, and reached Fort Belknap, then called Camp Belknap, July 23, 1851. After

remaining two days these troops advanced to a camp near the site of Camp Cooper, where they arrived July 29, 1851. This place at that time was occupied by a tribe of the Caddos. These troops were, however, soon withdrawn, and Camp Cooper was not fully recognized as a military post until January 2, 1856, when troops under the command of General Robt. E. Lee, then lieutenant colonel of the Second Cavalry, arrived at this historical cantonment. Camp Cooper, more than any other post in Texas, is entitled to the honor and distinction of being the headquarters of General Robert E. Lee, one of the world's greatest of generals. It was also the headquarters of Major George H. Thomas, who became a major general during the Civil War. Lieut. Col. W. J. Hardee and John B. Hood, who became generals in the Confederate Army, also saw service at this post. And it was to this army camp, the rangers, citizens and soldiers brought Cynthia Ann Parker, when she was recaptured from the Indians in the battle of Pease River. April 14, 1858, Camp Cooper was moved to a new place on the Clear Fork opposite the mouth of Paint Creek and about four miles from the original location. The new location was still called Camp Cooper, and within six hundred yards of the western boundary line of the Comanche or upper Indian Reservation. Camp Cooper was named in honor of Samuel Cooper, who later became an adjutant and inspector general in the Confederate Army. General Cooper died December 3, 1876. In 1860, Companies C, D, G and H of the Second Cavalry and Companies B and E of the First Infantry were stationed at Camp Cooper, which was abandoned February 21, 1861, by order of General David E. Twiggs, because of the outbreak of the Civil War. After the Civil War, inasmuch as the Indians had been moved to Oklahoma and inasmuch as there appeared to be no further need for two posts in this section of the country, Camp Cooper and Fort Belknap were fused together and a new post called Fort Griffin established on Maxwell's Ranch in Shackelford County.

**69. Camp Verde.** - The Federal government had been repeatedly petitioned to better fortify the West Texas frontier. As a consequence, in 1855, a new regiment known as the Second Cavalry was organized. Albert Sidney Johnston was made colonel and placed in command and Robert E. Lee, lieutenant colonel. Albert Sidney Johnston and his command reached Texas early in 1856, and the new troops distributed over the frontier. As a consequence, it became necessary to establish several new posts. Camp Cooper was organized as one of the new posts and placed in the command of Lieut. Col. Robert E. Lee. Too, Camp Verde was established July 8, 1856, by Company B of the Second Cavalry in Kerr County on Verde Creek about seven miles from its confluence with the Guadalupe River. It was not a great distance from the famous Bandera Pass, several times mentioned in the present work.

October 2, 1859, a sub-post of Camp Verde known as Camp Ives, was established by Company I of the Second Cavalry

under the command of Second Lieut. Wesley Owens, on Turtle Creek, about four miles north of Camp Verde. The sub-post was temporarily abandoned March 13, 1860, to enable the troops to escort Lieut. Col. Robert E. Lee to the country bordering on the lower Rio Grande. The troops returned to Camp Ives October 20, 1860 and remained until January 28, 1861, when it was transferred to Camp Verde, and Camp Ives abandoned.

It was at Camp Verde that army officials placed the camels and dromedaries, a detailed account of which will be later given. These animals were transported from Asia Minor for the purpose of testing their efficiency in traveling across Western Texas, where water was scarce. This unique experiment made Camp Verde renown and gave to this post a permanent and conspicuous place in the early history of the great West. The troops at Camp Verde were withdrawn March 7, 1861, by order of General D. E. Twiggs, because of the secession of the Southern States.

November 30, 1866, Federal soldiers again responded to reveille and retreat at Camp Verde.

The history of this post still lives in the memory of some of the early settlers of that section, but the visible lights of Camp Verde were extinguished April 1, 1869, and have long since ceased to shine.

**70. Camp Colorado.** - This post, like Camp Cooper, and Camp Verde, was established by a detachment of the Second Cavalry. Companies A and F occupied a position in Coleman County, August 2, 1856, about six miles north of the Colorado River on the old Fort Belknap and Fort Mason road. Since considerable sickness was soon prevalent in the camp, during July, 1857, the post was moved to a more suitable site, twenty miles farther north. The new location was on Jim Ned Creek, which was named, no doubt, for Jim Ned, a well known Delaware Indian, who lived on the early western frontier.

The new location of Camp Colorado was in the northeastern part of Coleman County. In 1860, Companies A and K of the Second Cavalry under the command of Brevet Major Earl Van Dorn, were stationed at Camp Colorado. In addition, Assistant Surgeon E. H. Alexander, Capt. Chas. J. Whiting and First Lieut. George B. Cosby, John B. Hood and Second Lieuts. A. P. Parler and J. P. Major, all of the Second Cavalry, were, also, stationed at Camp Colorado before the Civil War. This post was several times visited by Robert E. Lee but it was never his headquarters.

Several families of early pioneers, anticipating they would be protected by this early army camp, erected their log cabins on this section of the frontier. By order of Gen. David E. Twiggs, who commanded the Department of Texas, Camp Colorado was abandoned February 26, 1861, because of the

outbreak of the Civil War. In later years, Capt. Henry Sackett purchased the old stone structure left standing after the abandonment of the post, and erected a most ideal ranch residence, which today is a wonderful asset to Coleman and adjoining counties.

**71. Camp Wood.** - Camp Wood was established May 20, 1857, by Company G of the First Infantry, on the east bank of the Nueces, a few miles southeast of Barksdale, near the line of the present Edwards and Real Counties. The location was selected by Capt. G. W. Wallace of the First Infantry, and the new post named for G. W. F. Woods, who died November 8, 1854. The post was abandoned October 29, 1857, and Company G transferred to Fort Duncan. Camp Wood was again regarrisoned before the Civil War, but after the secession of the Southern States, by order of General David E. Twiggs, troops were withdrawn May 15, 1861.

**72. Fort Quitman.** - This post was established September 28, 1858, on the Rio Grande about eighty miles below El Paso, and about one hundred and twenty-five miles west of Fort Davis. This post was one of the last of the camps along the border to be established before the Civil War, and completed a cordon of posts which extended from El Paso to Brownsville. Fort Quitman was established by Companies C and H of the Eighth United States Infantry under the command of Capt. A. L. Lee. Troops were withdrawn April 5, 1861, by order of General David E. Twiggs, because of the secession of the Southern States. But the post was regarrisoned January 1, 1868. After the reoccupation of Fort Quitman, the officers discovered the old buildings had been greatly damaged by Indians, Mexicans and perhaps others during the dark days of the Confederacy. This post was named for General John A. Quitman, who was presented a sword by Congress, March 2, 1847, for gallant service in the battle of Monterey in Mexico. Fort Quitman was abandoned January 5, 1877.

**73. Fort Stockton.** - Fort Stockton was established March 28, 1859, near the present town by the same name, and named for Richard Field Stockton, a former United States Senator from New Jersey. This camp was located near Comanche Creek, and adjacent to an old Indian trail over which the hostile Comanches made their long forays into Old Mexico. It was first called Camp Stockton, but May 23, 1860, its name changed to Fort Stockton. This post, like others out in this section, was established to protect overland transportation and the United States mail, which regularly passed through this Indian-infested territory. Because of the secession of the Southern States, the soldiers were withdrawn from Fort Stockton April 18, 1861, by order of General David E. Twiggs, then in command of the Department of Texas. The post, however, was regarrisoned July 7, 1867.

Can we picture the experiences of the soldiers at Fort Stockton during these early days, separated so far as they were from civilization? This post was seventy-four miles from Fort Davis, two hundred and two miles from Fort Quitman and two hundred and sixty-six miles from Fort Clark. The nearest town was Presidio del Norte, one hundred and forty-seven miles away. In 1870, the nearest town in an easterly direction was Fredericksburg, three hundred and seventy miles away. It was five hundred and seventy-five miles to Columbus, the nearest railroad point.

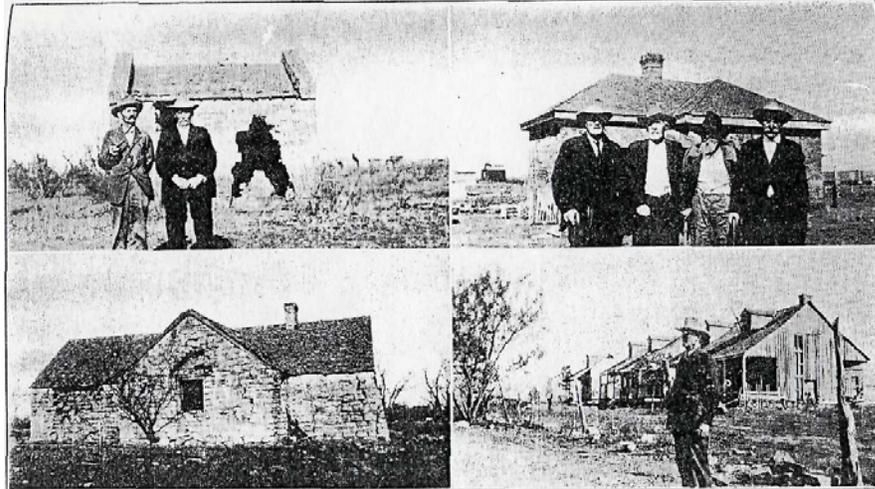
More than once the government prepared to abandon Fort Stockton. But each time due to the urgent protest of the people, the troops were not withdrawn. The post, however, was finally abandoned over the protest of the people June 30, 1886. But today, the fine little city of Fort Stockton and its high-spirited people remain to perpetuate the name and memory of this early western military post.



Ruins of Arsenal of Old Fort Belknap. Reading left to right, the gentlemen are: Henry Williams and J. B. Terrell, pioneers of Young County. See Sec. 58. Upper right: Bakery at Old Fort Richardson at Jacksboro. Reading left to right the gentlemen are A. M. Lasater, B. L. Ham, Joseph Fowler, and James Wood, all of whom were living in Palo Pinto and Jack Counties as early as 1855. They played a noble part in pioneering the West Texas Frontier. For nearly two weeks the author met with these gentlemen at the Jack County court house and they contributed much valuable information, relating to the history of the above counties. Lower left: Bakery at old Fort Griffin. See Sec. 74. Lower right: Officers' quarters and A. M. Lasater at Old Fort Richardson. See Sec. 75.

**74. Fort Griffin** - Fort Griffin was established July 29, 1867, on Maxwell's Ranch in Shackelford County, and proved to be one of the most important of all the early military posts. The first Troops to arrive camped near the Clear Fork. But because the camp site was damp and marshy, the post was soon moved to a more suitable site on the hill about four hundred yards farther south. This camp was first

called Camp Wilson, in honor of Second Lieut. Henry H. Wilson, of the Sixth United States Cavalry, who died December 24, 1866. But the name was changed to Fort Griffin February 6, 1868, and named for Brevet Major General Griffin.



Ruins of Arsenal of Old Fort Belknap. Reading left to right, the gentlemen are: Henry Williams and J. B. Terrell, pioneers of Young County. See Sec. 58. Upper right: Bakery at Old Fort Richardson at Jacksboro. Reading left to right the gentlemen are A. M. Lasater, B. L. Ham, Joseph Fowler, and James Wood, all of whom were living in Palo Pinto and Jack Counties as early as 1855. They played a noble part in pioneering the West Texas Frontier. For nearly two weeks the author met with these gentlemen at the Jack County court house and they contributed much valuable information, relating to the history of the above counties. Lower left: Bakery at old Fort Griffin. See Sec. 74. Lower right: Officers' quarters and A. M. Lasater at Old fort Richardson. See Sec. 75

Fort Griffin was seven miles from old Camp Cooper and forty miles from Fort Belknap. It served to replace each of these earlier posts, which were consolidated. Water was obtained from Collins Creek and a spring in the bank of the Clear Fork.

In a report dated Dec. 4, 1872, and forwarded to the Secretary of War, who submitted it to Congress, it was recommended by the chief of the quartermaster's office at San Antonio, that one hundred thousand dollars be appropriated to replace the temporary buildings with more permanent structures. But no action was taken on this recommendation at that time. October 5, 1875, however, Brigadier General E. O. C. Ord recommended that the erection of permanent quarters at Fort Griffin be withheld until it could be ascertained whether or not the Texas & Pacific or Southern Pacific Railways would pass through this post.

Within a few years after the establishment of Fort Griffin a considerable frontier town developed in the vicinity. In fact, had the Texas & Pacific passed through Fort Griffin, no doubt, it would have at least been the Abilene of West Texas. Nevertheless, at one time, Fort Griffin claimed to have had several hundred population and was from every standpoint a wild western city. General Mackenzie and Colonel Buell, as well as other important army officers, saw service at this post. The Texas & Pacific having been located farther south, and practically all of the Indians having been brought into submission and placed on reservations, Fort Griffin was abandoned May 31, 1881. Today, however, several of the old ruins of this historic post still stand, and the colorful history of this early army camp will long live in the traditions of the splendid local citizens. The little village of Fort Griffin, almost lost among the ranches along the Clear Fork, still reflects the stirring scenes that were enacted during the long ago around this early army cantonment.

**75. Fort Richardson and Buffalo Springs.** - The real history of Fort Richardson, like most of the other early frontier posts, cannot be fully appreciated until a survey is made of the old ruins that still stand, and a friendship established with the surviving old settlers.

We could rightfully state that Fort Richardson was established in the summer of 1866, or in November of 1867 and either statement be correct. Two companies of cavalry first camped at Jacksboro July 4, 1866. These troops during the following year were augmented by the timely arrival of others. H. H. McConnell, in his *Five Years a Cavalryman*, said, "On Monday, January 4, 1866, at about three o'clock in the afternoon, we came in sight of Fort Jacksboro." In April of 1866, the camp at Jacksboro was ordered abandoned. There were six companies of soldiers in Jacksboro at that time. Four were transferred to Fort Belknap and two to a new camp, known as Buffalo Springs. The latter place was in the southern part of Clay County about twenty miles north of Jacksboro. Fort Belknap was about forty miles to the west.

Buffalo Springs was selected for a permanent post. Necessary material, supplies and laborers were sent there to erect suitable structures. But the supply of water failed and other natural facilities were lacking, so the entire project was abandoned. It was then decided that both men and material be transferred back to Jacksboro.

At Jacksboro a new post was established on Lost Creek about one-half mile south of town and named in honor of I. B. Richardson, who was fatally wounded in the battle of Antietam. Here, too, a permanent post was intended to be established. The hammers and saws again begun to sound and the little city of Jacksboro experienced a period of unusual prosperity that almost equaled an oil boom. Perhaps a

half million dollars were appropriated to defray the expenses of this new post. And as we may expect, people of all varieties of occupations came to receive a proportionate part of the appropriation. A number of saloons and dance halls soon sprang into existence, and the little city of Jacksboro was often the scene of bitter conflicts. Murders and many kinds of crime were not uncommon. There are those that still live who can recall those memorable days.

This post was regimental headquarters and Brigadier Gen. James Oakes, General R. S. Mackenzie, Colonel Wood, Lieut. Col. Buell and other noted officers were at times stationed at Fort Richardson. But due to those radical changes, so often seen in the affairs of governments, in 1878 orders were received to abandon Fort Richardson.

Many of the relics and ruins of this old fort still stand and the grounds are used as headquarters of a local company of state militia. Had this post been made permanent, as was first intended, Jacksboro may have been the Fort Sill of North Texas.

**76. Fort Concho** - It is generally reported that Fort Concho was established December 4, 1867, by Companies M and H of the Fourth Cavalry commanded by Captain George G. Huntt and that Companies A, D and G of the same regiment later joined the command. But early records show that soldiers were camped at Fort Concho before the Civil War, and the place then called Camp Concho. In 1867 the post was named Camp Hatch, in honor of Brevet Brigadier General John P. Hatch. The name of the camp was also later changed to Camp Kelly, in commemoration of Brevet Major M. J. who died August 13, 1867. Subsequently, the name of this post was changed again to Camp Concho, and Feb. 6, 1868, the name changed to Fort Concho. This camp was located near the present promising city of San Angelo, and at the confluence of the North and Main Concho Rivers. Fort Concho, similar to Fort Griffin, was established to eliminate some of the earlier posts and stations. Settlements were constantly pushing west. Consequently, it was necessary for new posts to be established in advance of civilization.

For a time it appeared this post was going to be called Fort Griffin. But this name was applied to Camp Wilson on the Clear Fork of the Brazos. Negro troops were stationed at this camp, as well as white soldiers.

Special Order Number 34, dated June 1, 1889, provided that Fort Concho be abandoned as soon as possible. The troops were subsequently transferred to San Antonio.

**77. Fort Elliott** - This is the last and most northern of the army camps to receive our attention. It was established February 3, 1875, by Troops B, C and E of the Sixth Cavalry

and C, D, E and I of the Fifth Infantry under the command of Major Jones Biddle, and was on the North Fork of Red River. At that time it was known as "Cantonment North Fork of Red River." June 5, 1875, the camp was moved to a point in Wheeler County, about twenty-seven miles west of the Oklahoma line, about thirty miles south of the Canadian River and near the headwaters of Sweetwater Creek. The new location was first known as "Cantonment on Sweetwater Creek." The name was soon changed, however, to Fort Elliott, in honor of Major Joel H. Elliott, who was killed November 27, 1868, on the headwaters of the Washita, at the time Black Kettle's Village was destroyed. Mobeetie, in Wheeler County, was the nearest post office. This post was connected with the outside world with a telegraph line and a daily stage. The land upon which the post was located was first leased. But October 28, 1889, twenty-five hundred and sixty acres were purchased from Walter Phelps, for the purpose of establishing a permanent military reservation. More elaborate quarters were established. But the entire military project was abandoned October 21, 1890.

**78. Other Posts** - There were a few other temporary and sub-posts not of sufficient importance to command our attention. Almost constantly, detachments from the posts of major importance, were camping at various locations. During the days of reconstruction, posts and camps were stationed at Austin, Weatherford, Waco, Lampasas, and at several other Texas points, but these local camps were soon abandoned.

Ref: Same as preceding chapter. We are inclined to believe that the above report is the most comprehensive account of the early forts, posts and stations established by the United States Army in Western Texas ever offered in print. Almost in every instance, the information concerning the posts was personally obtained by the author directly from the old dusty archives, files and records, in the Department of War, Washington, D. C. Accuracy has been stressed at all times.

### **PART III. THE FRONTIER FROM ANNEXATION UNTIL THE CESSATION OF INDIAN HOSTILITIES**

#### **CHAPTER IV CHARACTERISTICS OF EARLY ARMY CANTONMENTS**

**79. Personnel of Soldiers and Conditions Around Army Camps.** - The troops around the early army cantonments were, of course, composed of all types of individuals, ranging from soldiers of stalwart character, to those privates who joined the army to evade the penalties of law. The moral surroundings of the posts were both good and bad. In some places, the surroundings were ideal, but in the vicinity of some of the posts, especially Fort Richardson, Fort Griffin, Fort Concho and some of the posts established

after the Civil War, a number of saloons, dance halls, gambling houses and dens of vice seemed to prosper, and murder and other crimes not uncommon. In fact, around a single army post, in some instances, there were several murders during a single month.

The garrisons saw the usual duties required of both officers and men. A military atmosphere nearly always prevailed around the early army posts.

**80. Supplies.** - Prior to the Civil War, a large percentage of military supplies came by water to Indianola, and other coastal points, and then transported overland to either San Antonio, the headquarters of the Department of Texas, or directly to the army camps.

Around each post there were usually several contractors who supplied the camps with beef, grain, hay, etc. It is, of course, impossible to give the history of each of these contracts. But many of the first settlers made their homes in the vicinity of the posts, because they were either skilled laborers or contractors. Robert Childers had the contract to furnish meat at Fort Gates, in Coryell County. O. T. Tyler, father of George W. Tyler, Col. W. C. Dalruple, an Indian fighter, and Col. Henry McCoy, had the contract to furnish corn and perhaps other commodities to the same post and to other cantonments farther west. Corn was hauled in ox-wagons in the early fifties, as far out as Fort Chadbourne, Fort Phantom Hill and Fort Belknap. Capt. W. A. (Bud) Morris, of Montague, in 1854, when a boy of ten years of age, assisted his father to haul corn from Central Texas to Fort Belknap. Corn and supplies were also hauled to this post over the Old California Trail from Gainesville, Sherman and other points. John and Will Peveler, as early as 1852, were meat contractors at this post. John Irwin, who still makes his home out on the Clear Fork above Fort Griffin, has an original contract signed before the Civil War by Robert E. Lee, who was then in command of Camp Cooper. This contract was also signed by Mr. Irwin's father, a contractor at old Camp Cooper.

**81. Camels and Dromedaries.** - Places as well as people are individualized in the eyes of the public by virtue of unusual events. Camp Verde, which was located in Kerr County, was indeed no exception to the rule, for there, at that historical old cantonment on the beautiful banks of the Verde, the Federal government kept for experimental purposes a large number of camels and dromedaries.

Watering places along the long drives across Western Texas were often many miles apart. As a consequence, Jefferson Davis, Secretary of War, decided that perhaps camels and dromedaries could be effectively used. May 10, 1855, Major Henry C. Wayne, was ordered to proceed without delay to the Lavant, for the purpose of making a thorough study of

the camel, and to purchase a sufficient number to be used for experimental purposes in the West.

Major Wayne, in his study of the camels, soon became acquainted with their characteristics, and ready to embark with the first shipment.

According to a communication dated February 11, 1856, Major Wayne left Smyrna, Asia Minor, with thirty-three camels. May 14, of the same year, he reported his arrival at Indianola, where he remained for a few days to rest. He then reached San Antonio with his camels June 18.

The authorities at first considered placing the animals at Fort Martin Scott, but it was reported that this location was unfavorable. As a consequence, Camp Verde was selected as headquarters and the camels reached this post August 26 and 27, 1856.

About two camels died during the journey and others died after reaching their destination. But it was not long before these strange creatures were traveling the trails of Western Texas. Can you imagine the bewilderment of Indian spies, when they saw such curious animals for their first time?

The records at Washington show that forty-one additional camels arrived at Indianola February 10, 1857.

Not later than 1859, the camels had been ridden as far out as the Pecos territory. June 11, 1860, Lieutenant Echols left San Antonio in charge of twenty camels and twenty-five mules, with instructions to find a shorter and better route from the Pecos to Fort Davis. In his report Lieutenant Echols said:

"On the 24th of June the expedition set out from Camp Hudson, best equipped to discover a shorter and better route from the Pecos to Fort Davis, but encountered high and rocky mountains with precipitous sides and deep canyons; and from the Pecos to Francisco Creek, a distance of about one hundred and twenty miles, no water whatever was found, obstacles rendering this part of the route entirely impassable. To pass over this space of a hundred and twenty miles, occupied five days, during which the party suffered for want of water; indeed, the lives of all were in peril, and but for the camels the result might have been disastrous. Those animals, although without water to quench their thirst during these five days, carried their packs with few exceptions ever these one hundred and twenty miles of exceedingly rugged country, transporting the water which sustained the party."

It was soon discovered, however, that the use of the camel in Western Texas was not to be recommended. These animals had been accustomed to a sandy land, consequently it became impossible at times for them to

travel over the rocky sections so often found in West Texas. When interviewed by the author, J. W. Walker, who herded the camels near the close of the Civil War, stated that he had seen their feet bleed because they were so badly bruised by stones. Their slender legs were also very easily broken.

In about 1868, Bethel Coopwood purchased the camels from the United States government at a price ranging from twelve to fourteen dollars per head. The number had increased to approximately one hundred and twenty-five by this time. They were moved farther west. Some were used in shows. Others strayed away and became wild and for many years cowmen and others occasionally saw some of these wild camels, driving across the plains of Northern Mexico, Arizona, New Mexico and Western Texas. In fact, within the last few weeks, the newspapers published an unverified report that a wild camel had recently been seen in the West. If the report be true, perhaps this animal was a descendant from the original stock formerly located at Camp Verde.

**82. Albert Sidney Johnston.** - Albert Sidney Johnston attended Transylvania in the winter of 1818-19. But thereafter he came westward and strongly contemplated joining the navy. In the autumn of 1819, however, to divert his attention, his parents sent him with a sister to Louisiana, where his oldest brother, Josiah S. Johnston, resided. Josiah S. Johnston at that time was a member of Congress. After spending the winter in Louisiana, largely due to the influence of relatives, Albert Sidney Johnston returned to Transylvania, where he attended school for two additional years. And in 1822, Josiah S. Johnston obtained for Albert Sidney an appointment to West Point Military Academy. It was here that Albert Sidney Johnston became more intimately acquainted with Jefferson Davis, and the warm friend of Robert E. Lee, all three of whom were destined to become the three great leaders of the Confederacy. Johnston was, however, two years in advance of Jefferson Davis, and three years ahead of Robert E. Lee, and graduated in 1826. He then served in the Black Hawk War, and for a time was stationed at Jefferson Barracks in Missouri. But resigned May 31, 1834, as an officer in the United States Army, and shortly afterwards sought his fortunes in Texas.

During the War between Texas and Mexico, Albert Sidney Johnston joined the army with a rank of private, but his identity was soon discovered, and as a consequence, rapidly promoted. He was later appointed by General Rusk as adjutant general of the army. Subsequently, he was appointed senior brigadier general of the army of General Houston, and September 3, 1838, Albert Sidney Johnston was appointed Secretary of War under Mirabeau B. Lamar. He held this position until March 1, 1840. During the Mexican War, upon the recommendation of General Zachary

Taylor, Albert Sidney Johnston joined the regular army as colonel of the First Texas Riflemen.

October 31, 1849, shortly after the establishment of the first cordon of military posts from the Red River to the Rio Grande, he was made paymaster of several camps, and ranked as a major. At this time it was his duty to pay the troops every four months at Fort Croghan, Fort Gates, Fort Graham, Fort Worth and possibly one or two other posts. In addition to a trip to New Orleans for the funds amounting to forty or fifty thousand dollars, he was required to travel about five hundred miles through Indian-infested territory to distribute these funds. In a letter dated April 8, 1852, addressed to Col. B. F. Larned, paymaster general, Colonel Johnston said that his district included Fort Graham, Fort Worth, Fort Belknap, Fort Phantom Hill, and so forth. Shortly afterwards Fort Chadbourne and Fort McKavitt were added to his territory. Can you imagine some of his many experiences on these trips? Perhaps it should also be stated that while he was paymaster, the soldiers and citizens around the several military posts took the liberty of asking Colonel Johnston to buy and bring them all kinds of articles of merchandise.

Johnston, like Colonel Marcy and many others, was exceedingly well pleased with the country along the upper Brazos. As a consequence, he preempted the Albert Sidney Johnston survey, amounting to one thousand and five acres, at the mouth of Big Caddo in Palo Pinto County. This survey is a part of the Boydston Ranch, and owned by Mrs. Posie Redus, Mrs. Georgie Eades, B. F. Eades, Mrs. M. A. Howell and John H. Eaton. Albert Sidney Johnston also preempted land on the Clear Fork in Stephens County.

In 1855, the United States raised two new regiments of infantry and two of cavalry. The first cavalry was placed under command of Col. E. V. Summer and Lieut. Col. Joseph E. Johnston. Since the Second Cavalry was to be assigned to Texas, the State Legislature passed a resolution requesting that Albert Sidney Johnston be made its colonel. This recommendation was honored and when Colonel Johnston was notified of his appointment, a public function was held in the city of Austin, to honor the man that was loved and respected by the entire citizenship of the Lone Star State.

Col. Robert E. Lee was made lieutenant colonel of this famous Second Cavalry and after he arrived in Texas in 1856, was placed in command of Camp Cooper, near the upper Indian reservation in the present Throckmorton County. Col. Wm. J. Hardee and Major George H. Thomas were majors in this famous Second Cavalry.

October 27, 1855, the regiment numbering eight hundred men, started on the long march for Texas. Col. Albert Sidney Johnston rode a fine gray horse and led the procession. Several of the officers took their families along on this march to the western frontier. From Jefferson Barracks in Missouri, the

command passed through the Ozarks and followed the military roads to Fort Gibson, Fort Washita, and reached Preston in Grayson County December 15, 1855. From Preston the Second Cavalry traveled the "Old California Trail" or "Marcy's Return Route." to Fort Belknap. From Fort Belknap the command marched on toward Fort Mason, which was made regimental headquarters. It was during this part of the journey that Colonel Johnston and his command encountered sleet, snow and stormy winter weather. The blizzard was so severe, it was reported that one California train of emigrants lost one hundred and thirteen oxen. Col. Albert Sidney Johnston and his troops reached Fort Mason January 17, 1856. Col. Robert E. Lee and Major George H. Thomas, being away at the time on detached service, did not accompany the command to Texas.

In 1857 Albert Sidney Johnston received orders to proceed without delay, to quell the Mormon uprising in Utah. Troops from several of the West Texas posts, accompanied him on the long overland journey. And for gallant service in this uprising, November 18, 1857, Colonel Johnston was made a brigadier general.

After the Southern States seceded from the Union, it was but natural that Jefferson Davis, Albert Sidney Johnston and Robert E. Lee, friends and former schoolmates, should be made leading officers in the Confederacy. Jefferson Davis, who had been Secretary of War, was made President, General Albert Sidney Johnston placed in command of the Southern forces, and General Robert E. Lee placed in command of forces in the East. But when General Johnston was killed April 6, 1862, in the Battle of Shiloh, Robert E. Lee took charge of the Southern Army.

Texas, more than any other state, can rightly claim Albert Sidney Johnston as her own military genius. And be it remembered that General Albert Sidney Johnston regularly followed the Indian trails and military roads from army post to army post, long before the advent of the first settlers.

**83. Robert E. Lee in Texas.** - Before the Civil War, no officer or private was considered a seasoned soldier until he had seen service in the far West or Southwest. Robert E. Lee, then, evidently was entitled to be called a veteran, for a great portion of the time between 1856 and 1861 General Lee spent on the West Texas frontier.

Robert E. Lee completed a four-year course at West Point and graduated in 1829, three years after the graduation of Albert Sidney Johnston and one year after Jefferson Davis.

When the Mexican War was declared in 1846, Robert E. Lee saw Texas for his first time. He played a conspicuous part in this war, and his military courage and manliness soon commanded the

respect of his comrades and superior officers. In an address at the Lee Memorial, November 3, 1870, Jefferson Davis, in speaking of Robert E. Lee said, "He came from Mexico crowned with honors, covered by brevets and recognized, young as he was, as one of the ablest of his country's soldiers," After the close of the Mexican War, Robert E. Lee returned to the East and saw Texas no more until 1856.

From 1849 until 1852, he was engaged in the construction of fortifications at Baltimore and elsewhere on the Atlantic Coast. His service was interrupted, however, by his being appointed September 1, 1852, to succeed Captain Brewerton as superintendent of the Military Academy at West Point. Lee remained at West Point until April 1, 1855, when he was appointed lieutenant colonel of the newly organized Second Cavalry.

When Lee assumed command of his new position, his headquarters were at Louisville, Kentucky. Shortly afterwards, however, the regimental headquarters were transferred to Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, where the regiment was fully recruited. October 27, 1855, Col. Albert Sidney Johnston and Major Hardee, in command of the Second Cavalry, started on the long journey to West Texas.

Lieut. Col. Robert E. Lee and Major George H. Thomas, however, were away at the time on detached service. Shortly afterwards, Robert E. Lee was in Kansas, assigned to court martial duty. Then February 12, 1856, we find him with his family at Alexandria, Virginia, ready to depart for Texas. March 20, 1856, he wrote to his wife from San Antonio, that he was leaving the following day for Fort Mason to join his command. He arrived at the latter place, the headquarters of the Second Cavalry, March 25. Robert E. Lee was then directed by Albert Sidney Johnston to take charge of the First and Fifth Squadrons at Camp Cooper. He arrived at this post April 9, 1856.

It will be readily seen that all reports concerning Robert E. Lee being on the frontier before these dates are not corroborated by the true history of his life. Both Fort Belknap and Fort Phantom Hill were established in 1851, and the latter post was abandoned in 1854. Since his headquarters from 1849 to 1852 were at Baltimore, and from the latter date to 1855 at West Point, it was impossible for Robert E. Lee to have been in charge of military operations, at either Fort Belknap, Fort Phantom Hill or any other Texas military post during this period.

April 12, 1856, Robert E. Lee expressed his regard for the hostile Comanches, when he said:

"We are on the Comanche Reserve with Indian camps below us belonging to Catumseh's band, whom the government is endeavoring to humanize. It will be uphill work, I fear.

Catumseh has been to see me and we have had a talk, very tedious on his part, and very sententious on mine. I hailed him as a friend as long as his conduct and that of his tribe deserved it, but meet him as an enemy the first moment he failed to keep his word. The rest of the tribe, about a thousand it is said, lives north of us and are hostile. Yesterday I returned his visit and remained at that time at his lodge. He informed me that he had six wives. They are riding in and out of camp all day, their paint and ornaments rendering them more hideous than nature made them, and the whole race is extremely uninteresting."

In a letter written at Camp Cooper to Mrs. Lee, dated August 4, 1856, Colonel Lee stated that after a march of thirty miles on one of the branches of the Brazos, he spent the Fourth of July at Camp Cooper under his blanket, elevated as a sun shade and suspended at the four corners by stakes, for the sun was hot, and the atmosphere felt like a blast from a hot furnace.

September 1, 1856, Robert E. Lee left Camp Cooper and the Comanche Indian Reservation for Ringgold Barracks for the purpose of sitting in a court martial.

Robert E. Lee reached Ringgold Barracks September 28, 1856. December of the same year finds Colonel Lee at Fort Brown and from here he wrote a touching Christmas letter to his family. January 7 and February 16, 1857, Colonel Lee again wrote his family from Fort Brown. Then March 27 and 28 he wrote his family from Indianola on the Gulf Coast, and April 4, he had reached Fort Mason and wrote his family from that point. Lee again joined his command at Camp Cooper April 18, 1857, after being away more than seven months.

He remained at Camp Cooper for several weeks and enjoyed another Fourth of July in the mesquite flats bordering on the Clear Fork of the Brazos. Colonel Johnston received orders July 23, 1857, to report in person at Washington, and to turn his command over to Robert E. Lee. Colonel Johnston was called to Washington for the purpose of receiving instructions to march against the Mormons of Utah. Colonel Lee, as instructed, assumed command of the Second Cavalry with his headquarters at Fort Mason.

Upon receipt of news of the death of G. W. P. Curtis, father of Mrs. Lee, Colonel Lee went to Arlington, Virginia, and joined his family, November 11, 1857, in its bereavement.

The author examined the monthly reports of the command of Camp Cooper from the day he left that post until he returned, and almost all of them recited that Robert E. Lee was away on detached service since October 21, 1857. Lee's leave of absence was by authority of Detached Service Order No. 136, and his time was extended to December 1, 1858. Special Order No. 7 extended his time until January 20, 1859, and to May 1,

1859. And Special Order No. 153 extended his time of absence to July 29 and again to November 13, 1859. In the fall of that year Lee was placed in command of the forces which were sent to suppress the uprising commonly known as "John Brown's Raid."

February 6, 1860, Col. Robert E. Lee received orders to assume command of the Department of Texas, during the absence of Gen. David E. Twiggs. Upon the receipt of these orders, Robert E. Lee assumed command of the Department of Texas, February 20, 1860; and while acting in that capacity his headquarters were at San Antonio. He remained here until March 15, 1860, when he again made a tour of the Rio Grande frontier, but he returned to San Antonio May 17 of the same year. Brevet Major David E. Twiggs arrived at Indianola. November 27, 1860, and reached San Antonio December 8. His arrival in the state relieved Lee of the command of the Department of Texas. And December 24, 1860, we again find Robert E. Lee in command at Fort Mason.

Robert E. Lee signed the January reports at Fort Mason. But February 13, 1861, Robert E. Lee received orders to return to Washington, never to return to the West Texas frontier.

He resigned from the United States Army April 25, 1861. But soon was mustered into Confederate service, in which he won renown as one of the world's greatest generals. He died October 12, 1870, and rests peacefully at Lexington, Virginia, where his tomb is visited annually by thousands of tourists.

The above facts are practically all verified by the old dusty monthly reports on file in the Department of War, in Washington. These reports and the old records were carefully reviewed and studied by the author, who also reviewed the works of several leading authorities on the life of Robert E. Lee.

Fitzhugh Lee, in his account of Robert E. Lee, said, "Petty frontier war with the savages was not congenial or in accord with the genius of such a soldier as Lee. Army life there was not pleasant to an officer of his rank." But Colonel Lee performed his duties without a murmur, far from the members of his family to whom he was unusually devoted; and he saw no little amount of Indian service on the West Texas frontier.

During these years the troops under his command had a number of conflicts with hostile Indians. Lee's experience on the western border enabled him to become thoroughly acquainted with the affairs in Texas at that time. In fact, we are told by writers who were intimately acquainted with the general, that he always endeavored to master the surroundings and become familiarized with existing conditions. If he were living, and if it were possible to engage him in conversation, no doubt he could actually relate many of the most important Indian fights, which

occurred from 1856 to 1861. It was a detachment of his command from Camp Cooper that assisted in the recapture of Cynthia Ann Parker.

Robert E. Lee left his headquarters at Camp Cooper and Fort Mason sixty-seven years ago. Since then, the Comanche-infested country around old Camp Cooper has been converted into one of the finest sections of Texas. The Lone Star State is indeed proud of the part she contributed in tutoring this great general, whose military genius remains unexcelled, whose pleasing personality still lives, and whose heroic deeds and achievements, both as a citizen and soldier, shall forever brightly shine among the brilliant stars of history.

**84. Other Important Army Officers.** - In addition to Albert Sidney Johnson and Robert E. Lee, the famous Second Cavalry also produced a number of other officers, who became renowned during the Civil War. W. J. Hardee, ranked as a general in the Confederate Army; George H. Thomas was promoted to a general in the Union Army; Earl Van Dorn, E. Kirby Smith and N. G. Evans, who were captains in the second Cavalry, became generals in the Confederate Army. I. N. Palmer, George Stoneman and R. W. Stoneman, who were captains under Johnston and Lee in the Second Cavalry, became generals in charge of Northern forces. Lieut. John B. Hood of the Second Cavalry became a Confederate general. Major Thomas and Lieutenant Hood were both stationed at Camp Cooper at one time, and elsewhere. They saw no little amount of service together, and with each other were well acquainted. But the two became generals, and led opposing armies against each other in Tennessee during the Civil War.

Many other officers also saw service in Texas, and afterwards became distinguished during the Civil War.

**85. Buildings and Locations of Early Army Posts.** - Not unlike the early settlers and towns, most of the early posts, forts and stations were adjacent to important streams or springs, or both. The reasons, of course, are obvious.

Many of the old stone structures of these posts still stand, old and dilapidated, as monuments to the early West Texas frontier. Others are but massive heaps of ruins. Much of the structure of old Fort Belknap has been moved to Newcastle and used in buildings there.

Although unpainted by artists, the ruins of practically all of these early army cantonments present a pleasing picture, and like the masterpieces of old, many of them are still hanging on the historic walls of time, only to bespeak of the days when the great west was really wild.

Ref: Same as two preceding chaps.; Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 62, 34th Congress, 3rd Session; Ex. Doc. 2 H of R, 35th Cong., 2nd Ses.; Sen. Ex. Doc. 62, 34th Cong., 3rd Ses., vol. 8; Sen. Mis. Doc., 271, 35th Cong., 1st Ses., vol. 4; Life of Alb. Sid. Johnston, by W. T. Johnston; Gen. Robt. E. Lee, by Fitzhugh Lee; Memoirs of Robt. E. Lee, by A. L. Long, (1886); Repts. of Robt. E. Lee on file in War Dept.

### **PART III THE FRONTIER FROM ANNEXATION UNTIL THE CESSATION OF INDIAN HOSTILITIES**

#### **CHAPTER V EARLY SETTLERS AND THEIR DOMESTIC, SOCIAL AND OTHER ACTIVITIES**

**86. The Westward Movement of the Frontier.** - At the time of annexation, the frontier extended through the present counties of Cooke, Denton, Tarrant, Ellis, Navarro, McLennan, Bell, Williamson, Travis, Blanco, Gillespie, Kendall, Bexar, Medina, and westward to the Rio Grande. There was little change, however, in the westward edge of civilization until the establishment of the first cordon of posts from the Red River to the Rio Grande in 1849, and the second cordon of cantonments in 1851-52. New territory was then opened for settlement, and shortly afterwards we find a few settlers locating in the vicinity of the early military posts.

For several years after the treaty of 1843 between the Republic of Texas and the Indians, the advance of the settlements into Western Texas remained east of the "Dead-line."

But February 6, 1854, the Legislature of Texas passed a law which appropriated twelve leagues of land to be divided into not exceeding three separate tracts and to be set apart as Indian reservations. These reservations were surveyed and located during the same year, in the present Young and Throckmorton Counties by Col. R. B. Marcy and Major Robert S. Neighbors. As a consequence, the removal of the Indians to these agencies early in 1855 opened unconditionally all of the territory to the west of the former deadline, which previously had not been fully respected by either Indians or the advancing settlements. And the westward movement of pioneers began on a more extensive scale in many of the West Texas counties, after the opening of the reservations in January of 1855.

**87. Log-Cabins and Other Pioneer Buildings.** - After the two reservations were opened for Indian settlements, and along in the fifties, a large number of pioneer homeseekers planted their picturesque log cabins along practically all the principal streams from the Red River to the Rio Grande. In many sections picket-houses were not uncommon. In the small villages occasionally clapboard houses were constructed, and in a few

instances, particularly in the German settlements of Gillespie County, a few stone structures were also found. It was several years after the Civil War, however, before lumber to any appreciable extent found its way to the frontier. But in a few instances local saw mills supplied a local demand for lumber. Generally speaking, however, except in the German settlements of Gillespie and adjoining counties, practically all of the pioneer homes along the frontier were either log or picket houses. And often these structures had only a dirt floor. Furthermore, the school, church and business houses, courthouses and other public buildings, as a rule, in structure, were not dissimilar to the early frontier dwellings. This age, often mentioned as the "Frontier Days," "Indian Times," etc. could rightly be called the "Age of Log Cabins."

But why did practically all of the first settlers erect their log cabins along the principal streams, or near important springs? Because the best lands were in the valleys and wood, water and game were more plentiful in such places. Not unlike the ruins of the early frontier posts, many of these log cabins still stand as a monument to the early frontiersmen.

**88. Mode of Living.** - With modern conveniences at our disposal, it is almost impossible to conceive of the early conditions, which existed on the western frontier. The varieties of foods available at that time were much more limited and many of the delicacies of the present day were unknown. During the spring and early summer, vegetables were a treat to the pioneer table. Fruit, flour and purchased foods were always in demand, and often not a part of the daily menu.

Much of the clothing material was made at home, and most of the early pioneer mothers well understood the art of weaving. Buckskin clothing were not uncommon. Candles were also a home product; molasses and many other necessary commodities, needed for domestic purposes, were made at home.

The furniture varied from a rude style of home structure to elaborate patterns of splendid merchandise. But especially, at great distances from the principal towns, there was, of course, very little of the latter furniture to be found. Often all the household furniture was built at home. There were those on the frontier who made a specialty of making such furniture, and today these old home made chairs, tables, beds, etc., are in high demand as pioneer relics.

Inasmuch as wire fences were unknown, rail and rock fences were not uncommon. And since it was almost impossible to keep horses, on account of Indians, oxen were extensively used. Can we picture a pioneer family driving their ox-teams to the West Texas frontier? Can we, also, picture the early pioneer plowing his small field with a yoke of steers? But regardless of

the primitive mode of living, had it not been for the Indians the West Texas territory would have been a perfect paradise.

**89. Cattle Industry and Early Movement of Cattle.** - As we have already mentioned, this industry was largely borrowed from the Spanish. It began at the beginning, and each section of the frontier produced its own ranchmen and noted cowmen.

Long after the Civil War herds of wild cattle and horses were still running wild on the Texas prairies. The country was open and unfenced and practically all land belonged to the state.

Both cattle and grass were free, and the custom soon arose among the early cowmen that when stock were found unbranded, except suckling calves following their mothers, such animals belonged to the first man or men who marked and branded them. These cattle were commonly called mavericks. H. G. Taylor, an early cowman, with the assistance of his brother, P. J. Taylor, captured as high as 75 maverick cattle in a single day. By this means many of the early cattlemen made their start.

Cattle were practically worthless when they could not be marketed. Since there were, as a rule, no markets at home the ranchmen were often forced to sell their stock elsewhere. The trail drivers industry, as a consequence, came into existence, since there were no railroads.

Conflicting statements have been made concerning when the first cattle were moved. Certainly, the first herd was driven to other states long before the Civil War. In 1848 Dave Hunter of Boone County, Illinois, bought seven or eight hundred head of cattle in the vicinity of Dallas and moved them to his home state. In 1852 Isaac Harris, not unlike several others about that time, and before, moved a large herd of cattle from Texas to California. In 1854 Cecil and Frank Brown bought one thousand head of steers, four to nine years of age, and moved them to Quincy, Illinois. These Brown cattle were rounded up at the Shackelford Ranch, about fifteen miles southeast of Austin. James Bell assisted others to move cattle during 1854 from the vicinity of San Antonio to California. Frederick L. Olmsted, in his book styled "Journeys Through Texas," published in 1857, stated that he saw four hundred head of cattle which were being driven to the state of California. Olmsted also stated that cattle in 1856 were worth fifteen dollars a head in Texas, and one hundred dollars in California. He spoke of a Texan buying sheep in Old Mexico at one dollar a head and selling them at twenty dollars in California, and that he cleared one hundred thousand dollars on the deal. In a report made by General David E. Twiggs, he speaks of Indians attacking a party of California cattle drivers August 9, 1858, near the Leon Water Hole on the San Antonio and El Paso road.

Charles Charles Goodnight said:

"The first herd driven north out of Northwest Texas was driven in 1858 by Oliver Loving, leaving Palo Pinto and Jack Counties, thence north to Red River, crossing Red River in the neighborhood of Red River Crossing, and striking the Arkansas River near the old Fort Garah, then up the Arkansas to where Pueblo now stands. There he wintered the herd. In 1859 (Spring) he moved them to the Platte River near Denver and peddled them out. He remained there until the Civil War broke out and had much difficulty in getting back home, but through the assistance of Maxwell, Kit Carson and Dick Wootan, he was given a passport and afterwards delivered beef to the Confederacy during the war, which completely broke him up. He joined me in 1866 on the Western Trail and followed this until his death."

There were other herds driven north, east and west during the fifties and before. Then unquestionably, the movement of cattle from Texas to other states was in existence long before the Civil War.

After the secession of the Southern States the movement of cattle did not cease, but the sales were made in the South. Shortly after the war, the movement of large herds again, began on a more extensive scale. Charles Goodnight, Oliver Loving and others took cattle to New Mexico and Colorado. These trips opened the Goodnight and Loving Trail.

William E. Cureton, in his memoirs, said:

"In the spring of 1867 my father sold the cattle on the Jim Ned, taking pay in grown steers, which he placed on the trail to feed the Indians and soldiers on government reservations, and posts in New Mexico and Arizona. Leaving the old Clayton Ranch on Jim Ned October 19, we traveled the old military stage route by Fort Chadbourne, up the Concho. The United States soldiers had just camped to begin the building of Fort Concho, on the forks of the Concho, near the present site of San Angelo. At the Horsehead Crossing on the Pecos, the Indians stole eleven head of our saddle horses, which very much handicapped us. At the mouth of the Hondo, where Roswell now stands, old man Hubbard of San Saba was wintering in a hole in the ground waiting for the government to receive his cattle to feed the soldiers and Navajo Indians then conquered and the reservation at Fort Sumner, called Bosque Grande. Then we turned up the Hondo, going over the Divide to San Augustine Spring, where we sold the steers to the government contractor to be delivered the next spring (1868). Six of us cowboys were not needed to keep the cattle. Dan and Billie Curbirth, Gip Clayton, Louis Strong, Jim Abbott and myself, mounted on little Spanish mules, with two of the same packed with grub, blankets, a skillet, frying pan, coffee pot and bread pan, started the last days of

November to retrace our steps in the dead of winter, and without a grain of feed for the patient little mules. Several other cattlemen were returning from Mexico, Colorado, etc., about the same time."

Within a few years the Lovings, Daltons, Lynns, Taylors, Bevers, Slaughters, Hittsons, Curetons, Claytons and many others equally as important from various parts of Texas were soon moving large herds to the Kansas markets and elsewhere. Sometimes several herds were thrown together. The movement of these immense herds presented a spectacular picture, unexcelled elsewhere at any time or place in the entire world.

Many of these cattle were moved along what was commonly called the "Old Chisholm Trail." A few remarks concerning this early overland trail will be appropriate at this time.

The origin of the name and location of this early route to the northern markets has perhaps caused more confusion than any other single phase of the frontier history. Almost every trail out of Texas in every direction has at some time or other been erroneously called the Chisholm Trail. Furthermore, since John Chisum was a noted cowman on the western frontier, and since he was well known to the early pioneers, many have erroneously attributed the origin of the name of this trail to him. According to reports of the best authorities, it seems that this trail was named for Jesse Chisholm, whose father was a Scotchman and whose mother was a Cherokee Indian. D. F. McCarthy, in the issue of the Frontier Times published January, 1927, said:

"The origin of the Chisholm Trail, over which were driven the greatest herds of cattle known to history, and the first and most famous ever blazed in this or any other country, was always more or less a mystery and a source of much dispute among early cattlemen until cleared up some years ago by the late Capt. Henry Spekes, who took the first herd of cattle ever driven over it, to Kansas City, in the Spring of 1866.

"Jesse Chisholm, for whom the trail took its name, was an Indian trader and trapper, and had an extensive ranch and a trading post at Council Grove, on the north bank of the North Canadian River, a few miles west of the site of Oklahoma City. The winter preceding the arrival of Captain Spekes at the North Canadian, had been an unusually profitable season for trapping and hunting, and as a result, Chisholm had collected great piles of fur pelts, beaver and otter, deer, elk and wolf skins, and many buffalo hides, which he hauled to Kansas City the following Spring.

"Arriving at the crossing of the North Canadian a few days after the Chisholm wagon train had departed from Council Grove, Captain Spekes, in view of the plain wagon trail that now lay

ahead of him, cut deep into the soft prairie soil, followed it up to its junction with the Santa Fe Trail, and thence over he latter to the Missouri River. It was thus that the historic Chisholm Trail came into existence.

"This pioneer herd was driven from Southern Oklahoma, and led by two Indian guides, beat out its own trail to the North Canadian. Other herds followed shortly in the wake of Captain Spekes, and soon, the Chisholm Trail for several years, became the one great highway and outlet, from the Texas and Oklahoma ranges for practically all the cattle driven north from the Texas and Oklahoma ranges to the railroad terminals then being established in Kansas, of which Abilene was the dominating center.

"So extensively was the Chisholm Trail used by Texas and Oklahoma stockmen, that the Santa Fe Railroad Company later paralleled it with steel rails from Wichita, Kansas, to Fort Worth, Texas, a distance of nearly four hundred miles.

"Jesse Chisholm was born in East Tennessee in 1806, his father being of Scotch parentage and his mother a Cherokee, whose sister, the beautiful Talahina Rogers, was reported to have married General Sam Houston.

"Chisholm died in 1868 at Council Grove, which during the years he lived there, had become to him and his kin a sort of feudal domain from which they derived all that makes for the even ways of life."

Neither the spring rises nor southwestern storms stopped the movement of the immense herds. When the cowmen desired to cross a swollen stream, some daring cowboy plunged his horse into the swiftly moving currents in front of the wild and surging cattle. The "Lead-steers" followed, and then in turn the roaring herds followed their leaders. Consequently, the river was soon transformed into a mass of moving heads and horns. Should the cattle once lose their course and began to mill it required the greatest skill and courage to stop them. Frequently before the cattle were brought under control and on the forward march, many of the animals and sometimes cowmen were drowned.

The cattle were slowly grazed over the trails to Kansas and elsewhere, and when they reached their destination, after several weeks' journey, the arrival of both men and animals presented a spectacular scene.

In a book styled "The Trail Drivers of Texas," Vol. II, compiled and edited by J. Marvin Hunter and published in 1923, under the direction of George W. Saunders, president of the Old Time Trail Drivers Association, from page 408, we take the following quotation:

"It is conservatively estimated by Old Trail Drivers, that there were ninety-eight million cattle and ten million horse stock driven over the northern trails during the twenty-eight years of trail days, and that there were thirty-five thousand men employed to handle these herds."

Concerning the route over which many of these cattle were moved, George W. Saunders, in the above work, said:

"Here is a correct log of the cattle trails from Texas to Kansas and the Northwestern States and territory beginning at the Rio Grande in Cameron County and giving the names of all the counties in Texas these trails passed through. Starting at the Rio Grande, the trail passed through Cameron, Willacy, Hidalgo, Brooks, Kenedy, Kleberg, Nueces, Jim Wells, San Patricio, Live Oak, Bee, Goliad, Karnes, Wilson, Gonzales Guadalupe, Caldwell, Hays, Travis, Williamson, Bell, Falls, Bosque, McLennan, Hill, Johnson, Tarrant, Denton, Wise, Cook, Montague, to Red River Station, or crossing where the Texas trail intersected the Chisholm Trail. In the late 70's it became necessary to move the trail further west, as the old trail was being taken up by farmers. The trail was changed to go through Wilson, Bexar, Kendall, Kerr, Kimble, Menard, Concho, McCulloch, Coleman, Callahan, Shackelford, Throckmorton, Baylor and Wilbarger to Doan's Store or crossing on Red River. Later on the southern herds quit the old trail in San Patricio County and went through Live Oak, McMullen, La Salle, Dimmit, Zavala, Uvalde, Edwards, and intersecting the western trail in Kimble County, from where all followed the well defined and much traveled western trail to Doan's Crossing on Red River. As I remember the trail to Dodge City from Doan's Crossing it passed up North Fork Red River, Croton Creek, crossed North Fork Red River at Wichita Mountains, up North Fork to Indian Camp, Elm Creek, Cash Creek, Washita, Canadian, Sand Creek, Wolf Creek, Beaver Creek, Wild Horse and Cimarron where Red Clark conducted a road house called "Long Horn Roundup," on up Bear Creek, Bluff Creek, at Mailey's road house, Mulberry Creek and Dodge City. Now, my gentle readers, you have the log of old northern cattle trails through Texas, and by looking at a map of Texas you can locate any part of the trail by the counties touched; but remember several of the Texas counties were not organized at that time and none in the Indian Territory. You will recall it has been fifty-five years since the trail started and twenty-four since it closed. I personally drove over all of these trails described and there are hundreds of men yet living that will vouch for the correctness of this log."

To the cowboy this type of employment was exceedingly fascinating, and many of them made several trips. The camp fire stories, the cowboy songs around the chuck-wagons and other attractive features caused the western cowmen in after years to yearn to return to the trail.

Occasionally, the cattle would stampede and on such occasions only an old experienced cow-hand is able to vividly understand the extent of their storming rage; which was sometimes caused by lightning that appeared to play on their horns; and at other times, by some unusual action or noise. In event a few cattle once became frightened, the entire herd nearly always became alarmed. When the great rush once started, the stampeding herds rattled through the darkness like a most terrific storm. Only time and the great forces of nature could stop them.

The building of railroads and settling of free ranges several years before the dawn of the present century, practically ended the movement of cattle over the trails.

**90. Agriculture and Horticulture.** - These industries were, of course, not followed so extensively along the frontier. Ranching was the principal industry. Such farming that was done was usually on a very small scale. Much of the farming was done with oxen.

Neither were there many orchards to be found on the frontier. Particularly was that true of the northern section. The Germans, in the vicinity of Gillespie and adjoining counties, and the Mexicans in the vicinity of the old El Paso district, were inclined to give more attention to this industry.

**91. Other Industries.** - There were, of course, a variety of occupations which offered employment to the early settlers. Contractors, freighters, carpenters and various forms of skilled laborers were not uncommon. Some of the early citizens found employment by tanning hides, others, making boots and shoes, and other domestic articles. Some of the early settlers kept stage stands, others were stage drivers, while still others were employed in various capacities.

**92. Hunting and Fishing.** - The quantity of wild game in existence on the frontier during the early days was well described by J. T. Hazelwood, son of George Hazelwood, who was massacred by the Indians. J. T. Hazelwood said:

"The ranges were covered with countless herds of buffalo, deer, antelope, bear and other wild game. We lived in picket houses, covered with sod and dirt, and floored with buffalo hides - nothing to compare with the comfortable homes which the people of this country enjoy at the present time; but, nevertheless, the conditions for that day and ago were ideal, and we lived in comfort, except that we lived in continual fear of Indian raids."

Often buffalo, bear, deer, turkey, fish or other varieties of game were a part of the daily menu on the table of the early frontiersman. Game was also killed and caught for sport.

**93. Hunting the Buffalo.** - Because of the part this industry played along the frontier, this type of hunting deserves special consideration. Sometimes buffalo hunters went hundreds of miles to reach the buffalo ranges. The American bison were killed primarily for their pelts and hides, but a large amount of buffalo were also slaughtered for meat. The first to arrive on the frontier to a large extent, followed the custom of the Indians in killing the buffalo, which were regarded as both meat and bread by the native tribes. But the industry of hunting these animals for their hides reached its greatest magnitude after the establishment of Fort Richardson, Fort Griffin, Fort Concho, and the reoccupation of several of the military posts from which troops were withdrawn prior to the Civil War. Buffalo hunters went to practically every portion of the great western prairies.

So numerous were these splendid animals of the plains that on one occasion buffalo hunters reported they drank the Canadian River dry. And it was not uncommon to see the Prairies black with them.

The killing of buffalo required skill, and like other industries, the hunters soon became skilled in their pursuit. The buffalo drifted north during the summer and southward during winter, This fact was well known to the early plainsmen, and when they made hunting expeditions they usually knew exactly where to find them.

By 1874, the great western prairies were almost alive with buffalo hunters. But at that time there were thousands of buffalo. Three or four years later, however, these animals were practically exterminated. The highest praise is due Mr. and Mrs. Charles Goodnight and others for domesticating and saving from final extermination, small herds of these rugged animals of the plains.

**94. Early Religious, Social and Moral Activities and Character of Early Settlers.** - Religious and social activities, like other things, were greatly retarded by the hostile Indians. Religious services, social gatherings, picnics, barbecues, etc., were often held at a little log school house, under an arbor, in some splendid grove of trees, or in some pioneer home.

Concerning the character and conduct of early pioneers, I wish to emphatically refute those writers who were foreign to Texas, and who, on several occasions, unjustly criticized the early West Texas frontiersmen. An exhaustive study of the early settlers will invariably reveal to others, as it has to the author, that these early westerners were descendants of the best of American blood, were unexcelled from the standpoint of character and second to none from the standpoint of citizenship. The mode of living on the frontier at that time called for men and women of courage and high moral character.

Ref: Surviving old settlers, whose names are given in the parts of the present work devoted to Indians; Pioneer Days in the Southwest, by Chas. Goodnight, et al; Cattle Industry in Texas; Five Years a Cavalryman, by H. H. McConnell; and the general knowledge of frontier affairs derived by reading various pioneer works cited in part of this work devoted to Indians, and references mentioned within the chapter. Reports of Secretary of War (1858), and J. D. White, who was around Dallas and Austin about the time and shortly after Dave Hunter and Cecil and Frank Brown moved cattle to Illinois.

### **PART III**

## **THE FRONTIER FROM ANNEXATION UNTIL THE CESSATION OF INDIAN HOSTILITIES**

### **CHAPTER VI**

## **EARLY ROADS AND OVERLAND TRANSPORTATION**

**95. Military Roads.** - Considerable space has already been given to the early roads which were blazed by the United States Topographical Engineers and others.

From Fort Belknap and Camp Cooper, the two most northern posts, one of the main roadways led south to Camp Colorado, Fort Mason, Camp Verde, Fort McKavitt, Fredericksburg, Austin, San Antonio and other southern points. From each of the early military posts, and from different points of the settlements, roads extended westward to El Paso, and as early as 1857, a network of frontier trails and roads connected each of the early posts with each other and with the settlements.

**96. County Roads.** - When a new county was organized, one of the first things to be done by the commissioners' court was to provide suitable roads and outlets to adjoining counties. An examining of the first minutes of the commissioners' court of the various counties almost invariably disclosed orders relating to the establishment of early roads. To be sure they were not the highways we have today, but served the needs of that time.

**97. California Trail or Marcy's Return Route.** - A few roads which extended across the frontier were of sufficient importance to receive special consideration. One of these was the "Old California Trail" or "Marcy's Return Route." This route, which has been previously discussed, was established by Capt. R. B. Marcy in 1849, and since it was traveled so extensively by emigrants to California, it became known as "The California Trail" or "Marcy's Return Route." This old emigrant road crossed Red River at Old Preston in Grayson County, not a great distance from the northeast corner of Peter's Colony. It then extended through Grayson County into Cooke and passed through Gainesville. At the present time one of the principal streets of this prosperous city is called California

Street and derived its name from this early overland trail. The road then extended into Montague County and passed Old Barrel Springs, a favorite camping place. W. A. Morris and Joe Bryant stated that some of the early emigrants placed a barrel in these springs before the first pioneers reached Montague County. It was due to this fact, this watering place became known as Barrel Springs. This old trail then led through Clay and Young Counties and passed old Fort Belknap. It also passed near old Camp Cooper and the Comanche Indian Reservation, which were then located in the present Throckmorton County. This trail, however, was a few years older than these early posts. From Throckmorton County the California Trail passed through Haskell and Jones Counties and followed a southwesterly course toward El Paso. It passed Fort, Phantom Hill and Fort Chadbourne.

Many traces of this old trail can still be seen. A few miles from old Camp Cooper and on the ranch of J. A. (Bud) Matthews a lonely grave of a little girl today marks the route of this early overland trail. The gravestone at the head of this little grave bears the date of 1852. Near the foot of the Guadalupe Mountains in the extreme western part of Texas another lonely grave, bearing the same date, also, marks the route of the Old California Trail. Both Young and Haskell Counties have streams called California Creek because they were crossed by this early trail.

When the Old California Trail was established in 1849, North Texas had no settlements westward of Cooke, Denton and Tarrant Counties.

**98. San Antonio-San Diego Mail.** - The importance of establishing an overland stage and mail route between Texas and California was fully realized several years before the Civil War. As soon after annexation as circumstances would afford, a chain of military posts was established between San Antonio, El Paso and points farther west. As a consequence, in 1857 the post office department, feeling that the opportune time had arrived, called for contractors to carry the mail from San Antonio to San Diego and back once a week. The lowest bid was that of N. P. Cook and was accepted, but his interest was transferred to James E. Burch.

The post office department decided to establish a bi-monthly mail, so a contract was made with the said James E. Burch to carry the mail twice a month between the points for the sum of one hundred forty-nine thousand eight hundred dollars. The contract became effective July 1, 1857, and was scheduled to extend to June 30, 1861. It was agreed that the mails would leave both San Antonio and San Diego on the same days, namely, the 9th and 24th of each month at 6:00 A.M., and make the distance between the two places within thirty days.

Mr. Burch, a citizen of Smansea, Massachusetts, appointed Major J. C. Woods as general superintendent to supervise the arrangement. Mr. Burch himself went to California to arrange for the establishment of the mails on the Pacific Coast. But September 11, while returning to New York on the steamship Central America, which was wrecked, Mr. Burch perished.

Major Woods left New York City for San Antonio June 24, 1857, and arrived at his destination July 11, two days after the first mail was due to leave. But he immediately began to make preparation for the second mail and first coach due to leave San Antonio July 24. Major Woods accompanied the second mail all the way to California, but it was not until he reached San Diego that he received the news of the death of Mr. Burch.

Concerning this route, in his report Major Woods said:

"The question is frequently asked as to whether or not we have a well defined road all the way from San Antonio to San Diego, To this I answer that it is as plain a road as any stage route over which the mail is carried in coaches for your department. An emigrant would find it as impossible to miss his way when once on our road, either going or returning from California, as he would if traveling in a county where guide posts marked every crossroad."

In his report Major Wood further said:

"We, therefore, assume that the establishment of this line must lead to the speedy and rapid settlement of the country throughout the entire distance, giving us, within a very few years, a continuous succession of farms, ranches, hotels, military posts, stage offices, etc., from one ocean to the other."

The establishment of this mail route was an important step in pioneering the great West. Sixty-five men, fifty coaches and four hundred mules were required to comply with the contract. The transportation charged for passengers from San Antonio to El Paso was one hundred dollars, and to San Diego two hundred dollars.

**99. Old Butterfield Route.** - March 3, 1857, an act of Congress was approved, providing for the establishment of a stage line and mail route between the Mississippi River and San Francisco. The Post Office Department called for bids and the bid of John Butterfield and associates was accepted. As a consequence, a contract was signed September 16, 1857. The contractors agreed to carry the mails twice a week for the stipulated sum of \$595,000.00. And in due time John Butterfield and associates established this overland mail and stage route.

G. Bailey, special agent *at* the Post Office Department, was a passenger on the first stage from San Francisco to St. Louis. October 18, 1858, concerning this trip Mr. Bailey reported as follows:

"I returned by the overland route, taking passage in the first stage sent across from the Pacific to the Mississippi, via Fort Yuma and Franklin, under the Butterfield contract.

"The stage, with the mails, started from the Plaza, at San Francisco, at precisely ten minutes past midnight of the 14th of July, 1858, and arrived at Tipton, the present terminus of the Pacific Railroad, at five minutes past nine o'clock on the morning of the 9th instant. Thence the mails were transported by the Pacific Railroad to St. Louis, where they arrived the same day at forty-five minutes past eight o'clock p.m. The entire distance between these two termini of the route was thus accomplished in twenty-four days eighteen hours and twenty-six minutes.

"In conclusion, I have to report that the company has faithfully complied with all the conditions of the contract. The road is stocked with substantially-built Concord spring wagons, capable of carrying, conveniently, four passengers with their baggage, and from five to six hundred pounds of mail matter. Permanent stations have been, or are being established at all the places mentioned in the memorandum before referred to; and where, in consequence of the scarcity of water, these are placed far apart, relays of horses and spare drivers are sent forward with the stage to insure its prompt arrival."

The overland coaches were, of course, constantly harassed by bands of America's most hostile Indians.

The Texas stations or stage stands, comprised the Fifth and Sixth Divisions of the route, and it required 126 hours and 30 minutes to make the first trip from Franklin to Fort Chadbourne, and 85 hours and 25 minutes from Chadbourne to Colbert's Ferry, near Preston. At the time of the establishment of the route, according to reports filed in the Post Office Department in Washington, D. C, the logs of the two divisions were given as follows:

#### FIFTH DIVISION

Franklin (El Paso) to Waco Tanks, 30 miles; Cornudos de los Alamos, 36; Pinery, 56; Delaware Springs, 24; Pope's Camp (Pecos River), 40; Emigrant Crossing, 65; Horse Head Crossing, 55; Head of Concho, 70; Camp (-----), 30; Grape Creek, 22; Fort Chadbourne, 30. Total, 458 miles. Time, one hundred and twenty-six hours and thirty minutes.

#### SIXTH DIVISION

"Fort Chadbourne to Valley Creek, 12 miles; Mountain Pass, 16; Phantom Hill, 30; Smith's, 12; Clear Fork (of the Brazos), 26; Franz, 13; Fort Belknap, 22; Murphy's, 16; Jackboro, 19; Earhart's, 16; Conolly's, 16; Davidson's, 24; Gainesville, 17; Diamond's, 15; Sherman, 15; Colbert's Ferry (Red River), 13 1/2. Total, 282 1/2 miles. Time, sixty-five hours and twenty-five minutes."

The newspapers published at the time of the establishment of the old Butterfield Stage Route slightly differ concerning the dates of arrival at different points of the first mail going both east and west. But the following table has been worked out by the author and is reasonably accurate:

First eastbound mail left San Francisco 12:10 A.M., July 14, 1858; arrived at Los Angeles July 17; Fort Yuma, July 20; Tucson, July 23; Franklin (El Paso), July 26; Fort Chadbourne, August 1; Fort Belknap, August 2; Colbert's Ferry (Red River), August 4; Fort Smith, August 5; St. Louis, August 9.

First westbound mail left St. Louis 8:30 A.M., September 16, 1858; arrived at Fort Smith. September 19; Colbert's Ferry, September 20; Fort Belknap, September 22; El Paso, September 30; Tucson, October 2; Fort Yuma, October 5; Los Angeles, October 7; San Francisco, October 10.

Each of the two trips were made within less than twenty-five days and were, therefore, within the contract time.

The papers published at that time realized the importance of this route, and from New York to San Francisco the news of the establishment of this channel of commerce between the east and west was mentioned in practically all the leading periodicals. Speeches at various places were made and cannons fired to celebrate the establishment of this transcontinental line. The President of the United States sent Mr. Butterfield and his associates the following telegram:

"Washington, D. C, Saturday, October 9.  
"John Butterfield, President, etc.

"Sir: Your dispatch has been received. I cordially congratulate you on the result. It is a glorious triumph for civilization and the Union. Settlements will soon follow the course of the road and the East and the West will be bound together by a chain of living Americans, which can never be broken. (Signed) James Buchanan, President of the U. S."

The arrival and departure of these early conveyances, was, indeed, a spectacular affair. Aaron Lasater, B. L. Ham, Joseph Fowler, James Wood and other eye witnesses related that when the coaches reached Jacksboro often the drivers circled the

courthouse square two or three times before the teams could be brought to a stop.

Can we picture the arrival of these early mail coaches, whose passengers were dressed in accordance with the fashions of that day?

**100. Other Overland Stages.** - To give the complete history of all the early stages, like other important events, would fill volumes.

There were several important stage lines established in West Texas before the building of the railroads, in addition to those already mentioned. Stage routes connected most of the important towns and cities, and some of the early forts. Some connected points in Texas with important places in other states. And the quality of the coaches and teams, like the modern means of transportation, was often at a great variance.

Concerning the early stages, H. H. McConnell, in his *Five Years a Cavalryman*, said:

"It was fun to see the stage start for Fort Concho; the driver would mount the box and gather up his lines, Eastburn (the agent) and his clerks each holding a mule by the head; then at a signal they would let go - and off went the team like the wind. The driver, after a spin around the block for a mile or two, would get back to the post office, load up the immense mail, and pull out on a dead run.

"In the 'Settlements' splendid Concord coaches, with four or six horses, carried the mail, and 'dirt-wagons' and 'jerkies' in less thickly settled communities, and the days of staging were in their glory."

The rates of transportation on these early stage vans were usually higher than the present railroad fare. But these overland coaches served a needed purpose and did their part to develop the great west.

**101. Mode of Transportation of Early Emigrants.** – The present work would be incomplete if it failed to mention the mode of transportation of those early pioneers who first settled in West Texas. Many of these early families came from Missouri, Kentucky, Tennessee and other states to Texas in horse, mule or ox drawn vehicles. Others came horseback, and a few walked. In those days oxen were extensively used and a large percentage of the early pioneers came to the West Texas frontier in ox wagons.

**102. Overland Freighting.** - Overland freighting was indeed an integral part of the annual routine of the early settlers. Many of them at first freighted from San Antonio, Houston, Jefferson,

Shreveport and other southern and eastern points. The pioneer from the vicinity of some of the Western posts, and from Throckmorton, Shackelford, Stephens, Young, Palo Pinto, Erath, Comanche, Brown, Coleman, San Saba, Mason, Llano and other West Texas counties often went as far as two hundred miles for supplies. But in later years, numerous frontier towns and villages grew to sufficient size to command most of the local trade.

Ref: Reports of Secretary of War and Commissioner of Indian Affairs, 1846-75; Surviving Old Settlers! Report of the Postmaster-General of United States, 1857-58; Five Years a Cavalryman, by H. H. McConnell.

### **PART III THE FRONTIER FROM ANNEXATION UNTIL THE CESSATION OF INDIAN HOSTILITIES**

#### **CHAPTER VII THE CIVIL WAR AND ITS EFFECT ON THE FRONTIER**

**103. Ordinance of Secession and Its Result.** - The ordinance of secession was adopted by the Texas Convention, February 1, 1861. February 3, Sam A. Maverick, T. J. Devine, P. N. Lockett and J. H. Rodgers were appointed commissioners to confer with General David E. Twiggs concerning the surrender of arms, munitions of war, military posts, etc., then under his control and belonging to the United States. February 5, Henry E. McCulloch was appointed commissioner with a military rank of colonel of the cavalry, to negotiate with the respective commanders at Fort Chadbourne, Camp Colorado, Camp Cooper, Fort Belknap and elsewhere, concerning the surrender of the several posts, including the military supplies. February 16, Texas troops under the command of Col. Ben McCulloch, seized the United States arsenal barracks, etc., at San Antonio, the military headquarters of Texas. February 18, Messrs. Maverick, Devine and Lockett made the following report:

"This morning we effected an arrangement with General Twiggs by which it is agreed that all forts in Texas shall forthwith be delivered up, the troops to march from Texas by way of the coast, the cavalry and infantry to retain their arms, the artillery companies being allowed to retain two batteries of light artillery of four guns each; the necessary means of transportation and subsistence to be allowed the troops on their march toward the coast; all public property to be delivered up."

February 18, Col. W. C. Dalrymple demanded the surrender of Camp Cooper. His communication addressed to Capt. S. D. Carpenter, in command of the post at that time, was as follows:

Old Comanche Agency.  
Near Camp Cooper, February 18, 1861.

Sir: In reply to your communication of this day I have to say that the assemblage of soldiery here has for its object the reduction of Camp Cooper. The State of Texas having, by the action of a convention of the people, virtually renounced her allegiance to the government of the United States, and being here in command of the state troops, and also in command of the citizen soldiery encamped in this vicinity, I shall, in the name of the sovereign state of Texas, demand within twenty-four hours a surrender of the garrison under your command, with all arms, munitions and property of every description heretofore belonging to the United States.

Capt. S. D. Carpenter replied:

"Guided by a spirit of patriotism and loyalty to the Union, and by what I conceive to be the counsels of the most enlightened of statesmen of the nation, and also by what I understand to be the policy of the general commanding the department, after due consultation with the officers of my command, I have determined to surrender this camp to the state of Texas, and if you will submit to me the terms upon which you desire to receive for the state the camp and federal property in my charge, I will then give them an early consideration."

Camp Cooper and the several other posts surrendered to the state authorities at the various times set out in those chapters devoted to army camps. But the task of taking complete charge of federal cantonments was not completed for several weeks.

**104. Battle of the Nueces.** - When Texas withdrew from the Union, a large number of citizens, including Governor Sam Houston, were opposed to secession. This included a large percentage of the German population in Gillespie and adjoining counties. As a consequence, friction soon ensued and bitter feelings arose between the Confederate and Northern sympathizers. And not dissimilar to other conflicts, those opposed to secession were inclined to fight for their own convictions. The feeling became more intense as the Civil War advanced. And since it is the desire of the author to be both judicious and fair, and to present facts as accurately as possible, excerpts from the accounts of both factions are given. For the information of the reader, we first present the following report:

"HDQRS. SUB-MILITARY DIST. OF THE RIO GRANDE,  
"San Antonio, Tex., March 31, 1862.  
"Col. Samuel Boyer Davis,  
"Acting Assistant Adjutant-General:

"Sir: Inclosed you will find a copy of a notice stuck up in a prominent place in this city, written in a German hand, and showing plainly that it was written by a foreigner.

"It may have been by some to array opposition to that character of the population, but it speaks the sentiments of a large portion of the population here, many of whom are doing all they can to injure our cause secretly, and would do so openly if they dared.

"Many Germans and some Americans are leaving here to avoid a participation in our struggle. I have directed the troops to permit none to go to Mexico, unless they have a pass from me, or can produce evidence that they are our friends, and not leaving to avoid doing their duty to the country.

"Most respectfully, your obedient servant,

H. E. McCULLOCH,  
Col. 1st Reg. T. M. R., C. S. P. A., Comdg. S. M. D. of Rio Grande.

#### THE NOTICE

"N E W S

"German brothers, are your eyes not opened yet? After the rich took every picayune away from you, and the paper is worth only one-half what you so hard earned, now that you have nothing left, now they go about and sell you, or throw you out of employment for Dunhaur, who left his wife and children, wants to do the same with you to the poor you might leave. Now is the time to stay the heads of Dunhaur, Maverick, Mitchell and Menger to the last bone. We are always ready. If the ignorant company of Newton fights you, do as you please. You will always stay the d----- Dutchman. Do away with that nuisance and inform everybody the revolution is broke out.

"It is a shame that Texas has such a band. Hang them by their feet and burn them from below.

"This was found sticking up since the letter was written; it was in German, and this is the translation.

McCULLOCH."

The intensified feeling gave rise to the conflict, known as the Battle of the Nueces, which was fought on the headwaters of the Nueces River, and this engagement was reported by Lieut. C. D. McRae, as follows:

"August 10, 1862 - Affair on the Nueces River near Fort Clark, Texas

"Report of Lieut. C. D. McRae, Second Regiment Texas Mounted Rifles.

San Antonio, Tex., August 18, 1862.

"Sir: I have the honor to report, for the information of the general commanding, the result of a scout under my command,

consisting of detachments from Captain Donelson's company, Second Regiment Mounted Rifles; Captain Duff's company, Texas Partisan Rangers; Captain Davis' company of state troops, and Taylor's battalion; amounting in the aggregate to 94 men, rank and file.

"I left camp on the morning of the 3rd instant on the Pedernales and proceeded up the South Fork of the Guadalupe River.

"On the morning of the 6th instant struck the trail of a party of horsemen, numbering, as I suppose, from 60 to 100; pursued the trail in a southwesterly direction for four consecutive days, and on the evening of the 9th instant, about 3 o'clock, my advance guard reported a camp in sight on the headwaters of the Western Fork of the Nueces River. I immediately diverged from the trail to the right, secreting my command in a canyon about two and one-half miles from the enemy, and at once proceeded, in company with Lieutenants Homsley, Lilly, Harbour and Bigham to make a careful reconnaissance of the position of the enemy's encampment, which we were fortunate enough in effecting without being discovered. Returned to camp, and proceeded to make my dispositions for an attack at daylight on the following morning.

"Accordingly, at 1 o'clock that night, I moved my command to within 300 yards of their camp, where I divided my command into two equal divisions, placing one under the command of Lieutenant Homsley, whom I directed to take position on the right of the enemy, in the edge of a dense cedar-brake, about 50 yards from their camp, which he succeeded in doing without detection. In the meantime I had had equal success in the obtaining another cedar-brake with my division within about 40 yards of the enemy, on their left. These movements were accomplished about an hour before daylight. Shortly after having secured our positions a sentinel on his rounds came near the position of Lieutenant Homsley's division, which he had the misfortune to discover; whereupon he was shot dead by Lieutenant Harbour, which caused an alarm in the enemy's camp, and a few shots were exchanged between the parties, and all became quiet again for the space of half an hour, when another sentinel hailed us on the left, and shared the fate of the first. It being still too dark for the attack, I ordered my men to hold quietly their positions until daylight. The enemy in the meantime were actively engaged in preparing to resist us. The moment it became light enough to see I ordered the attack to be made by a steady and slow advance upon their position, firing as we advanced until within about 30 paces of their line, when I ordered a charge of both divisions, which was executed in fine style, resulting in the complete rout and flight of the enemy.

They left on the field 32 killed. The remainder fled, scattering in all directions through the many dense cedar-brakes in the

immediate vicinity. From the many signs of blood I infer many of those escaping were seriously wounded.

"We captured 83 head of horses, 33 stands of small-arms, 13 six-shooters, and all their camp equipage, and provisions for 100 men for ten days. The arms I turned over to the commanding officer at Fort Clark. The horses are en route to this place. The provisions were consumed by my command.

"Although the surprise and rout of the enemy was complete, I regret to state it was not unattended with loss on our part. We had two killed on the field and 18 wounded.

"The fight occurred about 20 miles north of Fort Clark, to which point I sent for assistance, both surgical and transportation, for my wounded, which was promptly forwarded by the commanding officer, Captain Carolan, and Assistant Surgeon Downs, to whom I am greatly indebted for many kind attentions to myself and command, as also to Mr. D. H. Brown. My wounded are all well provided for and are doing well.

"I have learned from one of the party whom we fought, captured some four or five days subsequent to the fight, that the party was composed of 63 Germans, one Mexican and five Americans (the latter running the first fire), all under the command of a German by the name of Fritz Tegner. They offered the most determined resistance and fought with desperation, asking no quarter whatever; hence I have no prisoners to report.

"My officers and men all behaved with the greatest coolness and gallantry, seeming to vie with each other in deeds of daring chivalry. It would be invidious to attempt to draw any distinctions when all did their part most nobly and gloriously.

"Enclosed find a list of killed and wounded of each company.

"I remain, with great respect, your obedient servant,

C. D. McRAE,

First Lieut., Second Regt. Texas Mounted Rifles, Comdg. Scout.  
To Maj. E. F. Gray,  
A. A. G., Sub-Military District of the Rio Grande."

From the report of this conflict, made by John W. Sansom, we take the following:

"In portions of West Texas, and notably in the counties of Gillespie, Kerr and Kendall, and in localities of Medina, Comal and Bexar Counties, the opposition to a severance of the Union remained unchanged by the election, and but for wise counsel, might have produced more and bloodier strife than there was

between those who held fast to the Union and those who transferred their allegiance to the Southern Confederacy. That this opposition was composed in large numbers of Germans, resident in the counties and sections named, is true; and it is also true that they were then as now citizens of the State of Texas and of the United States of America, by birth and adoption, and had every right as Americans to continue faithful to their convictions. That the wise counsel needed was not lacking, is demonstrated by the fact that shortly after the promulgation of the Ordinance of Secession a "Union Loyal League" was organized in June, 1861, by representatives from the sections named.

"Its object and purpose, not to create or encourage strife between Unionists and Confederate sympathizers, but to take such action as might peaceably secure its members and their families from being disturbed and compelled to bear arms against the Union, and to protect their families against the hostile Indians. Only eighteen persons were present at the first and initial meeting, but these were the chosen representatives from as many different sections. Each of these bound himself by a solemn vow not to bear arms against the Federal Government, and each was appointed by the body as a committee of one whose duty it was to persuade others to join the league and make the same pledge. Then the eighteen dispersed and went to work so diligently and with such success, that on July 4, 1862, several hundred male Unionists met on Bexar Creek in Gillespie County, and proceeded to perfect the organization. Among other measures taken up was the organization of three companies, to-wit: The Gillespie County Company, Jacob Kuechler, captain, Valentine Homan, lieutenant; The Kendall County Company, E. Kramer, captain, Hugo Deneger, lieutenant, and the Kerr County Company, Henry Hartman, captain, Phil G. Temple, lieutenant. Having elected company officers, the three companies then elected Fritz Tegener as major to command the battalion. In addition to the foregoing action, an advisory board of which Edward Degener, Esq., since a member of Congress from Texas, and others of the members, was appointed and a joint meeting of the advisory board and the officers immediately held. Then the companies were dispersed to await such orders as further developments might require.

"A few days later Capt. Henry Hartman, Lieut. Phil G. Temple and other members of the American Company left Texas and went to New Orleans by way of Mexico. Several other members were killed by Duff and company at their homes later.

"Up to the date of the meeting on Bear Creek, there had been no friction between the Unionists and Confederate authorities. But about the 20th day of July, 1862, Major Tegener while at work in his grist and saw mills received information that the general then in chief command in the State of Texas, had declared the

counties of Gillespie, Kendall, Kerr, Edwards and Kimble to be in open rebellion against the Confederate States of America, and had ordered Col. James M. Duff to take such prompt and vigorous measures as, in his judgment, were necessary to put down the rebellion in said counties. Major Tegener at once called a meeting of the advisory board of the league, and when they assembled, as an assurance to the Confederate military authorities that no armed conflict was to be expected, and that all Unionists unwilling to submit to Confederate rule, be invited and advised to meet Major Tegener at a point on the headwaters of Turtle Creek in Kerr County, on the 1st day of August, and accompany him into Mexico.

"On the 25th of July, Hon. Edward Degener came to my house on Carry's Creek, and communicated to me the facts concerning the organization of the Union Loyal League, and the recent action of its officers and Advisory Board and the reasons therefor. He also informed me of the intention of his two sons to accompany Major Tegener into Mexico, and said that if I wanted to go and could make my arrangements in time, he would be glad if I would go as their guest. Although I had previously decided to go to Mexico by a different route, I changed my mind and accepted Mr. Degener's kind invitation, and having settled my home affairs went with his sons to the meeting place on Turtle Creek, arriving there on the 31st of July.

"Assembled there and recognizing Major Tegener as their leader were about eighty men. In the afternoon of the following day, August 1, 1862, sixty-one of these, including myself and Major Tegener, set out for the Rio Grande with the intention of crossing over into Mexico. Believing, as did the major and most of the party that they had eluded the Confederate troops, known to be hunting for them, we pursued our way slowly and very much at our leisure, about fifteen miles a day on the average being made. Later, but alas too late to be of service to us, it was learned that a man by the name of Burgeman, who had been at many of the meetings and had been confided in as a true Unionist, had betrayed to the Confederates the place of meeting and the route to be taken. Burgeman was not a resident of any of the counties from which the members of our party came, and subsequent developments gave us reason to believe that while associating with Unionists he was acting as a spy in the employ of the Confederates.

"But suspecting neither betrayal nor pursuit, Major Tegener, while moving on steadily, made no haste. On the eighth day we fell in with four men, Tom Scott, W. E. Scott, Howard Henderson and William Hester. Being solicited by Major Tegener to join us, they replied that as the Nueces River was not far distant, they would accompany us that far certainly, and that once arrived there, might decide to go on with us to Mexico. We made the Nueces River early in the morning of August 9, pitched camp about one hundred and fifty yards west of the stream in a

tolerably open place under cedar trees so scattering as not to obstruct the breeze. Still not even suspecting we were being pursued, and least of all that an overpowering force was close on our heel, no special precautions were taken against surprise. Although two men were detailed as guards, it was more for the purpose of keeping our horses together and on good pasturage than for protection of our party against the sudden and unexpected approach of enemies. Deer, turkeys and other game were abundant in the country where we were."

After detailing his being on guard duty, Mr. Sansom continues:

"I had not undressed when I lay down, but had slept, as soldiers express it, "on my arms," so rising at once, I followed the guard, Mr. Leopold Bauer. When we had gone about sixty yards, he in front and I about twenty feet behind him, he entered a dense cedar-brake and, as he entered, was, without being hailed, shot dead by a Confederate lying in ambush at that point. I replied to the shot by fire instantly at sixty or more Confederates who at the sound of the first gun rose from their blankets and rushed pell-mell over a space of open ground to a part of their command which lay under the cedars some sixty yards south of the place where Bauer was killed. The shot that killed Bauer alarmed the camp, and fast and furious firing began between the contending parties. At its very beginning, Ernest Bosler, a Unionist guard who unluckily stood between the two fires, was killed, but whether by friend or foe will never be known. I saw him fall and know that he fell fighting. A moment later the Confederates made a charge upon the Unionists which was gallantly repulsed, and a counter-charge made upon the Confederates. While repulsing the advance of the Confederates, or during the counter-charge, Major Tegener was seriously wounded in two places, and two members of his command also received wounds. I think there was up to this time a hundred shots exchanged, then came a lull of an hour during which there was but an occasional shot fired.

"The camp of the Unionists had been approached by the Confederates from the east and south. According to my watch the battle began a few minutes after three o'clock a.m., two hours sooner, I have reason to think, than the Confederates intended it should begin."

The Germans then withdrew to a place of greater safety according to the report of Mr. Sansom, and were again attacked by the Confederates, who were successful in routing the Union sympathizers. The result of this engagement is summarized by Mr. Sansom, as follows:

"To recapitulate: Nineteen Unionists were killed in the camp on the Nueces River, nine were killed after that battle was over and the Unionists dispersed, six were killed in an attempt to cross over into Mexico, and eleven joined the Union Army, making

forty-five of the sixty-five engaged in the battle. The others, some went into Mexico, some to California and some returned to their homes and secreted themselves thereabout."

**105. Frontier Conditions.** - It is, of course, the intention of the author to present a chronological account of the history of the early frontier. Repetition, however, is avoided as much as possible for the purpose of conserving space. As a consequence, since from time to time in our account of the Indians we shall refer to the conditions along the frontier, and give a more detailed account of the military organizations, it will suffice to give only a general description of the conditions along the West Texas frontier and border during the dark days of the Civil War.

Texas, of course, furnished thousands of able soldiers to the Southern Confederacy, and as a consequence several regiments were formed. Many troops were sent East, but it was necessary to leave a large number at home for the purpose of Protecting the State from invasion by Federal forces and to check the hostile Indians. West Texas, needless to say, contributed its pro rata part to these military organizations.

In many instances the women and children were left in destitute circumstances and without ample protection. Then it was necessary as we have already seen, to place a large number of soldiers along the border and frontier. The frontier regiment was organized and soldiers stationed approximately every thirty miles from the Red River to the Rio Grande.

Troops under H. E. McCulloch, John S. Ford, John R. Baylor, Colonel Bourland and others also saw service along the frontier and Mexican border during the Civil War.

The enlistment of men in the military service, together with the constant depredations of the Indians, soon caused a chaotic condition along the frontier. Supplies were hard to obtain, and at times, there were instances when the people extracted salt from the dirt in the smokehouses. But "saltworks" in numerous places greatly alleviated this condition. For a time it appeared that the abandonment of many parts of West Texas was inevitable. Clay and Wichita Counties and a few other sections were, in fact, actually abandoned.

**106. Days of Reconstruction.** - The status of conditions and suffering during the Civil War did not abate after its close, but continued for a considerable period of time. Federal forces took charge of affairs in Texas and General Granger placed in command. Andrew J. Hamilton, June 17, 1865, was appointed provisional governor. He in turn appointed other provisional officers. All officers were required to take a rigid Oath of allegiance to the Union. Due to the antipathy of the people towards the provisional government, many persons were unwilling to take the prescribed oath.

Governor Hamilton ordered an election to be held June 8, 1866, for the purpose of electing delegates to a convention designed to form a new constitution for Texas. The convention met February 10 following, and James W. Throckmorton chosen as president. The convention adjourned April 2, after drafting a few organic laws. The new constitution, at an election held June 4, 1866, was ratified by the voters of Texas. But it was March 30, 1870, before an act finally passed Congress, accepting the new constitution and senators and representatives from Texas.

During the intervening time, the frontier of Texas was in a state of suspension. Federal soldiers and officers had control of affairs and charge of government bureaus, including state, district and county offices. In certain instances county records were moved to adjoining counties. Commercial activities were also greatly retarded.

Ref: Confed. Rec'ds. on file in War Dept., Wash., D. C., and Adj.-Gen. office at Austin, Texas; Series 1 of a set of U. S. bulletins entitled Union and Confed. Recds, of the War of the Rebellion; Surviving old settlers; 40 Yrs. at El Paso, by W. W. Mills; Battle of the Nueces, by Jno. W. Sansom; Repts. of Sec. of War, 1866-70.

#### **PART IV COUNTY ORGANIZATION AND COUNTY HISTORY**

##### **SECTION 107. - CREATION OF NEW COUNTIES**

Texas was originally an open and unorganized territory and the home of thousands of Indians. Then the Spanish and French arrived, and later the colonists from the United States and Europe. The settlements in 1836 were still confined to Eastern and Southern Texas, and to the El Paso district. Practically all of the territory covered by the present work was wild, open and unsettled.

After the Declaration of Independence of Texas, in 1836, several counties were created and organized in the settled sections of the State. And much or all of the West Texas territory was at first under the jurisdiction of a few of these eastern counties.

Red River County was created in 1836 and organized in 1837, and much of the North Texas territory was placed under its jurisdiction. But when Fannin County was created the following year from Red River County, the territory to the west was placed under Fannin. Then, in turn, Cooke County was created in '48 from Fannin, and Montague in '57 from Cooke. Likewise Robertson County was created in 1837 from Milam, Navarro in 1846 from Robertson, and Hill in 1853 from Navarro. McLennan County was also created from Milam in 1850, Bosque from

McLennan in 1854, and Johnson from Hill and Bosque the same year.

But on several occasions, when a new county was created, the legislature failed to provide that unorganized territory farther west be placed under the jurisdiction of the newly created county. Take for example, Palo Pinto County. When Navarro County was created, a portion of Palo Pinto County north of the Brazos River belonged to Navarro. Later the same territory was placed under Hill County. But when Johnson was created in 1854 no mention was made of the unorganized territory to the west and northwest. The territory to the south of the Brazos was originally a part of Milam County, then placed under McLennan in 1850, and given to Bosque in 1854. Consequently, when Palo Pinto County was created two years later, it evidently was carved out of Hill and Bosque Counties, since none of the western territory was assigned to Johnson.

Since the territory placed under the jurisdiction of the several counties was never definitely defined, instances arose at times when it was exceedingly difficult to determine to which county such territory really belonged. Take Palo Pinto County again, for example. Its territory in 1854 belonged to both Hill and Bosque County. In 1853, to Navarro and McLennan County; in 1846 to 1850, Navarro and Milam County; in 1837 to 1846, Robertson and Milam County, and 1836 to 1837 to Milam County. But when Parker County was created in 1855, the legislature incorporated into the creating act a provision to the effect that all territory to the west of Parker County originally given Tarrant, should be under the jurisdiction of Parker. But when Tarrant County was created, it seems that the western territory was not placed under its jurisdiction. Then since Tarrant County apparently had no jurisdiction over the territory later created into Palo Pinto, it appears as a matter of law, Parker acquired only such jurisdiction that Tarrant County possessed. Then the territory evidently belonged to Hill and Bosque, or the counties above named, during the above dates.

To be sure when Palo Pinto County was created in 1856, it ceased to be undefined territory and the legislature expressly stated that this county be attached to Parker for judicial purposes, until organized. But that, of course, is an entirely different thing. The placing of an unorganized county already created, under another for judicial purposes is one thing, and giving a county jurisdiction over many miles of western territory not yet blocked into counties is an entirely different thing. But it will be readily seen that at times it was difficult to really determine to which county a certain strip of territory really belonged, and those who filed on lands in such territory before the creation of many of the West Texas counties, often stumbled over this same question. This difficulty, however, was somewhat alleviated in certain instances, by the creation of land

districts. These land districts often extended for many miles and included a vast amount of territory.

### **SECTION 108. - BEXAR COUNTY**

Much has already been said of Bexar County and its complete history would fill this volume. But the annals of all ages do not record a more glorious history than has been enacted in or near San Antonio.

When the Spanish began to colonize Southern and Eastern Texas, San Antonio, from the beginning, assumed the role of being one of the most important centers of activity in the Southwest. And excepting only a few short intervals this city and Bexar County have held this commanding position in the affairs of the State up to the present time.

Bexar County was organized in 1837 and at the time and many years afterwards its territory extended as far as the plains of West Texas. During the early days it was not only headquarters for military districts of the Southwest, but also a commercial center and supplied necessary commodities for the settlers for many miles over the frontier.

Early Population: In 1850, 6,052; in 1860, 14,454; in 1870, 16,043. There were 419 negroes in Bexar in 1850; 1,397 in 1860, and 2,303 in 1870.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters: In 1851, Mineral Springs, John Sutherland; San Antonio, John Bowen; Trier, James Head. In 1855, Gibola, J. M. Hill; Fort Davis, T. G. Pitcher; Fort McKavitt, E. D. Land; Maysville, Samuel Fryon; Post Oak, Claiborne Rector; Sabinal, T. B. Hammer; San Antonio, John Bowan; Southerland Springs, John Sutherland. In 1859, Fort Davis, Alexander Young; Fort Lancaster, James Gaulwell; Leal, W. P. Kerr; Leon Springs, Ferdinand Simon; Lodi, S. T. Cook; Post Oak, C. P. Henderson; San Antonio, H. L. Radaz; San Lucas Springs, J. G. Adams; Selma, M. H. Murchison; Sutherland Springs, Robert Goode; Tenaha, Thomas G. Gardiner. In 1870, Camp Stockton, Graytown, Leon Springs, San Antonio, Selma.

### **SECTION 109. - TRAVIS COUNTY**

The complete history of Travis County, like that of Bexar, cannot be fully given without giving a detailed history of Texas. This county was created from Bastrop in 1840, and organized in 1843. It was named in honor of William E. Travis. The county seat was named for Stephen F. Austin and was selected as a site for the state capital in 1838. At the time Travis County was organized it was on the extreme frontier. Buffalo and Indian were still found within a few miles at the city.

William Barton was among the first settlers and settled at Barton Springs in 1836. Reuben Hornsby and family settled Hornsby's Prairie the same year. In 1838, Waterloo, a small

village, was established on the Colorado. The following year the city of Austin, then a frontier village, was founded.

Noah Smithwick, Dr. Anderson and son, William Anderson, Alexander, William James, John Hamilton, Dan Shelf, James Dodd, Joseph and James Manor, Mrs. Scott and daughter, William Matthew, George, Richard and Joseph Duty, John F. Webber and others were among the first settlers of Travis County.

One of the first mail routes extended from La Grange to Austin and stopped at Webber's Prairie. It required twenty-five cents postage to carry each letter. So naturally, the pieces of first class mail were few in number. Peter Carr was the first mail carrier.

The Mormons, under the leadership of Lyman Wight, came to Travis County in 1839 and settled first at Webber's Prairie. These Mormons built Travis County's first county jail. Later they moved their village to the falls about six miles above Austin, and established the first mill, but the destructive waters of the Colorado soon demolished the old mill. The ruins were purchased and the mill rebuilt by Parson Dancer, who was afterwards murdered by the Indians in Llano County. This mill was again several times destroyed by the mad waters of this mid-Texas stream. Concerning the building of the city of Austin. Noah Smithwick said: "Although there had not been a tree felled anywhere in the vicinity of the city of Austin prior to the location of the capitol there, as soon as the seat of government was established in the new log cabin provided for its reception, people began to gather around it."

Martin Moore and one Blessin were among the first merchants of Austin. Michael Ziller built one of the first stone structures and Lamar Moore erected one of the first brick buildings. The governor's mansion at that time was a cabin made of pine logs.

The Texas capitol was moved from Houston to Austin in 1840. But during 1842, Gen. Rafael Vasquez and General Woll invaded Texas territory. Other invasions were thought to be impending. As a consequence, President Sam Houston, his cabinet and the Congress of Texas removed to Houston. A special session convened in the latter city June 27, 1842. The people of Austin and vicinity, however, became infuriated and refused to permit the removal of the records. A vigilant committee was organized and the records seized, boxed and placed under guard. Forces were organized at Bastrop to prevent the passage of the government archives through that little city. But conditions became more stabilized by 1845, and again the machinery of government was functioning smoothly in Austin.

In 1856 there were three papers published in Austin, namely: State Times, Intelligencer and State Gazette.

Early Population: In 1850, 2,336 whites, 11 free negroes and 791 slaves; in 1860, 4,931 whites, 13 free negroes, and 3,136 slaves; in 1870, 8,505 whites and 4,647 negroes.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters: In 1851, Austin, S. J. Haynie; Gilleland Creek, Stephen Boyce; Webber's Prairie, G. A. Gamble. In 1855, Austin, B. F. Johnson; Bluff Springs, W. S. Smith; Case's Mills, Sherman Case; Gilleland, Stephen Boyce; Merriltown, Nelson Merrill; Webberville, Wesley Smith. In 1859, Austin, William Rust; Bluff Springs, W. S. Smith; Case's Mills, Sherman Case; Gilleland Creek, Elijah Hansborough; Hornsby, W. W. Hornsby; Merriltown, Nelson Merrill; Webberville, J. W. Brown.

### **SECTION 110. - COMAL COUNTY**

Comal County was created March 24, 1846, out of Travis, Bexar and Gonzales County. It was named for the Comal River. By an act approved the same day, New Braunfels, at the junction of the Comal and Guadalupe Rivers, was made county seat. Many early settlers of this section were Germans, who were industrious and prosperous, considering their surroundings. This splendid little county lies in one of the most beautiful parts of the State, and the splendid country homes, orchards, fine little cities adorned with numerous churches and tall church steeples, stone structures, etc., even at the present time, are exceedingly interesting and picturesque. New Braunfels was laid out and settled in 1845 by German emigrants under Prince De Salms, who was connected with Fisher and Miller's Colony. A temporary location was made at this place on account of Indians. But the settlement proved to be permanent.

In 1856, the *Veitung*, a German newspaper, was published both at New Braunfels and San Antonio.

Early Population: 1850, 1,662 whites and 61 slaves, total 1,723; in 1860, 3,837 whites and 193 slaves, total 4,030; in 1870, 4,306 whites and 377 negroes, total 5,283.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters: In 1851, New Braunfels, C. Thomas. In 1865, Sisterdale, Ottoman W. Behr. In 1859, Boerne, August Staffel; Crain's Mills, J. J. Luckey; Hodge's Mills, Neill Robison; New Braunfels, Mrs. Louise Benner; Settler's, Henry Satter; Sisterdale, E. Degener; Smithson's Valley, B. F. Smithson; Spring Branch, Louis Willke.

### **SECTION 111. - DENTON COUNTY**

Denton, not unlike other adjoining North Texas counties, was populated early because of Peter's Colony. In fact, as we have previously related, in 1848 an office of Peter's Colony was stationed at Stewartsville; and previously Peter's Colony also maintained an office in the Bridges settlement on Office Branch as early as 1844, while Texas was yet a republic. A commissary

or store was also maintained in the Bridges settlement for the benefit of the early colony. The above settlement, one of the oldest if not the oldest in Denton County, was located about 1843 near the lines of Denton, Collin and Dallas County.

The Holford Prairie Settlement near Lewisville originated about 1844. John W. King, John and James Holford, for whom the prairie was named, Jesse and William Gibson, Owen and Hall Medlin were among the early settlers of this community.

In 1844 the Stewart Creek Settlement was started in the southeastern part of the county. Among the early settlers of this section were: Isaac T. Stewart, L. T. and Lewis H. Higgins, William, Jake and John Bitter, James, Jack and Sam Charming, Tom, Jack and W. T. Fouts, W. R. Sutler, Joe Dudley, James F. and F. E. Cheneworth, Sam T. Higgins, Dr. Delia and Charley Newton, J. B. Shelton, Rev. James E. McWhorter, Elder H. Kerr, Jake Riley, Ben Strahan, Joe and Abe Stover, J. L. Sparks, S. A. Venters and others.

Kit King, family and mother settled near King's Ford on the Little Elm in 1844; John, George and Jack Shahan and father; J. O., C. C, J. L. and W. H. Dickson settled Shahan Prairie in about 1845. The first post office of this county was established the same year at Kit King's residence.

Chinn's Chapel Settlement started about 1845. The Medlin Settlement was settled two years later. The Medlins and Eads were among the first settlers.

The Pilot Point community started about 1846. The Eddlemans and Elmores were among the first settlers of this section.

The Sullivan Settlement started about 1847 and among the early settlers were John and Dan Strickland. The Sullivans settled there in 1850.

The Teel Community was started in about 1850 and Peter Teel and family were among the first settlers.

The Hawkins Settlement was founded in about 1853. Rev. E. Bates, W. H. Bates, Harry Hawkins and others were among the first settlers. Then there were, of course, other citizens who came as early and were in every way as honorable as these, but we are unable to give a roster of all the early settlers of all the early counties.

Denton was created from Collin in 1846, shortly after annexation. By virtue of an act approved April 11, 1846, creating the county, John W. King, Joseph W. Conner, Joseph Turner, John Ramsey and Jesse Gibson were appointed commissioners to select two places within three miles of the center of the county to be run as candidates for county seat.

The legislature also provided that the place selected should be called "Pinkneyville." The election resulted in the selection of a site about one and one-fourth miles south of east of the present location.

The first officers of the county were: Joseph Turner, chief justice; Michael Ransom, district clerk; John W. King, county clerk, Wm. Garvin, sheriff; James Holford, Ramsey, J. Waggoner and J. Weldon, county commissioners. John T. Mills, district judge, held the first district court under a large post oak tree.

In 1848 the county seat was moved to Alton, about four miles southeast of Denton. Water was not immediately found, so the seat of justice was again moved. This time it was located on Hickory Creek, about five miles south of Denton, where water was more plentiful. A courthouse about twenty feet square containing a puncheon floor, board doors and a "stick-and-mud" chimney, was erected. The seats of this courthouse consisted of split log benches and this was the first courthouse ever erected in Denton County. This location was also known as Alton.

But in November of 1856 the location of the county seat was again changed, and the present site of Denton selected. The records, however, were not transferred until April of the following year. The first sale of lots of Denton occurred in January, 1857. Denton Creek, Denton County and the city of Denton were named for John B. Denton, who was killed by Indians May 22, 1841.

The first courthouse in Denton, then a mere village, was erected in 1857 on the north side of the square, but it burned in December, 1875. Denton County, however, during May of the following year contracted with J. H. Britton to build a \$40,000 brick building. This building was condemned and replaced in 1895 with the present courthouse which cost \$147,000.

James E. Ferguson, George Tittle, Randalls, Hammons, J. A. Freeman, John Holford, Jesse Portman, Wm. Glenn, J. E. McWhorter, Wm. Gregory, Barnett and William F. Ware, Wm. E. Bates were some of the early ministers of Denton County.

One of the first churches of Denton County was Holford's Prairie Hall.

Shelton Luttrell and Bettie Dierce were reported to be the first to marry in Denton County. According to reports they were married by Rev. Hammons without a license about the 24th or 25th of December, 1844, two years before this county was organized. But four years later they were able to obtain a license and the rites of matrimony were again solemnized for this splendid couple.

Around each of the more thickly populated sections of the county, schools, stores, etc., also made their early appearance.

Early Population: In 1850, 631 whites and 10 slaves, total 641; in 1860, 4,780 whites and 251 slaves, total 5,031; in 1870, 6,751 whites and 500 negroes, total 7,251.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters: In 1851, Alton, S. A. Vinters; Denton Creek, W. Ramsower. In 1855, Alton, W. M. Roark; Clear Creek, Ephriam Myers; Lewisville, T. J. Dorsett; Little Elm, C. C. King; Mud Spring, Charles Medlin. In 1859, Alton, J. L. Lovejoy; Clear Creek, E Myers; Denton, J. M. Smoot; Lewisville, T. J. Dorsett; Little Elm, C. C. King; Pilot Point, J. D. Walcott; Spear's Mill, Wm. Spears; Steward's Creek, J. J. Sparks.

### **SECTION 112. - GILLESPIE COUNTY**

Gillespie County was a product of Fisher and Miller's Colony and much of its early history has already been related. This county was created out of Bexar County territory by an act of the legislature approved February 23, 1848. Originally the county embraced much more territory than it does today, and was named for Capt. Robert A. Gillespie, who fell in the Battle of Monterey. Fredericksburg was designated by statute as the county seat.

The act creating Gillespie County provided that the chief justice of Comal County order an election to be held in Fredericksburg the first Monday in June, 1848, for the purpose of electing the first officers.

Gillespie, one of the oldest of the frontier counties, in many respects is one of the most interesting. Due to excessive advertising, many nationally known places are frequently visited by tourists in preference to other places of greater interest, but not so well advertised. Gillespie County belongs to the latter group. Many people travel a thousand miles or more to see things even less interesting than can be seen in Gillespie and adjoining counties along Pedernales, Llano, Guadalupe and other southwestern streams. The author's several trips to that section while compiling data to write the present work, were real vacations. And nowhere was he more hospitably received and treated than by the early pioneers of this part of Texas. The historic old stone structures, the splendid country homes, orchards, vineyards, mills and pleasing landscapes in this section indeed present many attractive pictures.

Gillespie County also boasts of an early Mormon colony. Elder Lyman Wight and his followers in 1847 drifted to the Pedernales and established a colony about four miles south of Fredericksburg. At this place these Mormons established a store, saw mill, grist mill, cabinet shop, and started a prosperous community. In 1850 the Mormon leader, Elder Lyman Wight,

was elected chief justice of the county. The colony, however, was abandoned three years later.

The territory covered by the present work is so extensive there is, of course, much of the local county history that cannot be mentioned. But it would certainly be an injustice to Gillespie County not to mention one or two of her scenic wonders.

The Enchanted Rock, known to prospectors, hunters and rangers long before the arrival of the first settlers, is indeed one of the natural wonders of the Southwest. Gillespie County also boasts of a huge balanced rock only a few miles from Fredericksburg.

Early Population: In 1850, whites 1,235, slaves five, total 1,240; in 1860, whites 2,703, slaves 33, total 2,736; in 1870, whites 3,489, negroes 77, total 3,566.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters: In 1851, Fredericksburg, Theodor Specht. In 1855, Fredericksburg, T. C. Doss. In 1859, Cherry Spring, Wm. Von Marschall; Fredericksburg, Ottocar Muller; Grape Creek, Wm. Luckenbach; Westbrook, Thomas M. Smith.

### **SECTION 113. - HAYS COUNTY**

Hays County, which is located in one of the picturesque parts of the State, was created from Travis County by an act approved March 1, 1848, and named for Capt. John C. (Jack) Hays, a noted Indian fighter. San Marcos was made county seat by statute and is located near the famous San Marcos Spring. This county began to settle about 1844.

Early Population: In 1850, 259 whites, 128 slaves, total 387; in 1860, 1,329 whites, 797 slaves, total 2,126; in 1870, whites 2,872, negroes 1,217, total 4,088.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters: In 1855, Manchac, John M. Duncan; San Marcos, John S. Owen. In 1859, Cannonville, Albert Hayton; Dripping Springs, R. G. Blanton; Manchac, James M. Bunton; Round Mountain, Joseph Bird; San Marcos, C. Erherd.

### **SECTION 114 - MEDINA COUNTY**

In giving the history of Castro's Colony, much of the early history of Medina County was also related. This county was created from Bexar County by an act approved February 12, 1848, and Castroville made the county seat. The act further provided that the chief justice of Bexar County call an election to be held the second Monday in July, 1848, for the purpose of electing county officers.

Early Population: In 1850, 881 whites, 28 slaves, total 909; in 1860, 1,732 whites, 106 slaves, total 1,838; in 1870, 1,986 whites, 93 negroes, total 2,078.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters; In 1851, Castroville, Henri Castro. In 1855, Castroville, John Vance; D'Hanis. H. J. Richarz; Quihi, Louis Bonle. In 1859, Castroville. John Vance; D'Hanis, H. J. Richarz; New Fontaine, Rowland Goering.

### **SECTION 115. - WILLIAMSON COUNTY**

Like many others, this county was created out of territory which for many years had been known to the early settlers. As early as 1836, Captain Tumlinson and his company of about sixty rangers camped in the county and scouted over the territory. Hornsby's Station, 10 miles below Austin on the Colorado, was then on the extreme frontier, and Austin had not been located. The rangers erected a block house on old Brushy Creek and, no doubt, this was the first house built in Williamson County. It was erected near a spring which became known as Block-house Spring. Indians, buffalo, bear, turkey and a great variety of wild game were plentiful in Williamson County at this time, and for several years to come.

In 1839, Dr. Thomas Kenney, Joseph Barnhart and others erected a second fort on the south side of Brushy at Brushy Cove. And as early as 1841 Davis Chandler. Captain Ladd, Captain Nelson Merrill and Dr. Miller and others settled on Brushy and elsewhere. In 1846 John Berry built a small water mill to grind grain. In the fall of 1848 George W. Glasscock Sr. erected a large mill about three-fourths of a mile below the confluence of the two Gabriels.

In 1847 James G. Harrell, Mark Moses and a few others settled on Brushy about two miles above old Round Rock. The following year Jacob M. Harrell moved into the settlement and established a blacksmith shop on the north side of Brushy and named the location "Round Rock." S. M. Harrell and others erected a log school house at Moss Springs in the summer of 1848 and employed a Mr. Allen to teach the first school, which was about the first school taught in the county. But shortly afterwards Samuel L. Makemson, Dr. D. F. Knight and perhaps others built a log cabin school house on Brushy, and the first school at this early "College" was taught by Geo. W. Laymon.

Perhaps the first store of the county was opened by Nelson Morey, on the north side of Brushy. In 1848 Josiah Taylor opened a little store in the Shiloh School Community. The first post office was likely Georgetown and the second near Rice's Crossing on Brushy. It was known as Blue Hill and James O. Rice was postmaster. R. H. Taliaferro, perhaps, preached the first sermon.

Williamson County was created from Milam and named for Robert M. Williamson, often known as three-legged Willie, because he used a crutch to walk. The county was created by an act of the legislature approved March 13, 1848. This act named John Berry, W. C. Dalrymple, David C. Cowan, Washington Anderson, J. M. Harreil and J. O. Rice, commissioners, to locate two suitable sites not more than five miles from the center of the county to be run as candidates for the county seat, at an election held the first Monday in May, 1848. The present site of Georgetown, which derived its name from George W. Glasscock, who donated the townsite, was selected. The commissioners' court held one of their first meetings under a large live oak tree near the corner of Ninth and Church Streets in Georgetown.

Georgetown was surveyed by Matthias Wilbarger and D. C. Cowen and the first lots sold at public sale July 4, 1848.

The first selection of officers was in August of the same year. The following officers were elected: Greenleaf Fisk, chief justice; Whitfield Chalk, sheriff; George T. William, county clerk; Ira E. Chalk, district clerk; John Gooch, county treasurer, and W. I. Anderson, D. H. McFaddin, Richard Tankersley and Jacob M. Harrell, commissioners.

W. E. Jones convened the first district court October 10, 1848. The court empaneled the following grand jury: Washington Anderson, foreman, B. C. Cowen, William Berry, John Berry Sr., James G. Harrell, Jackson Berry, Calvin Barker, James Standifer, Peter Banta, Thomas Hornsby, Elias Marshall, Abner Gray and Daniel Kimbro. They returned no bills.

Civil case No. 1, styled M. C. Hamilton vs. James O. Rice, a suit involving lands, after being called for trial was continued until March 22, 1849.

The first courthouse, a log cabin about sixteen feet square, fronted on Main Street. The first jail was a two story log house about eighteen feet square.

A newspaper called the "Independent" was published at Georgetown in 1856. A. H. Chalmers and T. P. Hughes, attorneys, were living in Georgetown as early as 1858.

Early Population: In 1850, 1,410 whites, three free negroes, 155 slaves total 1,568; in 1860, 3,638 whites, 891 slaves, total 4,529; in 1870, 5,563 whites, 801 negroes, total 6,364.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters: In 1851, Blue Hill, James O. Rice; Georgetown, Josiah Taylor; San Gabriel, Thomas J. Allen. In 1855, Bagdad, Thomas Huddleston; Blue Hill, James O. Rice; Georgetown, Evan Williams; Pond Spring, T. L. Rutledge; Round Rock, Thomas C. Oatts; San Gabriel, John G. Gordon; Liberty Hill, Wm. O. Spencer.

## **SECTION 116. - COOKE COUNTY**

An act approved March 20, 1848, created Cooke County, which was named in honor of Wm. G. Cooke, an early Texan of much prominence who served on the staff of General Houston in the Battle of San Jacinto, who was quartermaster general of the Republic of Texas in 1839; was in charge of a command of Indian scouts that erected a camp near the present city of Denison in 1840, was one of the commissioners of the Santa Fe expedition in 1842, etc. The act creating the county also provided that the chief justice of Denton County call an election to be held in Cooke County on the first Monday in August, 1848, and that the seat of justice be at the home of Aaron Hill until otherwise provided for by law. The records of Cooke County seem to indicate, however, that considerable difficulty was experienced in putting the county machinery into motion.

But according to the early minutes of the commissioners' court, which are not very distinct, the first order entered of record, was passed at the February term, 1849. It was then ordered that Robert L. Scott act as presiding officer of that particular meeting. The next official act according to these records was the approving of the official bonds of Robert Ekey as tax collector and assessor. Early court proceedings, no doubt, felt the need of necessary court files, etc., for the third order entered of record instructed the county cleric to purchase necessary books and supplies. Notwithstanding the statutory provision and other reports, this meeting of the commissioners' court was unquestionably held at the home of James C. Dickson and not at the home of Aaron Hill for the fourth order of the court to be entered of record provided that the places of meeting be moved from the home of James C. Dickson to that of George Dyster.

It was ordered that an election be held the second Saturday in March, 1849, for the purpose of filling vacancies in county offices. Alexander Boutwell was appointed to preside at the election box in "Beat No. 1," which was at the home of James C. Dickson. Likewise, Richard D. Turner was ordered to preside at the box in "Beat No. 2," which was at the home of George Dyster.

Although the records failed to disclose the proceedings of an early election for officers, nevertheless they do show that Robert Wheeler was chief justice; S. D. Brown, county treasurer; M. Webster, sheriff, and Robert Ekey, tax collector and assessor.

At a meeting of the court held May 5, 1849, Daniel Montague was employed to survey the line between Cooke and Grayson County, and then run fifteen miles west on the line between Cooke and Denton County, and subsequently fifteen miles north to locate the center of the county. The place of the meeting of the commissioners' court was again ordered moved from the

home of George Dyster, in Beat No. 2, to the residence of James C. Dickson, in Beat No. 1.

When the commissioners' court met August 20, 1849, they entered an order providing that the new location of the county seat, known as Liberty, be surveyed as soon as possible and lots be sold September 15, 1849. But there is nothing of record to show the manner of selecting the county seat.

Orders were also entered of record providing for the laying out of roads from Liberty to Alton, the county seat of Denton, and elsewhere. August 22, 1849, Robert Ekey again made bond as assessor and tax collector. James O. Hill qualified as sheriff August 20, 1849. James Martin, treasurer, November 1, 1849; Daniel Montague, surveyor, November 11, 1849; P. D. Turner qualified for justice of the peace, November 20, 1849.

Since Liberty was not surveyed as originally ordered, the court extended the time limit to December 10, 1849, and ordered that the sale of lots be made December 15 of the same year.

But the early records of Cooke County are vague and uncertain. It seems, however, that some trouble was experienced in locating the county seat. So at the August term, 1850, the commissioners' court ordered that five special commissioners be appointed to select two suitable sites for the county seat, and to advertise an election to determine which would be selected. The records apparently do not show whether or not such election was held. Evidently it was, however, for September 23, 1850, the commissioners' court ordered that the title bond of Mary E. Clark to land she donated as a county seat, be approved. Inasmuch as the county authorities discovered there was already a county and town in Texas named Liberty, the new location selected for a county seat was called Gainesville, in honor of General Edmond Pendleton Gaines of the United States Army. Col. Wm. Fitzhugh was commanding a ranging company stationed in Cooke County at this time. He was a warm friend of General Gaines who, November 3, 1814, was voted the thanks of Congress and a gold medal for his gallantry in defeating the British at Erre, during the War of 1812, and who was in charge of the Southern Division of the United States Army with headquarters at New Orleans, during the Texas Revolution. General Gaines died June 6, 1849.

The newly established county seat also had a new installation of county officers August 19, 1850, and the following officers qualified for office: Robert Whelock, chief justice; Alexander Boutwell, sheriff; James C. Dickson, assessor and collector; John Chadwell, treasurer; B. F. Carpenter, coroner; P. D. Turner and Andrew Van Syke, justices of the peace, and William Teel, constable.

The new town of Gainesville also enjoyed a new courthouse, for September 23, 1850, the commissioners' court accepted a structure built for that purpose by Alexander Boutwell, sheriff, and S. D. Brown, county clerk. The records contain the following receipt: "S. D. Brown, received pay by note, twenty-nine dollars for building the courthouse in Gainesville on the 17th day of February, 1851."

When the commissioners' court met September 23, 1850, they also passed an order providing for an early sale of town lots. Since there was some question concerning the legality of selecting a new county seat, an act was passed by the legislature and approved January 26, 1854, providing that "The town of Gainesville, the present seat of justice of Cooke County be, and the same is hereby established the seat of justice of said county."

The commissioners' also contracted for the erection of a second courthouse to be completed in time for the spring term of court, 1853. This building was made of lumber freighted with ox teams from Jefferson, Texas. Its dimensions were 26x30x9 feet, and erected at a cost of \$300. June 21, 1878, a third contract was let for a courthouse that costs \$27,499.

According to the early records, no doubt the first term of district court was held in the fall of 1851.

Only two bills of indictments, one for affray and one for murder, were returned.

The first civil case called for trial was Case No. 1, styled P. G. Boutwell vs. Alexander Boutwell. It was dismissed. Case No. 2, styled Susan Eakay vs. Robert Eakey, was continued.

Henry Bray died January 16, 1841, and was one of the first to die in Cooke County. This, we must realize, was before the establishment of Fort Worth and was before Colonel Marcy returned from Santa Fe through the central part of West Texas.

Hanah Bray, his wife, and six children survived him. Hanah Bray filed application to have his estate probated and this was the first probate case filed and tried in Cooke County. Robert Whelock, chief justice; Stephen D. Brown, county clerk, and M. L. Webster, sheriff, called this case for trial March 26, 1849. Richard L. Turner and James Dickson signed Mrs. Bray's bond for the extraordinary sum of five dollars. John Demarcus, Ramy Dye and L. O. K. Toby were appointed appraisers and made due return of his estate.

A tornado visited Cooke County May 28, 1851, and did its damage and destruction in the vicinity of the present Lindsey. Thomas and Louisa Howeth were killed. They, too, numbered among the first deaths of the county and were the first to be

buried in the Fair View Cemetery. John Ozmont died in 1853 and his daughter died only one month later, and they were the first to be buried in the Ozmont graveyard.

Settlement began in this county as early as 1846, and in that year Jim Martin settled on Spring Creek about one-half mile west of Valley View. Martin Neeley also settled with him at the same time. They were among the first to settle in Cooke County.

Miss Jane Shannon taught one of the first schools of the county. John Turner also taught an early school. One of the first hotels was opened by W. L. Fletcher. John McKee and J. M. Lindsay were among the early lawyers. Rev. Brumock, a Primitive Baptist preacher, was one of the early ministers of Cooke County. Dr. Anderson, Dr. Bomar and Dr. Elliott were among the first doctors of the county.

The Old California Trail or Marcy's Return Home passed through the early village of Gainesville and for many years long caravans of horse and ox drawn wagons and vehicles plod their weary way down California Street and pushed on toward the setting sun. Can we really picture the conditions as they then existed? The reservations were not established until 1855, and Gainesville was the last town the early emigrants reached until they struck El Paso. As we would naturally suppose, some of the early settlers of this county joined the caravans of wagons going to California and went along to seek their fortunes in the gold fields of the Far West.

In 1862 or 1863 a secret chain of citizens opposed to the cause of the Confederacy made their appearance in Cooke County. One of their group was reported to have murdered Colonel Young, thinking he was Colonel Bourland. Jim Young, a son of Colonel Young, was stationed in Oklahoma at the time, and was making preparations for an early battle. But when he heard of the death of his father, he with fifteen hundred men and Colonel Bourland with twelve hundred moved rapidly to Gainesville. When they arrived, forty-three men were arrested, court martialed, condemned, and it has been reported that all were hung to the same limb of an elm tree on Pecan Creek near the present Katy depot in Gainesville. This limb at the time was supported by a fork of a hackberry tree.

#### **SECTION 117. - BELL COUNTY**

The first settlers reached this section as early as 1836. But the War With Mexico and constant Indian deprivations retarded the progress of developing the territory of Bell County and the few settlers in that section moved back to the more populated districts.

The county was created by an act approved January 22, 1850. This act provided that the new county be called Bell, in honor of

P. H. Bell, then governor of Texas, and the chief justice of Milam County was authorized to call an election to elect five commissioners whose duties it was to employ the assistance of a surveyor and locate a suitable site for the county seat. It was the request of the legislature to locate the same as near the center of the county as possible, due regard being given land, timber and water, and to such donations of land citizens offered for the county seat. After the county seat of the new county was located, the chief justice of Milam County was further requested to call an election of county officers. The county was placed in the third judicial district.

Mrs. Matilda F. Allen gave one hundred and twenty acres, which were accepted, to be used as a site for the county seat. She should, therefore, be called the mother of Belton.

The new county seat was called Nolanville, because of Nolan's River. This river was named for the unfortunate Phillip Nolan, but we are in accord with many historians in believing that Nolan's Fort and camp was not on this stream, but on another many miles to the north.

The first officers to qualify for office were: John Danley, chief justice; William Reed, sheriff; John C. Reed, county clerk; Steven Goodman, treasurer; W. D. Eastland, district clerk, and John Taylor, Peter Banta, James M. Cross and James Blair, county commissioners.

The first commissioners' court, according to county records, convened October 8, 1850, in the blacksmith shop of Judge John Stanley. Bell County was divided into four election precincts known as Beats 1, 2, 3 and 4. October 24, 1850, an election was held as well as for other reasons, to ascertain the consensus of public opinion on the compromise between Texas and the United States. This election was held at the following places: At the residence of William Stevens in Beat No. 1; Thomas Tremier, in Beat No. 2; Isaiah Hart, in Beat No. 3, and John Marshall in Beat No. 4, and at A. T. McCorkle at Nolanville and Robert Childers at Fort Gates.

Some of the early orders of the court provided for the establishment of roads to Waco, Georgetown, Cameron, etc.

By an act approved December 16, 1851, in accordance with the request of the commissioners' court, the legislature changed the name of the county seat from Nolanville to Belton.

In 1857, a contract was let for a permanent courthouse to cost approximately \$17,000.00. The court and jury rooms were above; offices below, and were separated by a double hall. This building stood until 1884, when it was replaced with a more elaborate structure.

The first district court convened April 7, 1851. Honorable R. E. B. Baylor presided, and J. F. Crosby, district attorney; W. D. Eastland, clerk, and Wm. Reed, sheriff, were also present and performed their usual duties.

The first grand jury returned six bills of indictments, four for assault and two for theft.

J. N. Houston, D. T. Chamberlin, John Flint, Cyrus Hair, E. Walker, H. E. Bradford, Frank Pendleton, M. N. McElhenny were among the local lawyers who practiced law in Bell County before 1855. W. Y. McFarland, John Henry Brown and X. B. Sanders arrived shortly afterwards.

John Paine opened, perhaps, the first store and Judge John Danley was the first blacksmith. These places of business were erected about 1850.

O. T. Tyler and Caroline Childers received the first marriage license.

Rev. Cox, a Baptist minister, and Rev. James E. Ferguson, a Methodist preacher, preached among the settlements as early as the late 40's. Rev. Wheat, another Baptist minister, and Rev. John Carpenter and James Graves, Methodist ministers, preached in the county shortly after its organization, and these ministers numbered among the first preachers to carry the gospel to Bell County.

Early Population: In 1860, 3,794 whites, 1,005 slaves, total 4,799; in 1870, 8,667 whites, 1,104 slaves, total 9,771.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters: In 1851, Nolansville, W. D. Eastland. In 1855, Belton, T. A. Supple; Howard, James A. Graves; Jena, John Adams; Salado, William Young.

### **SECTION 118. - EL PASO COUNTY**

This county was created by an act approved January 3, 1850. The creating act, among other things, provided that the seat of justice be on the Rio Grande opposite El Paso Mexico, until otherwise provided by law. Again, January 4, 1850, an act was approved which provided that a commissioner be appointed to organize El Paso County. Major Robert S. Neighbors, who was superintendent of Indian affairs in Texas, was appointed for this purpose. And February 16, 1852, an act was passed providing for a separate land district for El Paso.

During the early days the county seat for a time was at San Elizario, about twenty miles below El Paso. Later the county seat was moved to Ysleta, and subsequently to El Paso. At first there was only a small percentage of Americans at El Paso, and all the court proceedings were written in Spanish.

El Paso, not unlike San Antonio, was the center of Spanish activity for a long period previously to the advent of the Americans. In fact, the earliest settlements in Texas were made at and near El Paso. But since the brief history of the El Paso district has already been given, it will not be repeated now.

After the organization of the county, however, the district continued to be noted for its splendid orchards, vineyards, fine wines, irrigation projects, cattle and sheep industry, etc. Perhaps we should also state that many high class Spanish and Mexican citizens were residents of this section, which was one of the most remotely situated of any in the United States.

Supplies were often freighted from the Texas seaport and Texas settlements about five hundred miles to the east, or from St. Louis about fifteen hundred miles to the northeast.

W. W. Mills, in his "Forty Years at El Paso" (1901), gives the following prices of articles during the pioneer days: "One common No. 7 kitchen stove, \$125; ham and bacon 75 cents per pound; coffee, 75 cents per pound; sugar, 60 cents per pound; lard, 40 cents per pound; candles, 75 cents per pound; one-half ream letter paper, \$4; nails, 50 cents per pound; matches, 12 1/2 cents per box; tobacco, \$2 per pound; calico (print), 50 cents per yard."

Can we really picture conditions as they existed in El Paso County during the 50's? The daily activities of the soldiers at Fort Bliss, the arrival of the California wagon trains from a long journey through an Indian-infested territory, the dress, manners and ways of thinking of the early citizens, the type of citizenship, adobe houses, etc., indeed, presented a wild western picture.

The following citizens numbered among the early settlers of El Paso County: J. F. Crosby, district judge; Simeon Hart, mill owner and contractor; Henry J. Cuniffe, merchant; H. S. Gillett, merchant; J. S. Gillett, merchant; Col. Phil Herbert, lawyer; Col. James W. Mogoffin, contractor; Joseph Magoffin; Sam Mogoffin; Anson Mills, engineer; W. W. Mills, clerk; Emmett Mills; Samuel Schutz, merchant; Joseph Schutz, merchant; Col. George H. Giddings, manager San Antonio Mail Co.; H. C. Hall, agent San Antonio Mail Co.; Capt. Henry Skillmen; Brad Dailey; Col. Hugh Stephenson, mine owner and merchant; Uncle Billy Smith, patriarch of the valley; Vicente St. Vrain, merchant; A. B. O'Bannon, deputy collector of customs; William Morton, district attorney; Charles Merritt, manager Hart's mill; Henry C. Cook, lawyer; B. S. Dowell, postmaster; Nim Dowell; Fred Percy; Rufus Doane, county surveyor; Billy Watts, sheriff; Emilio Deuchesne, merchant; Russ Howard, lawyer; A. B. Rohman, merchant; R. L. Robertson, agent Overland Mail Company; Dr. Nangle, agent San Antonio Mail Co.

The county, because of the effect of the Civil War became disorganized, but was reorganized in 1871. For many years Presidio County was attached to El Paso for judicial purposes.

Early population: In 1860. 4,022 whites, 14 free negroes, 15 slaves, total 4,051; in 1870, 3,229 whites, 306 negroes, 136 Indians, total 3,671.

Early Post Offices and Postmasters: In 1855, El Paso, A. C. Hyde; San Elizario, Edwin B. La Fayette. In 1859, El Paso, Benjamin S. Dowell; Fort Quitman, B. J. Dewitt; San Elizario, E. E. La Fayette.

### **SECTION 119. - McLENNAN COUNTY**

This county was organized from territory previously occupied by the Waco, Tehuacana and other tribes of Texas Indians. The Wacos lived in the vicinity of the city of Waco. The Tehuacana lived on the Brazos near the mouth of Tehuacana Creek. As early as 1832 and 1833, the surveyors of Austin, Williams and others made surveys in McLennan County. At that time the nearest settlements were in Burleson and Robertson County. Major George B. Erath, a surveyor, was personally acquainted with the conditions at that time, and stated there were then not over a dozen families living in the two counties. In 1834 settlers located higher up on the river and in 1835 surveyors reached as far northwestward as Fort Graham on the Brazos. That year a Mr. Boyd built the first house ever erected in McLennan County. This little building was located four miles below Waco, occupied by rangers and burned not a great time after it was completed. In 1836 a few homeseekers reached McLennan County, but when Santa Anna invaded Texas territory, the "runaway scape" began, and these settlers retreated farther east and south. The advance of settlements at this time was further retarded by invasions of hostile Indians. In 1837 troops under the command of Capt. T. H. Barron were ordered to move from the falls of the Brazos to the Waco Indian village, where a fort was established. Since it was necessary to cut a road and make a bridge over the Cow Bayou, it required three weeks for the rangers to reach the Waco Village. The Waco Indians shortly before had moved farther up the river. Temporary quarters were erected, but the garrison remained there only about three weeks.

In 1839 Neil McLennan, in company with George B. Erath and others, saw for his first time the beautiful country along the Bosque and located some early surveys for future homes. George B. Erath, a surveyor, assisted in making the locations. Their provisions were soon exhausted, so the party started toward the settlements. When night came they camped. The following morning Mexican hogs were seen and as a consequence the stream upon which Neil McLennan later lived, became known as Hog Creek. In 1846, just after annexation, Neil McLennan moved to his new location, which was then in the Milam land district. He was one of the first, if not the first settler

in McLennan County, after the "runaway scrape;" and it was in his honor the county was named.

Perhaps it will be permissible at this time to relate the manner in which several of the streams of this section received their names. While making early surveys in McLennan County, and elsewhere, George B. Erath and others named many of the important streams many years in advance of the early settlements. Major George B. Erath said:

"Cow Bayou received its name from wild cattle that ranged on it; Bullhide was named from a bull hide which was hung on a tree by an old hunter named Castleman, and which remained there for a number of years; Cottonwood was first called Lower Waco Creek, and has since been changed; Bosque and Aquilla were named by the Mexicans, the former meaning bushy and the latter, eagle; Tehuacana, after the Indian tribe of that name; Childers Creek was named after George Childers, a noted friend of Texas at the beginning of the revolution: one of my men discovered a wasp nest and mistook it for a bee hive and Wasp Creek received its name from that circumstance."

To be sure many of the most important rivers were named by the Spanish.

In 1841, Major George B. Erath surveyed a league of land close to Waco for John M. Stevens, who was also one of the early settlers of Erath County.

A trading house was established about eight miles east of Waco, by David Torrey and George Barnard, who were among the first settlers of the county and who, no doubt, opened the first store.

In about 1846, Neil McLennan, for whom the county was named, established his home on land selected about seven years before. In 1847 Capt. S. P. Ross, Captain Johnson and their commands established a camp near East Waco. Later in the same year they established a camp on the Bosque. In 1847 and 1848, several families settled near East Waco. L. H. Scrutchfield made his home with Neil McLennan in 1847.

In about 1849, George B. Erath received instructions from the local land owners to survey a townsite, to be called Lamartine. The new townsite was surveyed, but George B. Erath, the surveyor, greatly opposed the above name. So May 5, 1849, the new town was named Waco Village, for the Waco Indians. Major Erath gave the following account of his surveying Waco Village, which made the present city of Waco:

"We consulted with the parties interested, and decided to situate the big springs in the center of Main Street. The square, which, by the plans furnished, was to be located several blocks further west and south, was located where it now is. All the

preliminaries being settled, on the morning of March the 1st, 1849, I ran out Block No. 1, and the front of the block opposite. These were as many lots as were wanted. Captain Ross took two or three; George Barnard the corner lot, Puckett one or two. The names of the other parties who invested I have forgotten. Five dollars each was the highest price agreed on for the lots. I then ran off Main Street as far out as Captain Ross' farming lots, which, by contract, he was to have at \$1.25 per acre. The foundations of Waco were laid."

A second sale of lots was made May 6, 1849, and at this sale lots sold for about twice the price of the preceding sale.

The early settlers presented a petition about this time to the Legislature praying for the creation of a new county to be called McLennan. Consequently, January 22, 1850, the same day the governor approved an act creating Bell County, he also signed a bill creating McLennan. The bill appointed Lee R. Davis, Albert Clays, S. P. Ross, John W. Jones and D. E. Landon, commissioners to locate the county seat. The bill further provided that the chief justice of Milam County organize McLennan in conformity with law. The owners of lands and lots in Waco offered the commissioners one-tenth of all lots sold and to be sold, additional lots for public buildings, streets and alleys, 10 feet around the spring, etc., as an inducement to locate the county seat at the Waco Village. The proposition was accepted, and Waco Village, now Waco, became the county seat.

County organization began about August 5, 1850. A temporary courthouse was erected. At the first election about sixty votes, fifty-six Democrats and four Whigs, were cast.

According to the records, the first meeting of the commissioners court convened September 2, 1850. John T. Eubank was chief justice at that time and presided. Lee R. Davis, John Blair and Jackson Puckett were commissioners, J. O. Illingsworth, clerk, and Robert Hulme, sheriff. Each of these officers seemed to be present at this first meeting. As usual, some of the first acts of the court provided for dividing the county into four election precincts, appointing juries of view to select and survey suitable roads to Nolansville (Belton), Austin, Waxahachie and other points.

September 23, 1850, at a cost of \$500, the court contracted with John S. Blair, to build a courthouse, one and one-half stories high. The cost of this courthouse was covered by public subscriptions. S. P. Ross and John S. Blair donated \$339.24 toward the enterprise. The first courthouse was also used as a school building, until 1854. During that year J. W. McCowan for a sum of \$1,800 agreed to complete a jail not later than November 1 of the following year. In 1856, Robert H. Smith, for a sum of \$11,500.00, agreed to build a two-story brick courthouse.

Judge R. E. B. Baylor convened the first court April 14, 1851. This was on Monday and just one week after Judge Baylor convened the first district court in Belton. Honorable J. F. Crosby, district attorney, T. H. Barron, district clerk, and R. H. Hulme, sheriff, were present. J. H. Nowlin, Richard Coke, who afterwards became governor, N. W. Battle, who afterwards became district judge, and Asa Willie, James Willie. J. D. Giddings, D. C. Giddings, who afterwards became a member of Congress, were among the first attorneys in attendance at this court.

C. M. Hubby opened one of the first stores in the county. Walker, Tool and Alexander McCahy opened stores in 1850. Dr. J. H. Mullens was one of the first druggists. Burney and Blair opened one of the first hotels. Mention has already been made of Torrey's Trading House.

In 1850 the Methodists erected a church in Waco and Rev. Joseph P. Sneed became the pastor. The Baptists met May 31, 1851, and perfected an organization. The Presbyterians organized about 1855. Other organizations made their appearance about the same time and a little later.

In 1856 a newspaper called the "Statesman" was published at Waco.

Early population: in 1860, 3802 whites, 9 free negroes, 2395 slaves, total 6206; in 1870, 8861 whites and 4627 negroes, total 13,500.

#### **SECTION 120. - TARRANT COUNTY**

During the early days of the Texas Republic, the Indians were constantly depredating on the settlements. It therefore became necessary to send scouting expeditions into the territory now occupied by Tarrant, Wise, Parker and other Texas counties. General Tarrant, in 1841, was unofficially Tarrant, and perhaps other counties when the Indians killed John B. Denton, for whom Denton County was named.

In 1843, Sam Houston, then President of the Texas Republic appointed a commission to meet and visit the various Indian tribes and invite them to attend a council of peace, to be held at Birds Fort, near old Birdsville. General E. H. Tarrant and G. W. Terrell, were representatives of the President on this occasion.

Consequently, when the Legislature created the county, it was properly named Tarrant, in honor of Gen. E. H. Tarrant, who was born during 1800, in North Carolina. He came to Texas in 1835, was both a member of the Texas Congress and a general in the Texas Army, member of the annexation convention, and was afterwards a member of the Legislature. He died in 1858 in

Ellis County, where he was buried. Approximately seventy years later, however, his remains were removed to Fort Worth.

Tarrant, like several other North Texas counties, was very largely the outgrowth of Peter's Colony. Some of the very first citizens to settle in Tarrant County were William Bird and family, Wade Hampton, Ration, and Cartwright. They came to Texas in 1842, settled near Galloway's Lake, and built a block house, which became known as Bird's Fort.

Edward S. Terrell, who was accompanied by a Mr. Lusk and a Mr. Shackwith, came to the county about 1846. And by the time Fort Worth was established, there were a large number of settlers in the county. The Fort also greatly increased the population.

When Lt. W. H. C. Whiting visited Fort Worth in 1849 on a tour of inspection, he reported that a saw-mill ran by horse power was located nearby; that a practical road led to Preston in Grayson County, and that houses were to be found about every ten miles apart along this road, after crossing Hickory Creek in Denton County. He also spoke of Dallas and Alton being very small neighboring villages.

By December 20, 1849, the population had grown to such an extent the Legislature created a new county.

This act provided that the county seat be called Birdville, no doubt, in honor of Wm. Bird. It further provided that an election be held the first Monday in August 1850, to elect county officers, and that the returns thereof be made to Col. M. T. Johnson, a resident of the newly created county. The act instructed the Chief Justice of Dallas County to divide Tarrant into precincts and appoint a suitable person to qualify the Chief Justice to be elected. In Tarrant the newly qualified Chief Justice was authorized to qualify the remaining officers. The new Chief Justice was also authorized to employ a competent surveyor to locate the center of the county. Vincent J. Hutton, W.R. Rogers, --- Little, Col. M. T. Johnson, and Sanders Elliott, were appointed commissioners to lay out the county seat and arrange for a public sale of lots. It was also provided that an election to determine the location of the county seat be held in event more than one suitable site was offered. But it seems that this act was not very explicit, so the following measure was passed and approved September 4, 1850:

"Be it enacted by the Legislature of the State of Texas that the people of said county (Tarrant), open and hold an election for the county seat of the said county of Tarrant on the first Monday in August, 1851, according to the provisions of an act creating the County of Tarrant, approved the 20th of December, 1849.

"Be it further enacted that the several courts of said county shall be held at the store-house of E. M. Daggett, in the vicinity of Fort Worth, until the election provided for in the first section of this bill shall have been helden, and the county seat permanently located."

Birdville was elected as county seat and George Alters, J. W. Elliston, L. G. Tinsley, Sanders Elliott, Ben P. Ayres, William Norris, and ---- Ayers, donated land for the county Capitol.

Several Tarrant County citizens, however, were not satisfied with the location of the county seat at Birdville, and were anxious to have it moved to Fort Worth. As a consequence, they were successful in securing the passage of an act August 26, 1856, providing that another election be held the first Tuesday in November. Much rivalry and considerable trouble developed over this election. Several citizens in favor of moving the courthouse to Fort Worth signed a pledge to the effect that if the voters would elect Fort Worth the county seat, they would erect a courthouse at their own expense, thereby relieving the tax payers of the county of that duty.

Fort Worth was elected by a small margin. Many voters, opposed to the selection of Fort Worth as the county capitol, charged that Dan Woody, the first settler of Wise County, brought from that territory sufficient votes to defeat them in the election. As a consequence, the losing voters were also successful in obtaining the passage of an act February 7, 1860, providing for an election within ten years to determine the county seat. At this election which was held during April of 1860, Fort Worth received 548 votes, and the center of the county, Birdville's candidate, received 501.

A contract had already been made to David Murch during January of '59 to build the courthouse and it was already under construction when the bill calling for a third election passed.

This building burned March 29, 1876. A contract was made in 1877 with Thomas and Werner, to erect another courthouse at the cost of \$65,000.00. The latter building was replaced in 1893, with the present magnificent building which cost approximately one-half million dollars and was largely made of granite brought from Burnet County.

We are unable to give the complete list of the first officers of Tarrant County. Seabourne Gilmore, however, was the first Chief Justice, John York the second Sheriff, and John A. Hust was the first assessor and collector; but the first officers after the county seat was moved from Birdville to Fort Worth, were: Seabourne Gilmore, Chief Justice; Francis Jordan, Sheriff; Arch F. Leonard, County Clerk; Sanders Elliott, District Clerk; Henry

Suggs, Treasurer; J. S. Halford, Daniel Barcroft, and Hamilton Bennett, Commissioners.

John Peter Smith, who afterwards became a lawyer, taught Fort Worth's first school after the Fort was abandoned. This school was taught during 1853 in the old Hospital Building. At that time about one hundred people lived in the vicinity of the old Fort. Other schools were taught in the county, however, previously to this time.

Doctor Carroll M. Peak, Dr. J. T. Field and others were among the early doctors to settle in the county. Dr. Peak moved to Tarrant County in 1853.

J. C. Terrell and Dabney C. Dade were among the very first lawyers to locate in the county. Francis Knaax was one of the first blacksmiths.

After Fort Worth was abandoned as a military post, E. M. Daggett bought the cavalry stable on the bluff near the courthouse and converted it into a hotel. Shortly afterwards, Lon Steel built a two-story concrete building for a hotel, but soon sold the property to Albert C. Andrew, who built an annex on the west side and called the place Andrew's Tavern.

Sam Houston, Governor O. M. Roberts, Thomas J. Rusk, Col. W. T. Johnson, General E. H. Tarrant, Hon. John H. Reagan, Gov. J. W. Throckmorton, and other noted characters of Texas History often stopped at Andrew's Tavern.

The following were among the early settlers to locate in Tarrant County.

M. T. Johnson settled at Johnson Station three miles south of Arlington. Grimlesy, Havencamps, Ellisons, Walkers, Boas, Parkers, Cates, settled in Birdville neighborhood. Arch Leonard, Joseph Millsap, Joseph Finger, Francis Jordan, E. W. Daggett, Tadys, Halls, Ayers, Darters, Purvises, Hartman's, Popplewells, in Fort Worth.

South part of county: Farmers, Ellises, Chapmans, and Dodsons. Northwest part of county: Edwards, Huttons, Conners, Loving's, Ventioners, Tannehills, Woods, Samuels.

In 1858, the West Express, a weekly paper, was published at Birdville in Tarrant County.

#### **SECTION 121. - HILL COUNTY**

As early as 1835 McCulloch, Robertson, Chase, and Hamer, surveyed as far up the Brazos as Fort Graham. But troubles with Mexico and the Indians retarded the settlements of all western counties for several years. And it was not until after annexation

and the Mexican War that followed, that Hill County began to expand.

When W. H. Kirkpatrick and family settled in Hill County in 1849, John Caruthers was living west of the present city of Hillsboro, Bynum Fancher on the west side of Hackberry Creek; Jonathan Newby and John McCoy lived farther down the same stream; Jack Boiles lived on Jack's Branch about one-half mile west of McCoy; and Harrison Ables and D. C. Warvel were living in the county at that time. A. A. Caruthers and a Mr. Ford built the first house where Hillsboro now stands.

Frank Stubblefield established a ranch in Hill County as early as 1851. It was managed by Frank Sanchez, who was a well known citizen on the Western Frontier. At an early date we find Sanchez farther south, in 1851 in Hill County, then a part of Navarro, in 1855 or 1856 in Parker County, and in 1857 or 1858 he was on the cattle ranges of Eastland County and was one of the first settlers in that section.

E. S. Wyman, Henry Hollis, J. M. Martin, Charlie Davis, Henry Skiles, Col. Irvin Wright, Jeff Jordan, Rev. John Turner, Rachael, Beaty, Allen, John and Jim Williams, Joe Pace, C. N. Brooks, J. H. Dyer, Billy and Joe Mitchell, R. Handle, Green Hardwick, Tom Bell, A. R. Fancher, G. W. Sevier, Elias Machee, J. M. Sanford, Tom Hollinsworth, and others were living in Hill County as early as 1851. Many of the early settlers who were locating on the frontier about this time were Mexican War veterans. Their favorable impressions of Texas led them to the frontier. As early as 1849, a ferry crossed the Brazos near Fort Graham, and by 1853, Hill County was ready to be organized.

The county was created from Navarro by an act approved February 7, 1853, and named in honor of Dr. George W. Hill, who as representative of Navarro County, assisted in the passage of the act creating the county. The act provided that the Chief Justice of Navarro, the mother county, order an election of county officers within six months, and that the newly elected Commissioners' Court locate the center of the county and elect as many as three eligible sites to be run as candidates for the county seat. The act creating the county also provided that such place to be selected be called "Hillsborough."

Accordingly, Presley Donaldson, Chief Justice of Navarro County, called the first election, which was held on Jack's Branch. J. H. Dyer and Tom Bell were candidates for Chief Justice, and much bitter feeling was injected into the election. J. H. Dyer was the successful candidate, but it seems that he remained concealed, however, until the storm of excitement passed away.

C. N. Brooks was the first County and District Clerk; Charley Davis the first Sheriff; A. R. Fancher first Assessor and Collector,

and Thomas Bragg, Thomas Steiner, J. R. Davis, and J. M. Sanford, the first Commissioners.

The Commissioners' Court met May 25, 1853, for its first time, according to the records, at the home of Harrison Ables. It seemed that J. H. Dyer, the Chief Justice, was perhaps at that time still in voluntary exile, for the records do not disclose his presence. Thomas Steiner, one of the commissioners, presided at this meeting. William Wilson was appointed Sheriff pro tem and opened the court according to law. The first order entered on the minutes of the Commissioners' Court of Hill County, allowed Presley Donaldson, Chief Justice of Navarro County, \$12.00 for his services in the organization of the county. The 24th of September, 1853, the commissioners ordered that the town of Hillsborough, which had been selected as the county seat, be surveyed by A. Wright, Haywood Weatherby, and Hugh McMullen. A. Wright did the surveying and the other two carried the chain.

At a meeting during November, 1853, the court also provided for the laying out of suitable roads to Waco, Corsicana, Birdville, Waxahachie, Dallas, and to Fort Graham. They also approved the survey of the townsite of Hillsboro by Mr. A. Wright and his assistants, and passed an order providing that the purchasers of lots be permitted to pay one-half of the purchase price in one year, the remainder during the second year.

The first courthouse of Hill County was constructed by C. N. Brooks, was about twelve feet square, had a dirt floor and was made of Elm logs. During June of 1854, the court appropriated \$200 to build a frame courthouse twenty-five by thirty feet. The county jail was erected about 1856 at a cost of \$1793.00, and was erected by William Young.

John H. Reagan, and --- Jewett exchanged benches and the former held the first court in the county,

Judge H. W. Young taught one of the first, if not the first school in Hill County. It was taught in the vicinity of Peoria in 1854.

Tom Johns, Nelms and Cyrus numbered among the earliest merchants of Hillsborough. The Carters, Goodwins, and Booths were also engaged in the mercantile business prior to the Civil War.

J. M. Sanford, a Baptist preacher, who settled in Hill County in the late 40's, was one of the first, if not the first, to preach the gospel in this part of the wilderness. J. M. Perry, also a Baptist, held a meeting during the early 50's. Rev. Magee, numbered among the first Methodist ministers and assisted in the establishment of the First Methodist Church, which was located near Peoria. The first Cumberland Presbyterian Church of Hill County was established near Peoria about 1855. The first

Church of Christ was established about two years later and Reverend J. P. Scruggs, John Boyster, and Dr. Whitmire, were among the first ministers.

The Hillsboro Express and Prairie Blade, were two of the first newspapers to be established in this section of the State, and were in existence before the Civil War.

Early population: In 1860, 3003 whites, 650 slaves, total 3653; in 1870, 6647 whites, 806 negroes, total 7453.

## **SECTION 122. - JOHNSON COUNTY**

Immediately following the first settlements of Hill, early settlers were soon pushing farther westward. Col. B. J. Chambers, founder of Cleburne, surveyed in Johnson County as early as 1847, and shortly afterwards made that territory his permanent home. Not later than 1852 and 1853 several families had settled as far out as the present territory of Hood, but the eastern portion of Johnson County at first received most of the early settlers. Samuel Myers was one of the first settlers in the county. He located the Myers Community about three miles north of Alvarado. Jackson Bradly, John and Jess Rawls, William and Evans Balch, John, Chris and William Billingsley, and others located in the Johnson County territory in 1851 and 1852. C. Wise, Abe Futhey, John Mitchell, Abe Onstott, Colonel Laramore, Steve Bright, John Waddell, and others located in Johnson County territory as early as 1852 or 1853.

At a meeting held in the vicinity of Alvarado late in 1853, E. M. Heath was instructed to draw a petition which prayed for the organization of a new county. One hundred and seven of the leading citizens signed this petition. And by an act approved February 13, 1854, Johnson County was created and named in honor of Col. M. T. Johnson, who came to Texas and settled in Shelby County in 1839, was a member of the Texas Congress, had charge of a regiment of rangers stationed along the frontier before the Civil War, and was living in Tarrant County as early as 1849. The above act also provided that the county seat be named Wardville in honor of Thomas W. Ward, who was called Peg Leg Ward, because he lost his leg in the Texas Revolution. T. W. Ward, was Commissioner of the General Land Office from 1841 to 1848, and also distinguished himself as a public servant in many other ways. The act creating the county further provided, that the chief justice of Ellis County call an election of county officers, to be held the first Monday in April, 1854, and that the returns of such an election be made to Major E. M. Heath. William Balch, William Hunter, Archibald Robinson, D. Kinard, and Reverend Odam, were appointed Commissioners to select three suitable places to be voted upon for the county seat. But it seems that the election was held August 7, 1854, and the following officers elected: David Mitchell, Chief Justice; Jeremiah Easterwood, County Clerk; J. Roberson, Treasurer; A. H. Onstott, Sheriff; F. L. Kirtley, Assessor and Collector; A. D.

Kennard, Christopher Billingsley, Carr Wise, and William O'Neal, Commissioners.

January 18, 1855, an election was held to select the county seat; four places were submitted as candidates but neither of these received a majority as required by law. A second election between the two highest candidates, was then held August the 16th of the same year, and a location on the west bank of Nolan's River about four miles west of Cleburne was selected. This location was known as Wardville, but proved to be more than five miles from the center of the county as required by law. Consequently, September 8, 1856, a third election was held, but no suitable site was selected. A fourth election was then held October 4, 1856, and a place five miles northwest of Cleburne was selected and named Buchanan in honor of James Buchanan, President of the United States. But when Hood County was created in 1866, the question of removing the county seat was again agitated and resulted in a fifth election, which was held March the 23rd, 1867. Four places were run as candidates, and the present county seat, then known as Camp Henderson, selected by a large majority. Shortly afterwards, this location was named Cleburne, in honor of General Partick Cleburne of the Confederate Army. Few counties there are in the entire United States that have had five elections for a county seat during its first thirteen years of existence.

The first meeting of the Commissioners Court, according to the county records, convened August 21, 1854, near the home of Edward Cox, and was held under a large post oak tree. David Mitchell, Chief Justice, presided, and J. Easterwood, County Clerk, A. H. Onstott, Sheriff, and the four Commissioners were present.

The court again met in Alvarado August 28, 1854, at a place known as John Waddell's Counting Room. At these meetings the official bonds were approved, provisions made for dividing the county into election precincts, etc.

In 1860, when the commissioners ordered a courthouse built, the chief justice ruled that they were without authority to make such an order, so no further action was taken. Johnson County, as a consequence, continued to keep their records located in temporary quarters during a part of the time Buchanan was county seat. But after the removal of the county seat to Cleburne, a frame building was soon erected, and in 1870 a brick courthouse, 44 feet wide and costing \$10,000, was erected to accommodate the county officers. The first county jail was erected in Buchanan in 1858 and cost \$800.

Judge Nat M. Burford held Johnson County's first District Court. This court convened at Wardville, June 9, 1856. John C. McCoy was District Attorney, and Stephen S. Edney, Sheriff.

The first school house was erected on the premises of Samuel Myers. J. E. Kirkley, born February 4, 1854, numbered among the first births of the county, and his father, F. L. Kirtley, a Baptist minister, was not only one of the first preachers, but was also the first assessor and collector of the county.

Mrs. Josephine B. Wren, erected the first hotel in Cleburne. The Alvarado Bulletin and Cleburne Chronicle were among the first, if not the first newspapers published in the county.

Early population: In 1860, 3792 whites, 515 slaves, total 4305; in 1870, 4639 whites, negroes 279, total 4923.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1855, Alvarado, William Balch; in 1869, Alvarado, S. D. Bright; Buchanan, G. H. Maxey; Comanche Peak, C. P. Hollis; Grand View, J. F. Scurlock; Noland's River, W. O. Menefee.

### **SECTION 123. - BOSQUE COUNTY**

During the 30's and 40's surveyors went as far up the Brazos as Bosque, Erath, and Palo Pinto Counties. The famous Santa Fe Expedition also passed through this section. The maps of Stephen F. Austin and others printed in the 30's, and Geo. W. Bonnell's Topographical Description of Texas, printed in 1840 mention the Bosque River. The word "Bosque" means woody, or woods.

The venerable old frontiersman, Major George B. Erath, in 1839, the year that Austin was located, twice led a small detachment of men into Bosque County. Concerning his second trip he said, "On this trip I named Meridian Knobs and Meridian Creek." So it will be readily seen that the Bosque River and territory afterwards organized into Bosque County were well known by 1842.

McLennan and Hill Counties began to settle in the 40's, and by 1849 or 1850 the fearless frontiersmen were settling in Bosque County. Albert Barton and family in 1849 lived near Fort Graham and operated a ferry across the Brazos. Mr. Barton however, drowned in 1849 or 1850 when his ferry boat capsized. His early grave numbered among the first in this section.

Ewell Everett, L. S. Crutchfield, J. K. Helton, Wm. Gary, S. E. Locker, William McCurry, Allen Anderson, F. M. Gandy, A. C. Pearce, Joseph N. Mabray, F. M. Kell, Ole Pierson, Canute Canuteson, Ole Canuteson, Jens Jenson, A. Bratton, and others settled in Bosque County between 1850 and 1854.

Bosque County was created by an act approved February 4, 1854. Lowrey S. Crutchfield, Wm. Gray, T. E. Everett. Wm. McCurry, John Laker, and J. N. Mabray, were named commissioners to locate the county seat. It will be noted then, that the county seat of Bosque County was selected by a

commission and not by the qualified voters. The commissioners excepting T. E. Everett, met June 27, 1854, and located the county seat slightly north and west of the center of the county. As suggested by Jasper N. Mabray, the location was called Meridian, because of its proximity to Meridian Creek and Meridian Knobs which were named by George B. Erath in 1839. J. M. Stiener, donated one hundred acres and J. T. Edwards, twenty acres for the location of the county seat. Consequently an order was entered providing that the above one hundred and twenty acres be surveyed into lots, blocks, and streets, and sold at public sale July 4, 1854. Major Geo. B. Erath, who originally surveyed the city of Waco, also surveyed Meridian. Five lots were donated to those five enterprising citizens who would immediately improve them as an incentive to others to move to the new townsite. The proposition was accepted and the early morning smoke was soon rising from four or five log huts. July 4, 1854, a large barbecue was held and lots sold. People came in ox wagons and by other means of conveyance common to that time from many distant points. N. W. Battle, who afterwards became District Judge, was then a candidate for District Attorney and was the principal speaker. Major George B. Erath was also present. Many lots were sold at this first sale and they commanded a high premium.

The first election was held October 7, 1854. R. S. Barnes presided over the box on the Brazos. Isreal B. Standifer, the box at Meridian and J. K. Helton the box under a liveoak tree near the home of Tom Pool about five miles below Clifton. It seems that no returns were made for the Meridian box. Five votes were cast at the Brazos River box, and twelve under the historic liveoak tree. The following officers were elected:

L. H. Crutchfield, Chief Justice; Jasper N. Mabray, County Clerk; A. C. Pearce, District Clerk; T. Bryant, Sheriff; J. K. Helton, Justice of the Peace.

The Commissioners Court contracted with William McCurry August 28, 1854, to erect the first courthouse. The building cost \$125 and was in keeping with the architecture of that time. But it was discarded in 1860 when Bosque County became extravagant and erected a three-room frame building, thirty by forty feet. This building and a part of the records were destroyed by fire in 1871. A two-story stone courthouse was erected in 1875 by A. J. George and Dave Neely, and cost the county \$10,000. In 1886 this building was replaced with a more elaborate structure.

Judge R. E. B. Baylor convened the first District Court, June 9, 1856. N. W. Battle was then District Attorney. The first case called for trial was styled Thomas B. Clements vs. W. M. McNeill and B. F. Scott, and numbered One on the docket. Richard Coke, who afterwards became Governor, was reported to be one of the counsels in the case.

Mr. and Mrs. Hornbeck, who lived about two miles from Valley Mills, had a son born in 1851. This son was one of the first, if not the first white child born in the county. F. M. Gandy and Miss McCurry were the first married, and after the county was organized, the first marriage license was issued to Leroy Parks and Miss Wheeler. The first church was erected near Valley Mills.

From the very earliest times Bosque County has had and enjoyed a large Norwegian population. These people made splendid citizens and were found to be very hospitable and freely gave the author the benefit of such historic information they possessed.

Early population: In 1860, 1712 whites and 293 slaves, total 2005; in 1870, 4453 whites and 523 negroes, total 4981.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859: Cyrus, Thomas Ford; Flag Pond, James B. Barry; Meridian, John A. Goodlet; Neill's Creek, James S. Mabray.

#### **SECTION 124 - CORYELL COUNTY**

The first settlers along the frontier were ever inclined to settle in the vicinity of the early army posts. Those counties containing such cantonments, were as a rule, sooner settled.

Orville T. Tyler, and Goldsby Childers, numbered among the very first, if not the first settlers to make their home in Coryell County. They located near Fort Gates in 1849 or 1850 and were contractors at the post. David R. Franks came to the county in 1852 or 1853. The following early settlers were living in the county in 1854: Hugh Sheridan, Tom Carson, Burrell Hood, Tom and David Canfield, L. M. Robinson. J. L. Montgomery, T. B. Pollard, Leroy Allen, Bob and Pryor Childers, R. C. Grant, B. W. Hammock, D. A. and W. W. Hammock, George S. Adams, James A. and Fred Haynes, Wiley Wilkey, Anderson Arrowwood, B. W. Honeycutt, Sam Baget, Geo. Cook, Tom Trimmie, Rev. James W. Collard, John H. Christmas, J. C. Russell, Jesse Harrold, Rev. B. B. Wells, W. S. Fautleroy, G. R. Franks, John L. McLeroy, and others.

Coryell County was created out of Bell by an act approved February 4, 1854. This act provided that the Chief Justice of the latter county call an election of county officers and qualify the electors; the act further provided that the commissioners Court, as soon as qualified, select at least three suitable places not more than five miles from the center of the county to be run as candidates for the county seat.

During the 30's James Coryell filed on land not far distant from Coryell Creek, which was named in his honor. He was later killed by Indians, but not upon this stream, nor in this county as some

have supposed. The surrounding mountains also became known as Coryell Mountains. Then when the county was created, it was called Coryell. The county seat, Gatesville, derived its name from Fort Gates.

The Chief Justice of Bell County in due time called an election to elect county officers, and it was held during the latter part of February or the first part of March, 1854. The following officers were elected: O. T. Tyler, Chief Justice; John C. Russell, County Clerk; C. B. Pollard, District Clerk; John Turney, Sheriff; David R. Franks, Assessor and Collector; Samuel Moore, Treasurer; James L. Montgomery, Thomas Triemer, James Hicks, and Abram Flanery, Commissioners. Samuel Carson and Thomas Callfield were elected Justices of the Peace, and John P. Clayton, Constable.

The first meeting of the Commissioners Court convened March 15, 1854. Herman Aikin, a surveyor, was ordered to locate the center of the county. Nominations for a county seat were then received by the Commissiones Court, May 5, 1854. Three places were placed in nomination: First, R. G. offered one hundred acres out of the Casanaba on the of the Leon River; or twenty-five acres of land out of the same survey and \$2000 in money, together with the value of buildings proposed to be donated by J. B. Giddings in case Fort Gates should be chosen; or one hundred acres out of the same survey on the north side of Leon River. G. K. Grant offered each of the three places. The \$2000 and twenty-five acres together with the buildings offered were accepted. The election was held May 27, 1854, and a sale of lots made during July of the same year.

In 1856, the court let a contract to R. B. Wells for a courthouse, forty by fifty feet. But it was not used to any great extent, for the Commissioners Court soon rented from a Mr. Samuels, a building on the east side of the square. In 1872 a contract was let for a new courthouse. This building was a two-story stone structure, costing \$11,000, and for many years was the finest courthouse in Western Texas.

The court contracted in 1855 with J. H. Chrisman to build the first county jail.

As usual, the court during its first meeting, provided for roads leading to various points, for election precincts, etc.

The first District Court convened June 16, 1858. Geo. R. E. B. Baylor presided and N. W. Battle, District Attorney, Leroy H. Allen, Sheriff, and Thomas B. Pollard, Clerk, were present.

Parson Wells, J. C. Russell, J. H. Chrisman, Colonel Norris, and F. W. Fautleroy, were among the first local lawyers. J. C. Russell taught one of the first, if not the first school conducted in Coryell County. A Mr. Pollard taught one of the first schools in Gatesville.

David R. Wood was also an early teacher at the county capitol. Mrs. R. B. Wells taught school at Gatesville in a log school house, perhaps as early as 1854. She was also one of the first teachers of the county. A man named Hazard in 1857 or 1858 taught about the first school in the Lankford Cove Community. Hazard taught about two schools. A log school house was then built over the line in Hamilton County and Simm Williams taught the school. Rev. Hugh M. Childers, Methodist, D. R. Franks, Methodist, J. H. Colard, Methodist, J. R. White, Methodist, Johnny McClain, Baptist, and Parson Wells, were among the first preachers of Coryell County.

O. T. Tyler and Caroline Childers were the first of the early settlers of Coryell County to be united in marriage, and their son, George W. Tyler, who was born October 31, 1851, and who afterwards became Lieutenant Governor of Texas, was the first white child born in the county. Mr. Davidson and Bianna Moore were issued the first marriage license after Coryell County was organized. They were united in marriage in 1854.

S. J. Franks was born at Fort Gates, April 17, 1853. Charlotte Langford was born October 10, 1855, and was the first child born in the Langford Cove Community near the present town of Evant.

R. G. Grant opened one of the first if not the first store in Gatesville after it became the county seat. He also had a mill and a distillery. Sanders and Wilkerson soon opened a store after the county was organized. T. H. Robinson moved his store from the old fort to Gatesville. Daniel Moore was the first blacksmith. McKeig Squires & Company, and S. Fields opened early stores in Gatesville. Col. J. M. Norris, who at one time commanded a frontier regiment, also opened a large store at an early date in this city. But his connection with the frontier regiment during the Civil War almost put him into bankruptcy. S. H. Lutterlow built about the first hotel.

Early population: In 1860, 2360 whites, 306 slaves, total 2666; in 1870, 3845 whites, 279 negroes, total 4124.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1855: Gatesville, J. C. Newlon; Station Creek, Harbert Davenport. In 1859: Gatesville, J. E. Saunders; Henson's Creek, John Farmer; Rainey's Creek, W. D. Clark; Station Creek, O. F. Davenport.

### **SECTION 125 - BURNET COUNTY**

This county was created February 5, 1852, and named for David G. Burnett. Logan Vandever, W. H. McGill, and R. H. Hall were appointed commissioners to call an election of county officers and qualify the electors. The Legislature provided that the Commissioners Court when elected and qualified, select a suitable site for a county seat on Hamilton Creek and on the

Hamilton League of land provided the owners thereof donate ten town lots and one hundred and sixty acres of timbered land.

The county was organized about 1854 and the county seat was first called Burnet Courthouse and Hamilton. But in 1858 the name of the county seat was changed from Hamilton to Burnet.

The following is a list of the first county officers: John Scott, Chief Justice; George Joy, District Clerk; A. G. Home, County Clerk; James C. Bradley, Sheriff; William D. Reed, Assessor and Collector; Samuel E. Holland, Treasurer.

Fort Croghan, established in 1849, was near Burnet, and materially increased the early population. D. R. Holland, Christian Dorbandt, Logan Vandever, J. P. and Wm. McGill, and Noah Smithwick, were living near the post as early as 1850. Some of these early citizens were contractors at Fort Croghan. John G. Stewart, father of H. B. Stewart, came to Burnet County in March, 1851. Peter Cary, Clarke Bolt, father of M. J. Bolt, Harrison Brooks, John Sharp, T. Tate, Decatur Graves, Jack Haney, Boland McGee, E. Boyd, G. Watts, James Bolt, arrived between 1850 and 1853.

Jack Haney, Boland and McKee were the first merchants of Burnet. They opened stores about 1852 or 1853. Hagerland opened a store shortly after. The first school was taught in 1852 or 1853 by Professor W. H. Dixon, a graduate of Oxford University. This school, no doubt, at the time was the best on the entire frontier. George Stalley was Burnet County's second teacher. George Holland was born in 1852 and was one of the first white children born in Burnet County. Sam Holland and Miss Scott, daughter of Judge Scott, numbered among the first to marry. Reverend Rolley, a Methodist minister, numbered among the first preachers.

Dr. M. A. Fields, who lived in Burnet in 1856, was one of the first doctors. Dr. Fields is still remembered for his heroic efforts during the typhoid epidemic of 1864. This epidemic was so severe all the settlements organized to combat the disease.

Liman Wight and his Mormon colony having been washed out in Gillespie County, moved to Burnet and established Mormon Mills in the middle of the 50's.

Early population: In 1860, 2252 whites, 235 slaves, total 2487; in 1870, 3330 whites, 358 negroes, total 3688.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1855, Burnet, Logan Vandever; Oat Meal, John Scott. In 1859, Burnet, Thomas Moore; Burns' Ford, J. H. Eubank; Double Horn, W. H. Holland; Mohomet, G. Ater; Mormon Mills, B. B. McCartney; Oatmeal, Jas. M. Rountree; O'Havis Hill, Jacob Wolf; Stricklinges, W. D. Stricklings.

## **SECTION 126. - UVALDE COUNTY**

This county was first created by an act approved February 8, 1850, but the county failed to perfect an organization. Then a second act was approved February 2, 1856, providing for its organization. The statutes required that the county seat be located within eight miles of the center of the county and be called Uvalde. The name was derived from Canon De Uvalde, now called Sabinal Canyon. That Canyon was named for Colonel Uvalde of the Mexican Army, who at this place defeated a large band of Comanche Indians about forty or fifty years before Stephen F. Austin came to Texas. It is one of the several Texas counties carrying a Spanish name.

Uvalde was another county clustering around an early army post. Fort Inge, only a few miles below the county seat, was established in 1849.

About 1852, the Sabinal Canyon and adjoining sections began to settle. Wm. Ware, who was a captain in the battle of San Jacinto came to Waresville, or Utopia about 1852. Jim Davenport, D. Bohanan, Frank Webb and Jeff Mills were in his party and assisted in moving his cattle. Gideon Thompson and family moved into the same section in October of the same year. Henry Robertson, John Davenport, R. H. Kincheloe, also came to the Sabinal Canyon in 1852. Aaron Angland arrived in the latter part of the same year. John and Jewel Findley, John Davenport Sr., Lay Kelley, Criss Keller, Jasper Wish, George Brown, Roll Miller, Charles Kincheloe, Lewis Kincheloe, Levi Sangers, J. E. Barker, and others settled in the vicinity of Utopia in 1853. Many of the descendants of these early families live in that section of the state today, and it is a real vacation to visit some of these valued citizens in their homes and hear their many stories of the earlier days. J. C. Ware, who plowed, perhaps, the first furrow west of Medina County, was still living in his splendid country home on land owned by the Wares since 1852, when last heard from. For seventy-seven years he has been a resident of that section. There are others who have also been in Uvalde and adjoining counties for three quarters of a century. Uvalde was started by Levi Stratton and a Mr. Black, in 1853. These citizens were running a store in this city as early as the following year. There was also a store near Fort Inge. Charlie Durbon and J. C. Ware established a store in 1856. This was the first store in the Sabinal Canyon section.

William Ware died March 9, 1853, and was one of the first settlers to be buried in that section. Betsy Ann Ware died in 1855.

Emory Gibbons and Margret Davenport, daughter of James B. Davenport, were about the first to be united in marriage. George Hammer was one of the first born in the county.

William E. Rountree, in 1853, taught one of the first schools. He taught in a little log school house about one-half mile west of Utopia. J. M. McCormick taught the second school near Utopia. Mary Ann Adams was also an early teacher.

Early population: In 1860, 479 whites and 27 slaves, total 506; in 1870, 778 whites and 73 negroes, total 851.

#### **SECTION 127. - BANDERA COUNTY**

In 1853, which was one year after the arrival of the first settlers in Sabinal Canyon, A. M. Milstead, Thomas Odem, and P. D. Saner, moved to Bandera County to make shingles out of the beautiful cypress trees growing in this section. Amasa Clark, Mrs. Rees and her sons, Sidney, Adolphus and Alanzo, and daughter, settled in Bandera County during the same year and made their home among the beautiful Bandera Hills.

Shortly afterwards a saw mill was established near the present town of Bandera by Charles De Montel. This mill brought several additional families to this section, and necessitated the opening of a commissary. John James, a surveyor, soon became associated with Mr. Montel and the firm was known as James Montel & Company. The Bandera townsite was surveyed and lots sold, and it was not long before a little village was thriving far back in the hills.

Elder Lyman Wight and his Mormon Colony, for a time during 1854, camped in this county.

In 1855 James Montel & Company induced a Polish colony of sixteen families to settle in this section. By 1855 the population justified a separate county organization. Consequently, January 26, 1856, the Governor approved an act creating Bandera County. This county was named for the famous Bandera Pass, which in turn was named for General Bandera, a Spanish officer, who defeated a band of Comanche Indians at this pass in 1733.

Mr. Charles De Montel was appointed commissioner to call an election to elect county officers and select a county seat. The following is a list of officers, who were serving the county during the year of 1856:

O B. Miles, Chief Justice; J. W. Poole, County Clerk; A. Hoffman, Sheriff; S. S. Carter, Assessor and Colector, and August Klopenbach, District Clerk.

#### **SECTION 128. - KERR COUNTY**

It seems that Mrs. Rees, and sons, Sidney, Adolphus and Elonzo, and a daughter, were not only early settlers in Bandera County, but were also living in Kerr County as early as 1855. Tom Saner, Jim Starkey, Roland Nichols, and others came to Kerr County about the same time or a little later. H. M. Burney, Hance Burney, De Witt Burney, and R. H. Burney came to Kerr County

about 1856. Dr. J. J. Ridley, Josua Brown, Mrs. Denton, Alfred McFadden, George Phillips, Dr. Scott, and others were living in Kerr County as early as 1856 and Mrs. Denton and Albert McFadden and perhaps others were living near the mouth of Cherry Creek about two or three years prior to that time. Casper Real, W. W. Whorton and B. F. Cocke, were living in Kerr County as early as 1857. John Tedford was also an early settler in this section.

Charles Schrenier came to the county long before the Civil War and should rightfully be called the father of Kerrville.

Kerr County was created by an act aproved January 26, 1856, the same day Bandera County was created. Dr. J. C. Ridley was appointed commissioner to perfect the county organization. It was made his duty to call an election of county officers and to select a county seat. The election was held the fourth Saturday in March, 1856. The act provided that the county seat be selected by a majority of all votes cast, and that the new county seat be called Kerrville. The county was named in honor of James Kerr, who came to Texas in 1825, was a surveyor in DeWitt and De Leon's Colonies, and played an important part in the early history of Texas. The act creating Kerr County states that he was the first settler on the Guadalupe River.

The county seat was first located at Kerrville, later moved to Comfort and then back to Kerrville.

The following were among the first officers of Kerr County, and were serving as early as 1857: Jonathan Scott, Chief Justice; D. A. Rees, County Clerk; Sidney B. Rees, District Clerk; W. D. C. Burney, Sheriff, and P. M. Nelson, Assessor and Collector.

Early population: In 1860, 585 whites and 49 slaves, total 634. In 1870, 952 whites and 90 negroes, total 1042.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Camp Verde, Richard Meade; Comfort, Augustus Faltin; Kerrville, H.M. Barney.

#### **SECTION 129. - LLANO COUNTY**

Because of the proximity of this county to the German Settlements in this section of the state, the first pioneers were Germans, who settled in the county as early as the late 40's. But we are unable to supply their names. The first Americans came to Llano County during the early 50's. D. C. Cowen, Billy Miller, Sam and Warren Lockhart, and others came to Llano County in 1852. E. W., T. H. and C. A. Davis, in 1853; L. A. Moore in 1853 or 1854; Dr. Bedford in 1854, and Ike B. Maxwell came to Llano County September 8, during the same year.

Llano County was created by an act approved February 1, 1856. Clement Oatman was made commissioner by said act to perfect

the county organization. It was made his duty to order an election of county officers and to select two or more suitable sites not more than five miles from the center of the county to be run as candidates for the county seat.

Both the county and county seat were named for the beautiful Llano River, one of the prettiest streams in Texas. The present city of Llano was made the county seat. But since the courthouse and records have been destroyed by fire, much of the early history of this county is forever lost to civilization.

In 1855, about eight miles west of Bluffton and four miles west of the old salt works, in a log cabin with a dirt floor, Dr. C. M. McCraw taught one of the first schools in this section. This school was attended by Uncle Ike E. Maxwell, who was ninety years old in 1926.

A. D. Hamlin opened one of the first, if not the first store, in the county. Tom Haney, perhaps, opened the first store in Llano. Among the Americans, Rev. S. Strickland, a Christian minister of Georgetown, was, perhaps, the first preacher to carry the gospel to this part of the wilderness.

Ike B. Maxwell, was one of the first to marry and received the first marriage license issued in Llano County. James Maxwell, his son, was one of the first to be born. He was born July 6, 1859. Jim Wilson was born about one month later.

Grandma McMillan died in the fall of 1854, and was one of the first, if not the first, to be buried in the county. Dr. Bedford numbered among the first doctors. He settled in Llano County in 1854.

The following officers were among the first of the county and were serving as early as 1856: D. C. Cowen, Chief Justice; Hardin Oatman, County Clerk; S. W. Taite, District Clerk; Samuel Lockhart, Sheriff; and T. H. Davis, Assessor and Collector.

The fine granite and minerals of this county have long attracted the attention of various industrial enterprises. About 1856 Hardeman & Company established a salt works.

Early population: In 1860, 1047 whites and 54 slaves, total 1101. In 1870, 1361 whites and 18 negroes, total 1379.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Cherokee, J. R. Williams; Llano, John Oatman Jr.; in 1870, Llano.

### **SECTION 130 - SAN SABA COUNTY**

There were several early settlements started in this county because of its proximity to both the San Saba and Colorado Rivers, But those interviewed, occasionally differ concerning the

early history of these settlements. There seemed to be a dispute as to whether or not David McAlester and family came to San Saba County before Dave Law, or vice versa. But it seems David Law and wife waded the Colorado River and looked over the country preparatory to moving. By the time they returned, it seems that David McAlester had already moved and was one of the first, if not the first settler to settle in San Saba County. Dave Law and family were also among the very first. These families settled about 1854. The following early settlers came to San Saba about 1855: Allen Sloan, Jim Arnett, W. Wire, the Ingrams, Ezekial Boyett, Jim Kelly, Mrs. Eastman, the Allens, Coffees and others. The following early settlers were living in the county as early as 1856:

Sterling A. Houston, Joe Ab Harrell, Wylie House, Joe Owens, Lambert Houston, the Smelsers, Felin Dawson, Jake Pyett, Johnnie Williams, John R. Williams, Dave Williams, Jim Williams, Cal Luther, Joe and Jackson Montgomery, Jim Murry and others. Jim Armenstroud and T. J. Robbins were also very early settlers in San Saba County. Judge M. H. Wadsworth came about 1855 or 1856; Jim Henderson and Jack Brown, father of Jasper Brown, came about the same time. The Kings and Bill and John Sloan came about 1855 or 1856. George Gray, Matthew Kuykendall, Jake, Joe and Jack Hanna; Bill Woodward and the Gregg's were also early to arrive on this part of the frontier.

Mrs. Maxwell taught one of the first schools in the county. Her school house was a log cabin in the Sloan Community. Jim Murry and Tom Ward were, perhaps, the first merchants to open stores. A man named Ellis or Elliott was likewise an early merchant. Williamson Wire opened, perhaps, the third or fourth store. A Mr. Burden ran the first hotel in San Saba. Dr. Hudson and Dr. Rogan were among the first doctors. Parson Jim Arnett was, perhaps, the first preacher, and Parson Cedar Top Smith was about the second to carry the gospel into this section. It was reported that John P. Robbins was born in San Saba County, January 27, 1854. A son of Bill Harkey was also one of the first born in the county, and Jack Crawford was also an early arrival. Jim Armenstroud's death numbered among the first. One of the Ingram children, who died in 1855 or 1856 from the effect of a bite of a centipede, was the first to be buried in the McAnnelly Bend graveyard.

L. D. Armenstroud and Elizabeth Robbins were among the first, if not the first, to marry in San Saba County.

The first election of county officers was held during the summer of 1856, and the following officials thereafter qualified for office: J. B. Harrell, Chief Justice; G. B. Cool County Clerk; J. W. Fleming, District Clerk; Eli Frustom Sheriff; J. T. Davis, Assessor and Collector; Estip, Treasurer; Wm. Thaxton, Surveyor, and J. H. Woods, J. W. Ear, J. H. Brown, and Montgomery, Commissioners.

Before the selection of a county seat, the commissioners court met at the following places: First, at the residence of Riley Woods; then at the residence of Samuel Carley and Samuel Linn; and fourth, at the residence of J. W. Fleming, the District Clerk.

The Brown and McAnnelly lands, the present site of San Saba, was chosen as the site for the county seat at an election held about September 1, 1856. This location has ever remained as the county seat, but an unsuccessful attempt was made in 1887 to move the county capitol to Baker Valley, about nine miles west of San Saba.

The first sale of lots occurred the first Monday and Tuesday in October, 1856. Sixty-eight lots were sold and added \$2,114.05 to the coffers of the county treasury. Only two hundred and twelve (\$212) dollars, however, was paid in advance.

According to the records, the commissioners court at one of its first meetings held November 17, 1856, awarded a contract to Matthew Hubbert to erect a courthouse. The consideration of this contract was \$850. Juries of view were also appointed to survey suitable roads to adjoining county seats and elsewhere.

Early population: In 1860, 824 whites and 89 slaves, total 913. In 1870, 1281 whites and 144 negroes, total 1425.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1855, Sabine Town, John Bell. In 1859, San Saba, W. T. Murray.

### **SECTION 131. - LAMPASAS COUNTY**

Lamparas County was created by virtue of an act approved February 1, 1856. Section Two of said act provided: "That the county seat of said county be located at the present town of Burleson, which shall be called Lamparas. \* \* \* Provided that the proprietor or owner of unsold lots in that town, shall donate and convey to said county such lots as may be required, for all the public buildings of said county."

The Chief Justice of Coryell County was charged with the duty of calling an election of county officers, and qualifying the electors. Both the county and county seat were named for the Lamparas River which flows through this section.

The splendid sulphur water and sulphur springs of Lamparas have long attracted the attention of health seekers.

The first settlers came to the county during the early 50's. The early discovery of sulphur water materially increased the growth of the county seat. S. M. Cross in his "Early Days in Central Texas" said:

"Lampapas County was settled and organized before Hamilton County, because of the sulphur water at that place, which was first discovered in the early settling of that part of the country. Those springs have been a great pleasure resort ever since. I have seen as much as twenty acres of ground, solidly covered at one time with tents in the day of their discovery, especially during the summer season. In fact, the sulphur water has made Lampapas what she is today, and will always keep it a good town."

Moses Hughes came to Lampapas in 1853, and settled at the Lampapas Sulphur Springs. His wife was afflicted with dropsy, and having heard of these springs, moved here for her health. She was completely cured. Others heard of her good fortune and shortly afterwards many people came here for their health.

R.D. (Bob) McAnnelley came to Lampapas County in 1854, and settled in the McAnnelley bend of the Colorado. Thomas Tate, Sam Bright, and father, Robert Marley, the Kimbells, Stiles, Colonel Wyatt, Charlie Mullins, and others came to the county during the same year.

John C. Cooksey, Wm. Jones, John Stanley, and Jackson Holley, settled in Lampapas County in 1855.

L. D. Nichols, Wm. Bagly, John Myers, Jefferson Huffstuttler, Henry Huffstuttler, James Kalb, father of Dick Kalb, came to the county in 1855 or 1856. Willaby and Joe Elderedge, Willis Russell, the Pucketts, Dr. Fudge, Mose Jackson, Brazilla Payne, J. H. Russell, and White H. McCaleb, were also living in Lampapas County as early as 1856.

Neil McAnnelley was one of the first, if not the first white child to be born. Dr. Hillory Ryan was living in Lampapas as early as 1856, and was one of the first doctors. F. A. Boyce and Dave Love opened a store in Lampapas during the same year. John Greenwood opened a store about the same time. Been Gooch also opened one of the first stores in Lampapas. A Mr. Gracy, whose son was massacred by the Indians, ran the first hotel. One of the first, if not the first public school in Lampapas was taught in 1856, in a clapboard building by Professor D. W. Holler. Messrs. Swenson and Swisher, mined salt in the county as early as 1858. The capacity of their plant was from seventy-five to one hundred bushels per day, and it sold at one dollar per bushel. The following numbered among the first officers of the county, and were serving as early as 1856: William Jones, and A. B. Burlison, Chief Justices; W. B. Covington, County Clerk; H. B. Dobbins, Sheriff; G. M. Haines, Assessor and Collector; and J. P. Gipson and Tom Murry, District Clerks. Since the fees of office were small, the early officers often resigned and new officers were installed.

Early population: In 1860, 874 whites, and 153 slaves, total 1028; in 1870, 1258 whites and 64 negroes, total 1344. In 1860, the county also contained one free negro. This was indeed very unusual for a frontier county in this part of the country.

Early post office and postmaster: In 1859, Lampasas, J. H. Greenwood. The early court records were destroyed by fire in 1871. Then again 1873 the records were destroyed by a flood. Consequently many of the court proceedings of the county were forever lost.

### **SECTION 132—COMANCHE COUNTY**

Several years before the arrival of the first settlers, bands of Comanche Indians during certain seasons of the year, camped not far distant from the present city of Comanche, and the first settlers to this section could still see the remains of these former Indian camp grounds, wigwams, etc. It was therefore, but natural that West Texas, the former home of the Comanche, should have at least one county named for this particular tribe.

Jesse Mercer, J. B. Homsley and son-in-law, Frank M. Collier, and Dr. Ransom Tuggle, were among the very first families to settle in the county and arrived late in the fall of 1854. James Cunningham, who was the father of John, Dave, Dick, Aaron and Jim Cunningham, and William Jennings, came to the county in October of the following year; Jennings, however, soon moved away. C. C. Campbell settled shortly afterwards. Thomas Dunlap and Jonathan Watson, Jack Wright and Andrew Birdsong, Kissam, and others readied Comanche County about one year later. E. L. and Thomas Deaton settled in Comanche County in 1856; Peter Johnson, J. Barbee, T. J. Nabors, the Crosses and others were living in the county shortly afterwards.

This county was created by an act approved January 25, 1856. Jesse Mercer, Charles Campbell, and Dr. Ransom Tuggle were appointed commissioners to organize the county and to provide for an election of county officers. After the county was organized and the county officers elected, the commissioners court were clothed with the authority of selecting a county seat within five miles of the center of the county. Ordinarily, the act creating the county also names the county capitol, but it was left up to the local authorities in the instant case.

The following were among the first officers to qualify in Comanche County: Jesse Bond, Chief Justice; F. M. Collier, County Clerk; James Martin, Sheriff, and T. J. Dunlap, Justice of the Peace; Jesse Reed, Assessor and Collector, and Andrew Kissam, District Clerk.

The county seat was at first located several miles east of Comanche and called Cora. But in 1858, when Hamilton County was carved out of Comanche and parts of other counties, a new county seat was established and called Comanche. Since then

there has been no change in either the name or location of the county capitol.

Andrew Kissam, one of the first district clerks, was also one of the first teachers. He taught at a place between Fleming and Newberg. Prof. Birdsong taught the first school in Newberg. Each of these schools were taught about 1856. J. M. Cross opened the first store in the county. It was located at Cora. Dick and Ship Carnes established a store a few months later. These stores were established three or four years before the Civil War and while Cora was the county seat. About the same time J. M. Cross and Jesse Mercer established a steam saw and grist mill in the same locality. Kinsberry opened a store in old Cora before the war after the county seat had been moved to Comanche.

The first marriage license was issued in 1856 to E. L. Deaton and Miss M. A. Wright.

Some of the first official acts of the commissioners court provided for the establishment of roads from the county seat to adjoining counties and elsewhere, and arranged for suitable quarters to be temporarily used as a courthouse. Judge N. W. Battle convened the first district court of the county May 2, 1858. James L. L. McCall, District Attorney; James Martin, Sheriff, and N. B. Ellis were present.

Early population: In 1860, 648 whites and 61 slaves, total 709.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Cora, T. C. Frost; Resly's Creek, J. H. Neel.

### **SECTION 133. - ERATH COUNTY**

The territory comprising this county was visited by Major George B. Erath, in the capacity of a surveyor, as early as 1845. Other surveyors, however, reached here earlier.

During 1855 Major George B. Erath, for whom the county was named, and who lived in Waco, led some early settlers from McLennan and planted them near the central part of the county. It was this small band of early citizens that started the city of Stephenville. John M. Stephens, Dr. W. W. McNeill, Thomas Arendell, Mefford Henley, Thomas Newby, John Jones, James McCarthy and perhaps others, comprised the party. John M. Stephens erected the first house in Stephenville and John Maloney assisted in its construction.

But the honor of being the first settlers of the county evidently goes to Thomas W. Holland and A. H. Dobkins and party, who came to Erath County in 1854 and settled in the vicinity of Dublin. They concluded, however, their location was too far from the settlements, so they soon moved to Coryell County. During this same year, however, John M. Stephens located and filed on land now occupied by the town that bears his name.

Peter Garland, settled on Barton's Creek in the north part of the county as early as 1856. The Gordan's, Wylies, Jim Walker and family, D. R. Thornton and others settled in the Barton Creek Community about the same time or a little later. John Maloney reached Erath County as early as 1855. John Reason and Bill Jeffries built log cabins on Resley's Creek near Dublin in 1855 or 1856. John W. Middleton settled on the head of Kickapoo during the latter year. John Fry, H. W. Carter, Leiman, Alex Alexander and Ben Alexander, Tom Carmack, Alex McNeill, John Low, John Bibbs, the Newbys, Tom Salmon, the Craigs, Clayborn Oxford, James Ferguson, G. W. Lidia, William Martin, C. M. O'Neal, W. J. O'Neal, G. W. O'Neal, the several families of Keaths, and many others settled in Erath County between 1856 and 1859. In 1860 there were twenty-four hundred and twenty-five people living in the county.

An act was approved January 25, 1856, creating the county which was named for Major George B. Erath, who was born in Vienna, Austria, January 1, 1813, came to Texas in 1833 and shortly afterwards engaged in surveying along the West Texas frontier. Erath and Comanche counties were created the same day. The town of Stephenville was named for John M. Stephens, and was a flourishing frontier village before the creation of the county. July 4, 1855, John M. Stephens filed with the clerk of Bosque County a proposal to donate sufficient lands for county purposes, provided Stephenville be made the county seat. The Legislature accepted his offer. When the county was created, the Chief Justice of Bosque County was instructed to call an election of county officers and to qualify the electors.

John M. Stephens, the father of Stephenville, also established the first store and first hotel. John Fry and Dr. Boatman opened stores in Stephenville as early as 1858. H. W. Carter moved a stock of goods from Hill County and established a store the same year. Leiman and Alex Alexander were in the mercantile business in Stephenville as early as 1858. Erath County's first drug store was established by Dr. W. W. McNeill, who was also the first doctor.

The first courthouse was constructed of clapboards. It was also used as a school house and Miss Betty Darter was one of the early teachers. The hotel and one or two of the business houses were constructed of clapboards. Practically all of the other buildings erected before 1860 were constructed of logs; and Stephenville, not unlike the other frontier towns, was indeed a log cabin village. Most of the dwellings had dirt floors.

The following were among the first officers of the county and were serving as early as 1856: J. A. McNeill, Chief Justice; W. W. McNeill, County Clerk; C. Needham, Sheriff; Thomas Cavnack, Assessor and Collector.

John Low was one of the first attorneys and lived in Stephenville as early as 1858.

Rev. William Robinson who settled on the Paluxy in 1854, in a little log cabin on the courthouse square, September 7, 1855, preached the first sermon ever delivered in Erath County.

John A. McNeill was one of the first, if not the first white child born in Stephenville. The death of Sam W. Stephens, who was killed in an Indian fight on Elm Creek six miles north and east of Palo Pinto, numbered among the first to be buried at Stephenville.

Early population: In 1860, 2,307 whites and 118 slaves, total 2,425. In 1870, 1,712 whites and 89 negroes, total 1,801.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Erath, John Flanagan; Paluxy, Wm. Robinson; Stephenville. H. W. Carter.

#### **SECTION 134. - PARKER COUNTY**

As early as 1849, settlers were living in the western part of Tarrant and not far distant from the line of Parker. Since the movement of the early frontiersmen was gradually westward as we should naturally suppose, Parker County was settled shortly afterwards. T. Reynolds, David Stimson, William Woody, Sam Woody, John Woody, Bryce Woody, Criss Reynolds, and perhaps a very few others reached Parker in 1852 or 1853. Mrs. Mary Ann Miller and her ten children, Stephen Heffington and Rev. J. W. Godfrey, also came to Parker County in 1853.

Hesikiah Caldwell, Jim Sullivan, Marion Harris, Johnnie Eubanks, who two years later moved on out into Palo Pinto County, came to Parker County in 1854. Pleasant and Mann Tackett, Solomon Hines, Westley Blanton, Jim Miller, Robert George, Perry Allen, Tom Allen, Rubin Allen, Tom Caldwell, and a few others also reached the county during the same year. Most of these early settlers located in the Walnut Creek Community. About the same time Pendleton Porter settled on Grindstone west of Weatherford.

Wilson and Sam Littlefield, and Singleton Gilbert, who was afterwards killed by Indians in Eastland County, moved into the Littlefield Bend of the Brazos, December 24, 1854.

Jerry Cockburn, Willis Copeland, Loving Chifton, Bill Dixon, George Dobbs, Tom Barker, Joe Barker, Jim Barker, Eligha Skidmore, and perhaps a few others located in Parker County during 1854.

Many of the early settlers who came to the county before 1856 lived there a short while and then moved on out into Palo Pinto, Young, and other western counties.

Parker County was created by an act approved December 12, 1855, and named for Isaac Parker, a representative from Tarrant. He assisted in the passage of the act creating the county. The Chief Justice of Tarrant County was instructed to call an election of county officers and to qualify the Chief Justice, who in turn was instructed to qualify the remaining officers.

It was made the duty of the commissioners court to select not less than three suitable sites not more than three miles from the center of the county to be run as candidates for the county seat. The Legislature also provided that the county seat be named Weatherford, in honor of Jefferson Weatherford, who at the time lived in Dallas County, and was State Senator of the district which included the new county.

The first election was held early in 1856. Robert S. Porter was elected Chief Justice; John H. Prince, County Clerk; Joshua Barker, Sheriff; H. G. Cantrell, Assessor and Collector; William Green, District Clerk; and John Parker, brother of Isaac Parker, W. B. Hays, Hill Walker, and W. B. Fondren, County Commissioners. These officers served until August, 1856, when the state election was held and a new set of officers elected. At this election John Matlock, was elected Chief Justice; J. H. Prince, County Clerk; W. M. Green, District Clerk; Samuel Barker, Treasurer; Robert P. (Bob) Baker, Sheriff, and John Parker, W.B. Fondren, James Kidwell and A. B. Smith County Commissioners.

Parker County was surveyed early in 1856 by Llewellyn Murphy and Isaac O. Headley. D. O. Norton plotted and surveyed the city of Weatherford.

In due time the commissioners placed in nomination the present site of Weatherford, which was then state land and three-fourths of a mile southeast of the center of the county; the Skidmore place three and one-half miles north of the center of the county, and the Levi Kidwell place two and one-fourth miles north of the center of the county. The present site of Weatherford received a majority of all votes cast and January 24, 1857, in accordance with the creating act, Governor E. M. Pease, issued Patent No. 911 to Parker County to 320 acres of land. It seemed the first sale of lots occurred June 24, 1856. Since the county had not received a patent, the sale must have been conditional.

The commissioners court realized \$9,700 from this sale. James R. Campbell, paid \$217 for a business lot on the south-side of the square. A second sale of lots which netted the county about \$2,000 occurred August 12, 1856.

Judge Nat M. Burford held the first district court in the spring of 1856 under a large post oak tree standing by the old Fort Worth and Belknap Road, at a point about five or six miles north of

Weatherford. The first civil suit which was styled J. Evans vs. J. B. Price, related to cattle; the second suit, styled H. G. Cantrell vs. Wm. Reynolds, was a suit for damages.

In November, 1856, the first courthouse of the county was completed. The contract was originally awarded to a Mr. Erwin, but he failed to complete the contract, so B. L. Rickey finished the small structure, which stood on the north side of the courthouse square. In 1858 a new courthouse was finished by S. L. Rickey and J. R. Campbell. This building was two-story, forty by fifty feet and constructed by local made brick. It cost \$6,750. A \$4,000 jail was constructed about the same time by Messrs. Phelps & White. During the early morning of May 13, 1874, fire of an unknown origin destroyed the courthouse and practically all of the county records.

Reports conflict concerning the first stores. Josh Barker opened a store on the prairie about ten miles east of north of Weatherford. We are inclined to believe that this was the first store established in the county. To be sure it was one of the first and was started under an arbor, but later a little building was erected. In about 1855 Rev. Francis established a store at Veales Station, which was then known as Cream Level. This store was three or four hundred yards south of the present Veale Station, and was constructed of logs. In those days goods were hauled from Houston, Jefferson and Shreveport, as well as other eastern points.

About 1855 Mr. Beaman established a store on the old Fort Worth and Belknap Road six miles north of Weatherford. This location was one of the contestants for the county seat and it was here under an oak tree near the store, the first district court of Parker County was held. William Beckwith in 1856 opened the first store in Weatherford.

Parker County's first newspaper, "The Frontier News," was established by A. Van Horn, D. O. Norton and C. L. Jordan in 1858. The publication changed hands two or three times before 1862 when it was discontinued on account of the Civil War. R. W. Duke, edited the paper most of the time after 1858.

In 1860 General John R. Baylor and Maj. H. T. Hamner brought out the first issue of the "White Man." This paper really belonged to both Parker and Jack Counties. Because of its attitude toward the Indians it soon reached a circulation of approximately two thousand copies. The "White Man" was sold to E. L. Rickey, John Devours and Alfred T. Obenchain in October of 1860, and was discontinued during December of the following year.

January 1, 1867, Col. R. W. Duke, launched a new publication known as the Weatherford Times.

In May, 1854, Rev. B. A. Kemp, Rev. J. W. Chalk and Rev. Simeon Wright held Parker County's first meeting and established a Methodist Church at a place known as Elm Grove about eight miles east of Weatherford. Rev. Pleasant Tackett, Samuel Leonard, Dr. T. O. Ellis, J. H. Price, Joshua Barker, John Godfrey, and others established a Methodist Church at Old Goshian, on Walnut Creek, several miles north of Weatherford, during the same year.

The Baptist were also instrumental in carrying the gospel into this section at a very early date. One of the first, if not the first Baptist Church of Parker County, was organized July 6, 1856, at the home of Anderson Green, six miles northeast of Weatherford.

During the same year at the home of B. K. Emerson on Sanchez Creek, Dr. S. S. Taylor, who at the time lived in Hood County, organized the first Christian Church of Parker County. Concerning Dr. Taylor and his congregation, H. Smythe writing in 1877, said:

"The earliest ministrations of the Christian Church, or the Disciples of Christ, in Parker County, were in 1856. The first congregation assembled at the house of B. K. Emerson, on Sanchez Creek, eight miles south of Weatherford. It was a gathering of nineteen persons. Rev. S. S. Taylor, now of Palo Pinto, preached the first sermon. These meetings continued at Mr. Emerson's house for nearly a year, and the services created considerable interest. Those belonging to other denominations were frequent listeners to the word of God preached by Rev. Mr. Taylor. In 1857 the little congregation changed its place of meeting to the court house in the county town, and organized a church with Rev. Mr. Taylor as pastor, and B. K. Emerson and Thomas U. Toler as overseers or elders. Rev. J. J. Hamilton of Cleburne, one of the little flock who planted the banner of the Cross on Sanchez Creek, was ordained for the ministry, and thereafter took charge of the infant church in Weatherford."

October 23, 1854, a large rattlesnake struck Margaret Lee an orphan girl, who came to Parker County with Pleasant Tackett and family. When bitten she was after a feather bed, which had been sunning on a brush pile. She died the following day and her death, no doubt, was the first to occur in Parker County. Shortly afterwards, however, a Gorman boy had the misfortune of getting his feet entangled in the stake rope of a wild horse and was dragged to death.

Bryce Woody and Miss Missouri Ann Miller, were the first settlers of Parker County to be united in marriage. They married in 1854 or 1855 and since the county was unorganized their license was issued at Birdville.

Perry Tackett, son of Pleasant Tackett, was born January 1, 1855, and was one of the first, if not the first, white children born in Parker County.

Pleasant Tackett was not only a preacher, but was also a frontier school teacher. He taught a school at Goshian as early as 1854, and at Springtown not later than 1855. Stephen Heffington taught a school under a live oak tree on Bear Creek in 1855. Mr. Lumslin taught in Parker County as early as the following year. John Prince, the first county clerk, also taught one of the first, if not the first school in Weatherford.

Early population: In 1860, 3,991 whites and 222 slaves, total 4,213; in 1870, 3,893 whites and 293 negroes, total 4186.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Balch, Silas Smith; Copper Hill, W. B. Fondren; Gamma, Eli Hutchings; Newburg, Robert Elkins; Veal's Station, A. H. Barnes; Weatherford, E. T. Balch.

### **SECTION 135 - WISE COUNTY**

Sam Woody waded into the wilds of Wise County and selected a home in 1853, about three miles north of Aurora. Jim Mann and Ben Crews were with Mr. Woody on this expedition. The following year Sam Woody moved his family from Tarrant into this new territory. But when he reached his new location, Mr. Woody was surprised to find that it was occupied by Tom McCarroll, who had moved up from Dallas County. Mr. Woody, however, selected another location farther north. When he built his home which was one of the first, if not the first, ever erected in Wise County, Jim and John Woody, relatives, came over from Parker County and assisted in its construction. Before the Woody home was completed, James Mann also moved into Wise County and did his part towards developing this section of the state.

John Butler, William Calhoun, James Brooks, Dr. Standifer, Carlo Ball, Samuel L. Terrell, L. Cartwright, Wm. Perrin, John W. Hale, Major S. M. Gose, J. A. Watson, M. A. Shirley, John T. Waggoner, and others moved to Wise County during 1854.

S. Saschall, Dr. Thomas Stewart, C. D., D. C. and R. G. Cates, J. H. Martin, E. T. McDaniel. P. E. Lewis, Electrous Halsell and others arrived in 1855. Daniel Waggoner located in the county several years before the Civil War. J. D. White and many others settled in Wise County as early as 1856.

Wise County was created by an act approved January 23, 1856, and named for Henry A. Wise, once Governor of Virginia, member of Congress, favored annexation of Texas and was a General in the Confederate Army. The Chief Justice of Denton County was charged with the duty of providing for an election of county officers to be held on the first Monday in May, 1856. The

store house of Daniel Howell was county seat, to be known as Taylorsville, was selected.

The election of county officers was held at the time designated by statutes, and the following were elected: Wm. S. Oates, Chief Justice; Granger Salmon, District Clerk; Absalom Bishop, County Clerk; J. W. Hale, Sheriff; E. C. Mount, Assessor and Collector; John T. Waggoner, Treasurer, and B. B. Haney, George Bridwell, S. L. Terrell, and J. C. Kincannon, Commissioners.

Several places were contestants for the county seat but the present site of Decatur was selected. As prescribed by statute, it was first called Taylorsville in honor of General Zachary Taylor. But because he took an active part in the Whig party, January 7, 1858, the name of the county seat was changed to Decatur, in honor of Commodore Stephen Decatur, a noted American naval officer.

Mr. and Mrs. James Proctor deeded sixty acres to the county for the county seat, which was plotted and surveyed similar to the plan of McKinney. A public sale of lots at Taylorsville was soon made and the business lots brought \$100 each. Howell and Allen moved their store to the new location. The store building of Howell & Allen, the residence of Mr. Howell, and the residence of Electrous Halsell, were about the three first buildings erected in Taylorsville or Decatur.

Mrs. Louisa Duckworth and Jim Brooks were the first white children born in the county. Mrs. Duckworth, a daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Tom McCarroll, was born September 2, 1854. Jim Brooks was born about two or three months later. Ben F. Allen was the first white child born in Decatur.

Daniel Howell, who previously lived at Alton in Denton County, in 1855 opened a store in Wise County. This store was located close to a spring near the center of the county and, no doubt, Mr. Howell thought he was planting the nucleus of the future county seat. Elmer Allen assisted him and a few months later bought an interest in the stock of goods. The store then became known as Howell & Allen store.

In Wise, as well as Parker, the Methodists were the first to perfect a local organization. In the summer of 1854, Rev. W. H. H. Bradford, Rev. John Roe, Thomas Cogdell, Charles Browder, Ben Monroe, Dr. Standifer, L. Cartwright, Jim Brooks, and, perhaps, others, met at the home of Mr. and Mrs. Brooks where the church was organized. A brush arbor was erected during the following fall, and the locality became known as the Sand Hill Community, because of sandy hills nearby,

A second church community known as Swayback, was organized two years later. During the fall of 1856, the Baptist

organized a church at the home of Samuel Perrin. Rev. J. T. Willis of Denton Creek conducted the exercises. The Methodists of the Callett Creek settlement also formed a religious organization at the home of J. W. Hale, not later than 1856.

Eli Hoag, during the summer of 1855, taught the first school of Wise County. During the summer of the following year, Mr. Bleffins also taught a school. William Fletcher taught during the fall and winter of the same year, and Mr. Fletcher was followed by Prof. J. D. White, who played an important part in the early history of Wise County.

Just before the Civil War, the first permanent court house was erected out of a special tax levied by a special act of the legislature. It was a frame building forty feet square, erected by Joe Head. Lumber for this court house was hauled from Wood County. The courthouse frame was made of timber cut from the West Fork of the Trinity. This building was destroyed by fire, November 26, 1881.

Early population; In 1860, 3,031 whites, one free negro and 128 slaves, total 3,160. In 1870, 1,399 whites and 51 negroes, total, 1,450.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Cactus, W. H. Hunt; Catletts Creek, S. L. Terrell; Decatur, Daniel Howell; Odessa, M. E. Marshall; Prairie Point, W. H. Patton.

### **SECTION 136. - YOUNG COUNTY**

The first, citizens to advance into this section were contractors of various kinds, who found employment and a market for their products at old Fort Belknap. John and Will Peveler, brothers, were contractors at this early army camp, as early as 1852.

Archibald B. Medlan, P. S. George, H. B. George, and L. L. Williams, moved from Navarro to Fort Belknap and were among the very first to locate on the Brazos above Hill, Johnson and Bosque counties. From Fort Belknap where the party was joined by William Marlin, Jesse Sutton, and about two others, these early settlers moved to a suitable location about three miles or more below the fort. The surviving old timers interviewed, differ about the date of the arrival of this first settlement. Some place the date as early as 1852, while others as late as 1854. But Uncle Archie Medlan, himself, in his autobiography, which was written nearly a quarter of a century ago, made the statement that he and his party came to Young County in February, 1853.

It was not long after the arrival of these early settlers until the fruits of the forest were to be enjoyed by others. The Williams family, Johnson families, Lee Dobbs, Bill Dobbs, Chesley S. Dobbs, Peter Harmonson, James Duff, Pleasant Tackett, L. L. Tackett. George Tackett, A. C. Tackett, and the remaining family of Pleasant Tackett as it then existed, W. H. Burkett,

Harve Matthews, Robert Matthews, the Stanleys, the Southerlands, E. Skidmore, James M. Gibbons, George Bragg, Hugh Harper, Patrick Murphy, Edward Wohlforth, James H. Swindells, the Roarks, John Anderson, Arch Ratliff, Bob Whitten, Ance Whitten, Will Whitten, and others were living in Young County not later than 1856, the year of the first organization.

William Kennedy settled a short distance below Eliasville in Young County during 1857. David Peveler and family who played an important part in the early history of the West Texas frontier, settled in Palo Pinto County in 1856, and made Young County their permanent home two years later. The Hambys, Timmons, Profitts, Brogdons, and many others have been frequently mentioned in connection with the early history of Young County. But it is impossible to give the names of each and all of the early pioneers.

James Duff and Roark opened stores in Belknap as early as 1856, and some of the first meetings of the commissioners court were held in their places of business. Charlie Barnard who previously operated a trading house near Fort Spunky in Hood County, moved his merchandise, in 1855, to the lower reservation in Young County, where he opened the first store of this section.

This county was created by an act approved February 2, 1856. W. H. Burkett, Peter Harmonson, Allen Johnson, Harry George and James Duff, were appointed commissioners to call an election of county officers, organize the county and to select one or more suitable sites to be run as candidates for the county seat. The county was named in honor of William C. Young, a member of the annexation convention of 1845, and Belknap, which was selected as the county seat, derived its name from the post.

Old Belknap remained the county seat until near the close of the Civil War, when the citizens voted to move the county capitol to Flag Springs, about one and one-half miles north of Graham. But this distinction Flag Springs never enjoyed for the county soon became disorganized and attached to Jack for judicial purposes.

The county remained unorganized for several years, but an act was approved April 17, 1874, appointing H. D. Williams, R. J. Johnson, and D. C. Brooks, Commissioners, to reorganize the county government.

The first meetings of the commissioners court of which we have any record were held at old Fort Belknap, and the minutes disclose the following information:

"The State of Texas, Young County, Monday, August 18, 1856. Be it Remembered, that the honorable county court of Young

County, in the State of Texas was began and Holden, at the store of James Duff in said County and State on Monday, 18th day of August, in the year of our Lord One Thousand Eight Hundred and Fifty-six. Present: Peter Harmonson, Chief Justice; Chelsea Dobbs, L. L. Williams, Commissioners; William Burkett, Clerk; Patrick Murphy, Sheriff."

September 29, 1856, the commissioners met at Fort Belknap, in one of the government buildings, and rejected the title bond of E. F. Abbott to fifty acres near Fort Belknap. This land was offered as a townsite for the county seat. They also requested that R. H. Matthews proceed without delay to run the east and south lines of Young County. The next meeting of the commissioners court was at Roark's Store House, in Belknap, but since no quorum was present, the court adjourned.

During a meeting held January 5, 1857, at Roark's Store House, the court ordered that a public sale of town lots be made Friday, February 8, 1857. February 17, following, the Court passed an order providing that a well be dug on the public square, and McGuffie was allowed \$18 for clearing and cleaning the public square and streets in Belknap. During the same meeting, the court authorized Peter Harmonson, Chief Justice, to contract with some suitable person to build a concrete building eighteen by thirty-six on Lot One, Block Nine, in Belknap, to be used as a county clerk's office. The contract was let to Pleasant Witt, and the building accepted November 17, 1857. The first county officers of Young County were: Peter Harmonson, Chief Justice; W. H. Burkett, County Clerk; Patrick Murphy, Sheriff; Chesley S. Dobbs, George Bragg, Hugh Harper, and L. L. Williams, Commissioners.

October 3, 1856, the county clerk issued the first marriage license to W. M. Dobbs and Elizabeth Johnson, who married two days later. The second issued Dec. 3, 1856, to James Duff and Harriet T. Paul, who married the following day. The third to Edward Wolffarth and Charty E. Sanders who were married June 28, 1857. Ed Wolffarth not only came in for third place in the records of marriage license, but was also the third sheriff of Young County.

Washburn who was killed by Indians about 1853, was one of the first, if not the first, to be buried in this section. Major Jesse Stem who was murdered in 1854, and E. Skidmore, killed in 1855, also numbered among the early deaths.

The first district court of Young County convened at Belknap in November, 1858. Judge Nat M. Burford, presided. James Robinson was district attorney. Peter Harmonson was appointed foreman of the Grand Jury, and sixty-five bills of indictment were returned after being in session six days. One indictment was for murder, one for assault in an attempt to murder, one for illegal marking and branding, and the remainder were for

gaming. It appears that many of the most prominent citizens played faro, monte, and other games around the army post. James A. Woolfalk, who came from Sedalia, Missouri, to Fort Belknap in 1858 over the old Butterfield route, at this term of court, applied for license to practice law. Rachel and Anarcha, free negroes, applied to the court to be adjudged slaves of Major George H. Thomas of the Second Cavalry. It will be recalled that Major Thomas became a General in the Union Army.

When Young County was re-organized in 1874, H. D. Williams was elected Chief Justice; W. I. Ditto, County Clerk; Richard Kirk, Sheriff; A. B. Medlin, Treasurer; G. A. Graham, Surveyor, and S. M. Glasgame, N. J. Timmons, J. N. and A. Timmons, Commissioners. The county records were moved from Jacksboro to Belknap.

But the act, passed in 1874, and providing for the reorganization of Young County, also stipulated that an election be held to select a county seat. In this election Belknap's strongest opposition was the promising village of Graham, which was named for Colonel E. S. and G. A. Graham.

The latter place was near the old salt works, which were first operated by Judge Bowers, later by Captain Gant, and purchased by the Grahams in 1871. The Grahams erected a more expensive plant at the salt works.

Certain heavy stockholders of the Texas & Pacific Railway being built westward, were close friends of the Graham brothers. These friends informed E. S. and S. A. Graham that the Texas & Pacific Railway would be built through Young County. As a consequence, in 1872, they plotted and surveyed the town of Graham, and also, simultaneously opened a land office. But control of the Texas & Pacific passed into the hands of Jay Gould, who caused the road to be built farther south through Palo Pinto County.

Graham, nevertheless, continued to grow. The first building, a little store, was erected by a Mr. Wilson from Philadelphia. The first residence was erected by J. G. Tackett. The Grahams extensively advertised their new town, and by 1877, the year the Texas Cattle Raisers Association was organized, there were over one hundred buildings in the little western city.

A warm fight was waged for the county seat with these two locations as strong contenders. The election was held November 3, 1874, and resulted in the selection of Graham. Subsequently, over the protest of county authorities, it appeared the records were moved to the home of A. B. Kendall. Civil strife arose and a lawsuit instituted to recover the public records was not settled for several years, and the rivalry over the county seat still exists.

The first courthouse in Graham was erected in 1876 on the west side of the large square. Judge A. J. Hood convened the first district court November 8, 1875.

In 1877 the Cattle Raisers Association met in Graham and perfected their organization. Col. Kit Carter was elected president.

In 1879 Graham was given a federal court. This had a tendency to permanently establish the county seat.

According to reports, February 15, 1876, an effort was made to release Dallas Rodgers and others from the county jail. As a consequence a considerable battle was fought and in the engagement A.W. Hayes was killed. Troubles have also developed in more recent times, but this work is devoted to the pioneer period.

Both the old California Trail and Butterfield Route passed through Young County. From 1849 to the outbreak of the Civil War, long trains of wagons were repeatedly passing toward the Golden Gate.

Early population: In 1860, 500 whites and 92 slaves, total 592. In 1870 the Indians had reduced the population to 135 whites and four negroes, total 139. Had a few more people been massacred, Young County, like Clay, would have been entirely abandoned.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Brazos Agency, C. E. Barnard; Fort Belknap. Wm. Burkett.

### **SECTION 137 - JACK COUNTY**

Mrs. Phoebe Sanders, a widow, together with her family of nine children; William Parmer, Tom Burns, a Methodist minister, John Limley, Sam Limley, Wm. Ramsey, Andy Harris, and Tice Carager, pitched their tents in the Salt Hill Community about eight miles north of the present town of Graford in the fall of 1854. These pioneers were the first people to establish permanent homes in Jack County. But these parties had no sooner cleared their camp grounds when others came. Will, John, Jim and Jeff Reasoner came to Jack County late in 1854 or shortly afterwards, and settled in the same section. Aunt Huldly Reasoner, who was a Limley, does not place the Reasoners in the group that composed the original families, but states that William Reasoner came in 1855. Others, however, are of the opinion that the Reasoners arrived late in 1854. John Wood and James B. Doshier, after making locations in 1854, settled in the Salt Hill Community, February 1, 1855. These two gentlemen are generally credited with building the first two houses in Jack County. For the settlers mentioned above were still living in

tents and did not build log cabins until after Wood and Doshier had erected their homes.

We are inclined to believe, however, that John Ribble should be credited with building the first house in Jack County. Although he did not move his family to the county until perhaps as late as April, 1855. Nevertheless, he and Mark Dalton moved cattle to Dillingham Branch in 1854 and made locations for a future home. Mark Dalton settled near the mouth of Rock Creek in Palo Pinto. John Ribble erected a log cabin over in Jack County. This home was built late in 1854, and during the trip that Mark Dalton and John Ribble moved the cattle. W. A. (Bill) Ribble, who lives in Graham, Texas, and who is the president of the Old Settlers Reunion, which meets at New Castle each summer, is a son of John Ribble. Tom Ribble is a younger son. Mose Terry was evidently living in Jack County before April of 1855, for he went back to Fannin County in an ox wagon to help move Mr. Ribble. Jim Taylor and the Balsingames were also early arrivals during the same year. B. L. Ham selected a location about twelve miles west of Jacksboro in 1854, and moved his family to the county early in 1855. Carroll Snodgrass settled near B. L. Ham during the same year. Daniel Kutch and his son-in-law, Rev. Madaris, located in the Salt Hill Community in 1855. Calvin Gage and Moses Damron wintered cattle on Carroll's Creek in 1855, then moved to Los Creek during the following year. Rad Ellis and Newton Atkinson moved to the Salt Hill Community in 1855. J. B. Earhart arrived in the eastern part of Jack County as early as 1856. Dick, William and Henry Hensley, Jeff Reagan and Jack Bailey came to Jack County during the same year. Fred Speer, J. W. Donathan, Charles McQuerry and Bob Carson numbered among the early arrivals.

By 1856 there were sufficient people to petition the Legislature for a separate organization. As a consequence, an act was passed and approved August 27, 1856, creating from Cooke a new county called Jack, in honor of W. H. and P. C. Jack, early patriots of the Republic of Texas. J. W. Terry, E. Coker and Rad Ellis were authorized to organize the county and call an election of county officers to be held on the third Monday in October, 1856. It was also made their duty to select two or more suitable sites within five miles of the center of the county to run as candidates for the county seat, to be called Mesquiteville. The home of E. Coker was designated as the temporary county seat until a permanent location could be made.

But it seems a majority of the above commissioners moved away before the county was organized. As a consequence, the citizens held a meeting May 30, 1857, to perfect an organization. Daniel Kutch, was called to the chair and W. C. Ghormley appointed secretary. Although this meeting was without legal authority from the Legislature; nevertheless, they proceeded in good faith to organize the county and to call an election to select county officers and to locate the county seat.

This election was held July 4, 1857, in the Salt Hill Community, not far from the present Barton's Chapel. Robert Carson was elected Chief Justice; Jeff Reagan, County Clerk; Charles McGuerry, Tax Assessor and Collector; J. W. Donathan, Treasurer; and Fred Speer, Sheriff. Los Creek received fifty-four votes which was the necessary majority, and was therefore selected as the county seat. For approximately one year, the new county capitol was called Mesquiteville, as named by statute. But in 1858, however, its name was changed to Jacksboro.

Although the above commissioners failed to act in organizing the county and the citizens who did organize the county acted without legal authority, nevertheless their official acts were legalized by a law passed and approved February 6, 1858.

Tobe Mason was one of the first white children born in Jack County. The first marriage license was issued to Jim McKinney and Cynthia Briscoe, both of whom were massacred by Indians in northern Parker County. Their license were issued April 12, 1858, and executed the following day.

William Reasoner established the first store, which was located in the Salt Hill Community and was opened not later than 1856, and perhaps as early as 1855. Wesley Ruble opened a small store a little later. Mr. Storey opened one of the first, if not the first store in Jacksboro. It was located on the south side of the square. A Mr. Crane shortly afterwards opened a second store.

Perhaps the first school of Jack County was taught near the home of Alf Lane in the Salt Hill Community. A very early school was also taught in a little log school building in Jacksboro.

The Salt Hill Community also boasts of the first church. In Jack as well as in Wise and Parker, the Methodists were the first to conduct religious exercises. About one-fourth of a mile north of old Christian under an arbor, in 1857 or 1858, the Methodists also conducted Jack County's first camp meeting. Many of the local citizens, who attended this meeting came in ox wagons to hear the two hour sermons. Large irregular rocks were rolled under the arbor to serve as seats. Had motion pictures been invented and these early scenes thrown on the screen today, no doubt we would fail to fully comprehend the seriousness and sincerity of these early settlers.

The Salt Hill Community derived its name from a salt works near the present home of Nute Wood and was operated before and during the Civil War. Some of the signs of this early industry can still be seen.

The following account by H. H. McConnell vividly portrays conditions in Jack County immediately following the close of the Civil War:

"I think at this time (1866) there were only two tumble-down old buildings on the north side of the square, one of which was occupied as a grocery, in the rear of which was a stone building (now gone), used as the sutler's store. A concrete building stood on the southeast corner of the square, an old frame on the northwest corner, a dilapidated "rawhide" house on the west side of the square, used as a court house, and a dozen or more log houses scattered around the suburbs."

Early population: In 1860, 950 whites and 50 slaves, total 1,000; in 1870, 620 whites and 72 negroes, total 692.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Antelope, B. F. Spear; Jacksborough, E. Cole.

### **SECTION 138 - PALO PINTO COUNTY**

Palo Pinto County derived its name from one of its principal streams, "The Palo Pinto," as it was often called during the 30's, 40's and 50's. Early maps classed this stream as a river. It is now generally known as a creek. The word "Palo Pinto" means "post painted" or "painted post".

The famous William A. (Big Foot) Wallace in 1837 was baptized as a frontiersman near Palo Pinto Creek.

Palo Pinto County is, perhaps, the most rugged and rough of all the North Texas counties. Its scenery too, is unexcelled in the southwest. The irregular course of the Brazos presents more than three hundred miles of river front in this county alone. Frontiersmen as far south as San Saba County during the pioneer days, went up into the rough and rugged hills of Palo Pinto County to hunt bear and other game.

Surveying expeditions reached Palo Pinto County as early as the 30's. The Abner Ashworth Survey was located during the late 30's and patented in 1840. But perhaps the most interesting survey is situated at the mouth of Big Caddo Creek, and is a part of the Boydston Ranch. This survey contains a thousand and eight acres, known as Abstract Number 262, and patented September 16, 1851, to Albert Sidney Johnston.

From 1849 to 1855, General Johnston was paymaster for several of the southwestern military posts, and after 1851, regularly made trips to Fort Belknap and Fort Phantom Hill. No doubt, it was the impressions received on these trips that caused General Johnston to file his head-right in the hills of Palo Pinto County, about which he often expressed his admiration.

George R. Bevers, who lived in Navarro, came to Palo Pinto County during the summer of 1854, and selected a place for a future home near the old Flat Rock Crossing of Big Keechi, three miles east of Graford. This location was on the old Fort Worth and Belknap Road, and at that time, no white people were living in the territory afterwards created into Palo Pinto County. He returned to Navarro and before he moved, which was during June of the following year, a few families had already arrived in this section.

We have in our possession the minutes of the meeting of the Palo Pinto County Pioneer and Old Settlers Association held at Palo Pinto, Texas, July 21, 22 and 23, 1897. These minutes state that Uncle Reuben Vaughn moved to Denton County, October 27, 1852, and to Palo Pinto, September 5, 1854, and settled on Big Keechi, close to the old Fort Worth and Belknap Road. If this be correct, Uncle Reuben was perhaps the first white settler to locate and build a home in Palo Pinto County.

J. J. Cureton, grandfather of C. M. Cureton, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Texas, and H. J. Cureton, an attorney-at-law at Meridian, and I. W. Price, a relative, settled on Williams Branch near old Black Springs in the fall of 1854. J. W. Price settled first and J. J. Cureton arrived shortly afterward. Some of the Prestons and John Durkee arrived about the same time or a little later. These families were destined to be among the frontiers' foremost families and were among the first to build homes in Palo Pinto County.

I am reliably informed by some of the first pioneers, that Mark Dalton moved his family to Palo Pinto County in the fall of 1854. But in the above minutes and in a book styled, "Cattle Industry of Texas," printed in 1895, in accounts giving the life of Lucendia Dalton, wife of Marcus L. Dalton, we are informed that Mr. and Mrs. Dalton moved to Palo Pinto County in 1855. But regardless of whether they came late in 1854 or early in 1855, it is certain these valued citizens were among the very first to settle in the rough and rugged hills of this section.

Simpson Crawford located on East Keechi in the spring of 1855; Billy and Jack Caruthers, and the McElraths came in the spring of 1855 and located on Big Keechi. W. L. Lasater during June of the same year, settled on East Keechi. George R. Bevers, as previously stated, also moved his family to Palo Pinto County about the same time, and built a home on land located during the preceding year.

The Bevers place was about one day's journey from both Weatherford and Fort Belknap. As a consequence, many well known persons often stopped at his home for the night. Although it has been nearly seventy years ago, Mrs. H. G. Taylor, daughter of George R. Severs, still recalls Maj. Robert S. Neighbors, Charlie Barnard, and others stopping on such

occasions. She also recalls seeing the old Mexican ox carts, supported by two wooden wheels, the extensive freighting with wagons and the movement of soldiers as they traveled to and from old Fort Belknap along the Fort Belknap and Fort Worth Road.

This early road struck the county only a short distance to the east of the present town of Salesville. It then went north of west through Loving's Valley, passed Mountain Springs, crossed Big Keechi, near the George E. Bevers place, passed close to the present town of Graford, passed near the present Sikes' place, and then led in a west and north direction toward Fort Belknap. And it was this road that had been in existence since 1851, that led the first settlers to the northeastern and northern portion of the county.

Oliver Loving settled about one and a half miles northeast of Salesville. It was from this family Lovings Valley derived its name. Oliver Loving was indeed one of the most widely known of all of the early frontiersmen. It was in 1867, while a partner of Charlie Goodnight, that he was mortally wounded by the Indians on the Pecos. United States District Judge James C. Wilson, who has few peers in his profession, is a grandson of Oliver Loving.

The following citizens came to Palo Pinto County in 1855 and settled in the Keechi, Black Springs, and Lovings' Valley Communities: James A. Jowell James Willett, James Davis, John Higgs, Tom Elliott, W. R. McKinney, who later settled on the river north of Palo Pinto; Alfred Lane, George Evans and E. R. Dickey Lloyd.

Dickey Lloyd first located in the vicinity of Black Springs but during the following year drifted with his stock to the southwest and crossed Eagle Creek, not a great distance above its mouth. For years this crossing was commonly called the "Lloyd Crossing." He stopped again northwest of the present city of Strawn, and established the Lloyd Ranch. The Lloyd Mountain in this section derived its name from E. E. Dickey Lloyd. J. B. Brown, at least a part of the time, lived with Mr. Lloyd

Jack Flint, a son-in-law of Oliver Loving, settled on the Brazos in the northwestern part of the county, perhaps as early as 1855. Flint Bend was named for this early settler.

Judge J. A. McClaren, the county's first school teacher and first Chief Justice, also settled in the Keechi Community in 1855.

The following people came to Palo Pinto as early as 1856: D. B. Cleveland, Theodore Wright, Jim Williams, Andrew Peters, W. W. Shook, William Keith, Jack Bailey, Chap Loving, Angy Price, D. H. McClure, High Van Cleve, Van Noy, Willis Mills, Ansell Russell, Charlie Goodnight, Wess Sheik, Morgan Mullins, John Truelove,

Tom Truelove, Solan A. Loving, David Peveler and others. Most of these people settled in the Keechi Communities and many of them lived near old Black Springs. Jowell McKee settled in Dark Valley; Dr. Robertson and the Mullins settled on Big Keechi; C. L. Carter settled in Carter Bend; William Bozzell also settled in that section. Capt. W. C. McAdams settled in Sand Valley; John A. Fortune moved some of his slaves to Fortune Bend, but it seems that he did not move his family up from Waco. Davy White, Levi Current, Adam Santo, David Eddleman, Joe Lavender, Dr. Rhodes, Ruff Burnet, and others were living in the southeastern part of the county as early as 1857, the year the county was organized.

Johnnie Eubanks, who first settled in Parker in 1854, came to the county in 1856. William Eubanks arrived two years later. R. W. Pollard and Isaac W. Cox settled between the present towns of Palo Pinto and Mineral Wells about the same year. Jesse Hittson Sr. and his sons Jack and William, settled on the Brazos not far distant from the Oak's Crossing in 1856. Martin G. Nails settled on the Brazos southeast of Palo Pinto during the same year. The date of the arrival of R. N. Powers like some others, is not definitely known, for the reports conflict. But he was living in Palo Pinto County perhaps as early as 1856. R. C. Betty, for whom Betty Prairie was named, Rev. Byers, W. Hullum and others were living in the eastern part of the county as early as the same year.

Simond B. Meeks, J. J. Ward, and Tim Humphries, settled south of Palo Pinto in 1856 or 1857. Ward Mountain received its name from the Ward family. William Wilson settled close to the mouth of Lake Creek about the same time. Wilson Hollow, south and west of Palo Pinto, derived its name from William Wilson. His brothers, Shelton, Wayne and E. Wilson, settled about the same time near Gordan on Palo Pinto Creek. Jackie Daniels settled about twelve miles southwest of Palo Pinto on the head waters of Lake Creek, perhaps as early as 1857. The Springers settled near the Gordan Mountain about the same time, and Springer Gap derived its name from the father of A. W. Springer, who now lives at Aspermont. Peter Bacus also settled in this section before the Civil War and Bacus Hollow derived its name from Uncle Peter Bacus. James L. Daves, came to Palo Pinto County in 1856. He settled on Palo Pinto Creek north of Gordan. W.H. Daves, a brother, arrived two years later. John L. Carter who was related to the Daves, came to the county about 1857. L. B. T. Clayton and the other Claytons, lived close to the Clayton Mountain and Clayton Springs. These places derive their names from these early settlers who came to the county about 1856. The Blevens, and a man named Dunn, lived in the community about the same time or a little later. William Mingus lived near the present town of Mingus and it was from him that Mingus received its name.

G. F. and W. H. Cowden, Richard Stuart, W. W. Cockran, and Bethel Strawn, settled in the southwestern part of the county about 1858 or 1859. The city of Strawn was named in honor of Uncle Bethel. Will, Sam, Joe, Luther, and M. Allen settled west of Strawn in what was known as Russell's Pocket about the same time. Jim Reed and Allen Brooks were also early settlers in this section. W. O. Johnson and W. H. Bradford were living in the southwest part of the county as early as 1862.

Peter Davidson was one of the first, if not the first settler, to locate in the southwestern portion of Palo Pinto County. He arrived in 1856. During the war many of the citizens "Forted up" about two miles southeast of Strawn for mutual protection. This community was called "Davidsonville." The Davidson cemetery between Strawn and Thurber derived its name from Peter Davidson.

Davy White, Ben Fulkerson, Michael Seay, R. Burnet, the Stubblefields, and others whose names have already been mentioned also "Forted up" on Palo Pinto Creek north of Santo about the close of the Civil War. Such communities gathered together for mutual protection from the Indians. And during the darkest hours of the Indian depredations, this early citizens fort had a very odd name. When asked where they lived, the citizens replied, "White's Town and Burnet Street, Stubblefields' Fort and nothing to eat."

Several families also "Forted up" on Lake Creek during the early days of the Civil War.

J. J. Metcalf and his son, William, were among the first, if not the first, to settle in the Ioni Section. They located at Metcalf Gap in 1856, and it was from these early pioneers that the gap derived its name. Nathan B. Dodson in 1856 or 1857 established a ranch on the head-waters of Eagle Creek about one mile southwest of the present home of Roy Hitton Sr., and approximately one-half mile west of the Walter Watson place. It was this early settler who gave Dodson Prairie its name. Voluntine Bell, his sons, daughters, and their families, settled near the Carter, Rassmussen and other places on Ioni as early as 1857. Jeff and Erb Bell were also early settlers in the southwestern section of the county. In 1859 Henry Belding settled the Belding Ranch. This picturesque ranch has long been one of the local land marks of this county.

Palo Pinto County was created by an act approved August 27, 1856. The Chief Justice of Bosque County was charged with the duty of calling an election of county officers and qualifying the Chief Justice, who in turn was authorized to qualify the remaining county officers. Section four and five of said act provided:

"Section 4: That it shall be the duty of the Chief Justice and County Commissioners of Palo Pinto County, when qualified, to select the county seat of said county, within five miles of the center of said county to lay off the county town, to designate the lots and land reserved for the use of the county, and to cause such buildings to be erected as are necessary for the use of said county, and any other business for the said county not in conflict with the general laws.

"Section 5: That said county site shall be called "Golconda" and that this act take effect from after its passage."

Palo Pinto, Jack and Brown Counties were created the same day and organized the same year. The names of the county seats of both Palo Pinto and Jack were changed during 1858. These twin counties were alike in many ways.

Palo Pinto County was organized during May, 1857. The records do not disclose the number of voting boxes during the first election. But the home of John Hittson, who was a candidate for sheriff, and who lived about six miles southeast of Palo Pinto, was one place of voting. It seems there was a voting box at Black Springs. And Judge E. K. Taylor, who came to Palo Pinto prior to the organization, stated there was also a voting box at Palo Pinto, although the county seat at that time had not been selected.

The following officers were elected: J. A. McClaren, Chief Justice; John Hittson, Sheriff; I. W. Price, Assessor and Collector; B. B. Meadows, Constable, and J. J. Cureton, William Caruthers, R. W. Pollard, and Washington Hullum, Commissioners. But Mr. Hullum was not present during the first meeting of the court.

According to the records, the first official act of Judge J. A. McClaren, was to appoint D. B. Cleveland, County Clerk pro tem for thirty days. This appointment was made May 13, 1857. The decree approving the official bonds of John Hittson, Sheriff; I. W. Price, Assessor and Collector, and B. B. Meadows, Constable, was the second order entered of record.

Since the county seat had not yet been selected and since this duty was delegated to the newly elected commissioners court, the most important thing confronting the court at this time, was the selection of an appropriate place for the county capitol. D. B. Cleveland, a surveyor and County Clerk pro tem, was authorized and instructed to run the north boundary line of the county, for the purpose of locating the county's geographical center so a suitable site could be selected. This was the third order entered of record.

Just where these meetings were held, the records do not disclose; but during the summer of 1857, the present site of

Palo Pinto was selected for the county seat, and thereafter the court convened at "Golconda."

August 17, 1857, J. J. Metcalf, G. W. De Rossette, Jowell McKee, A. B. Bingham and Mark Dalton were appointed as a jury of view, to establish a road from Golconda to Fort Belknap.

Simp Crawford, George Evans, J. A. Hestelow, R. C. Betty, R. Vaughan, were appointed as a jury of view to review a road to the county line, in the direction of Mesquiteville (Jacksboro).

Jesse Hittson, J. H. Dillahunty, Sara De Rossette, Tull Smith, and John Pollard were appointed as a jury of view to review a road in the direction of Weatherford.

I. P. Brown, Robert Martin, Peter Davidson, I. F. Lawder, and John Low were appointed as a jury of view to survey a suitable road toward Stephenville.

Since the place selected for a county seat was unappropriated state land, the pioneer people of Palo Pinto County prudently petitioned the Legislature to donate three hundred and twenty-acres of land for a townsite. But the court evidently decided that it would be unwise to wait on a patent, so they proceeded to establish the county capitol. At a meeting of the court held August 15, 1857, the court plotted and prescribed the manner the county seat should be laid off and surveyed, and contracted with J. J. Metcalf to survey the townsite. The court first contracted with Mr. Metcalf to prepare the field notes for the three hundred and twenty acres, to be donated for the county seat. This was necessary before a patent could be issued. They then instructed Mr. Metcalf to lay off the town in accordance with their instructions, which conformed to its present plan.

During the above meeting of the commissioners court, they also ordered notice be given that bids would be received August 31, 1857, for the purpose of building a courthouse. At that time bids were received and that of W. G. Evans accepted. This courthouse was on the southeast corner of the square, on a lot now occupied by W. W. Fleming's store. The building was constructed of logs and clapboards, which were made of timber cut on Lake Creek and elsewhere. The courthouse remained on this corner until 1882, when the present building was constructed out of native stone, quarried about one and one-half miles south and east of Palo Pinto.

February 3, 1858, the Governor approved an act which donated the three hundred and twenty acres of land to Palo Pinto County. Then February 18, 1858, the commissioners court ordered the first public sale of lots be made April 26th of the same year; and that such sales be advertised in the Dallas Herald and Birdville paper.

During the above meeting, the court also appointed Theodore Wright, County Clerk pro tem for thirty days. J. J. Metcalf was allowed \$22.75 for making a survey of the three hundred and twenty acres to be used as a townsite.

At a meeting of the court held April 19, 1858, and at all times before, the county seat was called Golconda. But at a subsequent meeting held April 26, 1858, just one week later, and during the day of the first public sale of lots, the county seat was called Palo Pinto. Consequently the change in the name of the county capitol was no doubt, made between these two dates.

During the meeting of the commissioners court held April 19, 1858, D. B. Cleveland was allowed \$112.10 for surveying the northern boundary line of Palo Pinto County, and locating the center of the county. During a meeting of the court, held July 7, 1858, J. J. Metcalf was allowed \$28 for surveying the south boundary line of Palo Pinto County. And during a meeting of the court held September 15 of the same year, Mr. Metcalf was allowed \$64.70 for laying off the public square and townsite. William G. Evans was allowed \$300 for building the first courthouse.

A jail was ordered built at a meeting of the court held in February of 1859.

And in February, 1860, a subsequent order was made and entered providing for a sale of town lots in Palo Pinto, the fifth Monday after the first Monday in March, 1860; and the court ordered that the sale be advertised in the "White Man", a newspaper published in Weatherford.

Let us not overlook the early settlers who located in and near Golconda.

Dr. S. S. Taylor and Uncle Johnnie Lynn, together with their families, came to Palo Pinto together, and were among the very first to pitch their tents at Golconda. These two families may have moved from Kentucky together. It is certain, however, they joined hands as far back as East Texas. After settling for a time in Rockwall County, not later than 1855, they moved to Hood County, then a part of Johnson County, and settled near the Brazos. In 1857 they moved to Golconda, and our best information leads us to believe there were no houses at Golconda when Dr. Taylor and Johnnie Lynn first settled. It seems, however, that Valuntine Bell and his family had reached the location a few days before and were camping. But the Bells soon moved on beyond where J. J. Metcalf had already settled and made a location on Ioni. There were no roads beyond the Metcalf place at that time, so the Bells were therefore compelled to blaze their own way.

Capt., J. H. Dillahunty and John Love, his brother-in-law, first settled in Pleasant Valley, no doubt, before Dr. Taylor and Johnnie Lynn arrived. Wash and Sam De Rossette, George Robertson and Shelt Whitmore, a brother of Mrs. Wash De Rossette, perhaps reached the vicinity of Golconda a few weeks before the arrival of Dr. Taylor and Johnnie Lynn. But like others, they first settled in Pleasant Valley on De Rossette Branch, and it was from them this branch derived its name. And about the time or shortly after the arrival of Dr. Taylor and Mr. Lynn, these people living in Pleasant Valley moved to Palo Pinto.

Dr. Hunter was among the first to settle in Palo Pinto. J. A. Jowell and family, who in 1855, first settled in the Black Springs-Loving's Valley country, moved over to Palo Pinto in 1857, and were among the first to settle at Golconda. James Campbell Jowell, who lived up until a few days ago, and his brother, George A. Jowell, came over first and built their home. It was located between the two branches of the creek, and is now known as the Sanders place.

All reports, excepting perhaps one, give Dr. S. S. Taylor credit of building the first house in Golconda. Uncle Johnnie Lynn moved on out on Lynn's Prairie and built his home in the Smith-Maddox pasture. Traces of his old chimney can still be seen from the highway at the point where it passes over the divide going west.

Dr. Taylor and Johnnie Lynn had hardly unhitched their horses when others joined the roll of honor, and the following is a list of some of the early frontiersmen, who were among the first to settle in Golconda: Parson Wyatt Williams, a Methodist minister, in 1857 built a home about one mile below town, in what is now known as Mrs. H. G. Taylor's field. But he moved to Parker County in 1858 and Capt. J. J. Cureton moved into the house he vacated. Johnnie Williams built the old Cal Hazzlewood place in the northwest part of Golconda. But he too soon moved away, and it was occupied shortly afterwards by Mark Dalton, who moved his family down from the mouth of Rock Creek. Washington Hullum, the Carpenters, Richmond Harris and others perhaps reached Golconda as early as 1857. The Browns were also early settlers in Palo Pinto, and Miss Mary Brown who afterwards became the wife of W. C. Kinsolving, according to reports, was born in 1857 the year the county was organized, and was, no doubt the first child born in Palo Pinto. Bud De Rossette was one of the first male children born in Palo Pinto.

Tom Oxford, Sam Oxford, J. Ham Baker, Judge J. A. McClaren, and others were living in Palo Pinto as early as 1858 and 1859. B. F. Baker who lived at the Wynn place, settled there before the Civil War and the springs for many years were known as Baker Springs. B. F. Baker was living here at the time he was killed by the Indians during the Civil War. Nath Darnell and George

Cravens were living in Palo Pinto as early as 1858. R.Y. Powers moved in before the war and settled north and west of the H. G. Taylor home over in what is commonly known as the Taylor "Patch" near the thicket. Fletcher White, C. C. Corbin, Miss Laura White, R. W. Pollard, the Coxes, R. C. Betty, and others were living in Palo Pinto as early as 1860. Jodie Corbin, a son of C. O. Corbin, still lives and can claim the distinction of maintaining his residence at Palo Pinto longer than any other who lives there at the present time.

W. L. Lasater moved over from Keechi to Palo Pinto about 1862. Press and Friel Brewer were living in Palo Pinto as early as 1863. William Veale reached Palo Pinto in 1865. James Walker and John L. Carter were also living here as early as the close of the Civil War. George R. Bevers bought the Cox place now owned by W. J. Hale in 1865, and moved his family over from Keechi. J. J. Metcalf moved to Palo Pinto early from Metcalf Gap and numbered among the first citizens. The Metcalfs have always played a prominent part in the affairs of the county.

Let us now turn our attention to a few of the early settlers who located near Palo Pinto and were closely identified with the early activities. Rev. G. W. Slaughter, in 1857, settled on the Cook Harris place six or seven miles north of Palo Pinto. The Slaughters were destined to play an important part in the early history of Palo Pinto as well as in Northern and Western Texas. After living on the river for a short time, Rev. G. W. Slaughter moved his family to Palo Pinto for the purpose of schooling his children and to afford better protection from the Indians. Rev. S. H. Harris, father of D. C. Harris, in 1857 settled on the river about seven miles north of the county seat. George Lemons and his son-in-law, Alex Hestalow, were also early settlers in this section. James Dulin who for a time was associated with the Hittsons, came to Palo Pinto County in 1857. The Funderburghs and William Ramsey were living near the river north of Palo Pinto as early as 1853. Funderburgh Hollow derived its name from these people. William Blair also was an early settler north of Palo Pinto. At a very early date, W. R. McKinney moved over from near Black Springs and settled in this same section. The McKinney place on the river north and east of Palo Pinto is well known today. The Arnetts and James H. Chick were also early residents north of the county seat. Uncle Jim Chick for a time worked for Jowell McKee. He also lived in Chick Bend during the early days, and it was from him the bend derived its name. Kyle Mountain was named for Mr. and Mrs. W. B. Kyle, who settled near this mountain before the Civil War. Crawford Mountain, Crawford Crossing of the Eagle, and the Crawford Bend were named for Al Crawford, who settled the Crawford place about six miles northwest of Palo Pinto as early as the early 60's. Wesley Nelson settled at Nelson Spring in 1853. During the following year he moved to Fortune Bend and Nathan B. Dodson moved from Dodson's Prairie to Nelson Spring. In 1861 the Nelsons moved to Stephens County and three years later

moved to Menard County. Wm. McGlothlin, in 1858, settled a short distance northeast of Nelson Spring. The father of Ben Ellis also settled near Palo Pinto before the Civil War, and like the Nelsons, moved into Stephens County about 1861, and to Menard County about 1864. George and Calvin Hazzelwood settled on Eagle Creek west of Palo Pinto late in 1857 or early in 1858. George Hazzelwood located about one mile east of the present home of Roy Hittson Sr., near the McDonald Dipping Vat. Cal Hazzelwood settled near the Hazzelwood Spring about one mile above Lovers Retreat. He later moved to Lovers Retreat and then subsequently to Palo Pinto. George Hazzelwood, in 1860, moved to the southwestern part of Stephens County. Cal Hazzelwood also lived up there for a time, but soon moved back. The Brooks families were early settlers south of Palo Pinto, and it was from them that Brooks Hollow derived its name.

The first session of district court of district Palo Pinto County was convened by Judge N. W. Battle. April 19, 1858. James L. L. McCall was District Attorney, John Hittson, Sheriff, and Theodore Wright, District Clerk. The following day the grand jury was empaneled and the first grand jurors were: D. B. Cleveland, foreman, W. L. Lasater, S. S. Taylor, I. W. Lynn, Wesley Nelson. L. B. T. Clayton, I. G. Biggs, Calvin Hazzelwood, R. W. Pollard, William Wilson, A. Roberts, B. F. Mullins, W. G. Evans, Washington Hullum, W. R. McKinney, J. J. Metcalf.

The first criminal case filed in the district court was styled the State of Texas vs. B. F. Harris. He was indicted for permitting liquor to be drunk on premises where sold. In the second case Willis Mills and Ansell Russell, Palo Pinto County's first merchants were indicted for selling liquor to the Indians.

The first case filed in Probate Court related to the estate of J. F. Walker, Robert Martin was appointed administrator March 13, 1858. The second case was that of John R. Rixey. Nath A. Darnell filed bond as administrator January 13, 1858.

But perhaps the most interesting of the first few probate cases, was that of William Cureton, which was filed October 15, 1859. October 31st, during the same year, J. J. Cureton, a son, qualified as administrator by filing his oath and bond, which were signed and executed according to law. J. J. Cureton, signed as principal and E. R. (Dickey) Lloyd, Oliver Loving and J. H. Dillahunty, as sureties. These four men were not only prominent locally, but were widely known over the entire frontier. Oliver Loving, Reuben Vaughan and Gilbert Porter, were appointed appraisers and in due time returned the inventory and appraisal, which showed the following property listed at the following prices:

Horses and mules, \$1,150; one yoke of black oxen, \$60; one yoke of jided oxen, \$40; one yoke of red and white oxen, \$50; one yoke of small oxen, \$40; 46 sheep at \$3.50 per head, \$161;

82 head of cattle at \$6 per head, \$492; hogs, \$100; one old negro woman named Harriet, \$100; one negro girl, five years old named Milley, \$500; one negro boy eight years old, named Elijah, \$600; one negro girl eleven years old named Suphronia, \$950; one negro girl sixteen years old named America, \$1,150; one negro boy nineteen years old named Jefferson, \$1,300; one negro boy seven years old named Anthony, \$550; one negro boy four years old named Clark, \$450; one negro woman thirty-nine years old named Susan, \$800; one negro boy eleven years old named Denis, \$700; one negro woman twenty years old and child two years old, \$1,300. In addition, household, farming and ranching implements were listed. The inventory and appraisalment was duly signed by Oliver Loving, Reuben Vaughan and Gilbert Porter.

These early inventory and appraisements often show the ownership of spinning wheels, bullet and candle moulds, ox yokes and other odd commodities used in earlier days.

It is also singular to note that two of the grandsons of men connected with the above probate case we are today serving as judges in the highest courts of Texas. Honorable James C. Wilson, grandson of Oliver Loving, is Judge of the United States District Court, for the Northern District of Texas; and Honorable C. M. Cureton, grandson of J. J. Cureton, is Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Texas. These able judges have few peers in their chosen profession.

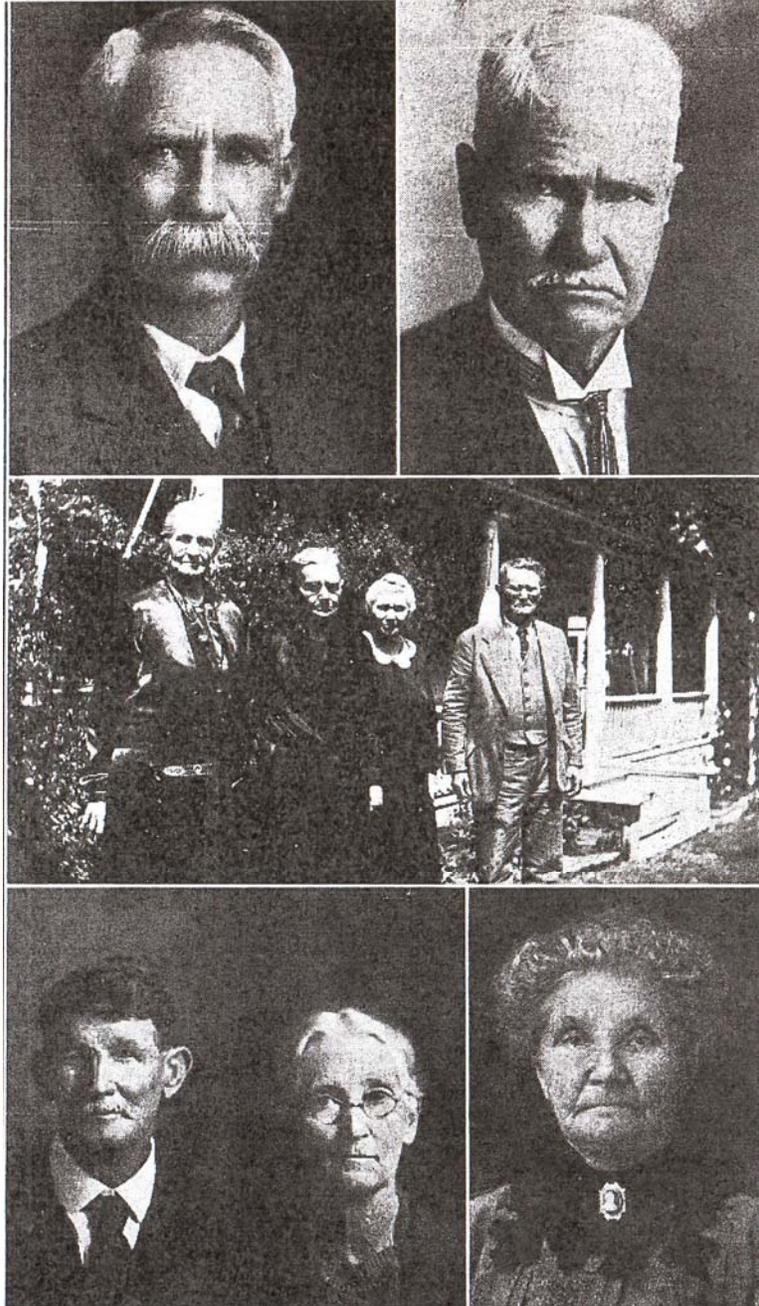
D. B. Cleveland, the first county clerk, and Mary E. Mullen October 13, 1857 applied for the first marriage license. They were married by Judge J. A. McClaren, the first Chief Justice, and J. M. Cleveland, ex-county clerk of Palo Pinto, is their oldest child. The second marriage license issued January 1, 1858, to James L. Daves and Margaret Carter. They were married January 3, 1858 by Theodore Wright, then Justice of the Peace. Woodbury Daves of Lone Camp is their oldest child. The third marriage license was issued February 15, 1858, to Adam Santo and Amanda Cain. Their marriage ceremony was performed by Rev. N. T. Byers, February 23, of the same year.

Judge J. A. McClaren also taught Palo Pinto County's first school. This school was taught during 1856 in a little picket school house which had a "Fire proof" floor. It stood about two miles northeast of the George R. Bevers place, on Big Keechi. The benches were constructed of split logs and the school was conducted in a truly frontier fashion. William Cureton, Marzee S. Cureton. John C. Cureton, James Campbell Jowell, Cynthia Ann Jowell, Sallie Jowell, Clarie Vaughan, John Lasater, Sarah Lasater, A. M. Lasater, John and Sara Crawford, Houston and Mary Jane Bevers, and a daughter of Simp Crawford, who was but five years old, and who later married B. C. Tarkington of Weatherford, attended this first school.

Mary Jane Bevers, who married H. G. Taylor; James C. Jowell; Sallie Jowell, who married William Metcalf; A .M. Lasater; Miss Crawford, who married B. C. Tarkington; Mazee S. Cureton, who married Rex Stockton, and John C. Cureton were still living when the author was gathering material for the present work. But Houston Bevers and William Cureton died shortly before. James Campbell Jowell, who was about eighty-five years of age, only recently joined the immortals across the divide.

Dr. S. S. Taylor taught Golconda's first school. He was followed by S. A. Oxford, who taught during the summer of 1858. Shortly afterward, J. Ham Baker also taught at Palo Pinto. Miss Laura White, a sister of Fletcher White, taught school in Palo Pinto just before or just after the beginning of the Civil War. Sam Oxford and J. Ham Baker, taught a school together before the Civil War. One of the first school buildings of Palo Pinto was on the north side of Town Branch north and a little east of the present courthouse. Another early school building still stands. It is the old stone building back of the old Criss Warren place in the southwestern part of town.

W. G. Keith. S. B. Hatcher, Thomas C. McGough, J. B. Shelby, J. A. Lasater and John Lewis taught schools in various parts of Palo Pinto County during the summers of 1857 and 1858.



From left to right beginning at top: Wm. E. Cureton and brother, John C. Cureton. Middle group: Mrs. H. G. Taylor, Mrs. Wm. Metcalf, Mrs. B. C Tarkington, and A. M. Lasater. Lower group: Mr., and Mrs. Houston Bevers and Mrs. Marzee E. Stockton. Excepting Mrs. Bevers, each of those pioneer citizens attended Palo Pinto County's first school. When the middle picture was made, about 1927, some of these early citizens had not seen each other since the days of the Civil War.

Ansell Russell and Willis Mills opened the first store in the county. This store was located near the Sikes place, about one and a half miles west of Graford on the old Fort Worth and Belknap

Road. It was in existence, perhaps, as early as 1856. They evidently sold both wet goods and dry goods, for they were indicted for selling liquor to Indians.

Van Noy, shortly afterwards, opened a store on the old Fort Worth and Belknap Road near Mountain Springs, about three miles northwest of Salesville. About this time or a little later, Oliver Loving and son, James C. Loving, opened a small store in Loving's Valley. Capt. J. H. Dillahunty, who opened a store late in 1857, or early in 1858, joined by his partner, Dr. Frank Hunter, were among the very first merchants of Palo Pinto. Hunter, however, soon sold his interest to Dillahunty. But it seems that Pleas Couets may have had a small stock of goods for sale for a short time before. Mr. Stiles of Houston opened a store about the time the county was organized. Will R. Peters, who was killed by the Indians, clerked in this store. It was while he was clerking here that he met and married Miss Lizzie Bell, a daughter of Valuntine Bell. Stiles either sold his stock of goods to John Counsel shortly afterwards for John Counsel opened a separate store. Alex Alexander and his brother, Ben, were among the first merchants at Stephenville, and came to Palo Pinto before the outbreak of the Civil War and bought the John Counsel store. But the distressing conditions during the above conflict, made it difficult to secure merchandise and the very few stores of Palo Pinto were forced to close. After the Civil War, however, the Alexander brothers who had lived both in Stephenville and Waco, again opened stores in the frontier town of Palo Pinto, which was inclined to show some progress, notwithstanding the constant Indian depredations.

In 1876 after the Indian troubles had terminated. Palo Pinto which was still the only town in the county, bid fair to be one of the business centers of the West. The little frontier village at that time boasted of three or four dry goods stores, several saloons, two blacksmith shops, several lawyers, and physicians, the oldest Masonic Lodge in this section of the state, etc.

But when the Texas & Pacific Railroad was built a few years later, it passed through the southern part of the county. This, together with the later development of neighboring towns, undermined Palo Pinto's early prosperity. But it has always remained the county seat.

Peter Davidson opened a store at old Davidsonville southeast of Strawn during the war or shortly afterwards.

W. W. (Bud) Price, son of Mr. and Mrs. I. W. Price, was the first white child born in Palo Pinto County. He was born January 5, 1855, near old Black Springs. Will Bevers, a son of Mr. and Mrs. George R. Bevers, who lived near the Flat Rock Crossing on Keechi, was born August 21, of the same year. Mollie Vaughan, who married Milton Fryer, was born about the same time.

H. H. McLean, an attorney, was living in Palo Pinto as early as 1858, and was the first local lawyer. William Veale, an attorney, moved to Palo Pinto in 1865.

Dr. Robertson, who settled on Keechi as early as 1856, was about the first local doctor to locate in the county. Dr. S. S. Taylor was the first doctor to locate at Palo Pinto. But Doctor Frank Hunter moved in shortly afterwards.

Wash Hullum, who lived near the northeast corner of the square, and near the large post-oak tree, across the street north of the old Cunningham Bank Building, ran Palo Pinto County's first hotel. R .W. Pollard ran a second hotel shortly afterwards.

The Palo Pinto County Star, which was established June 22, 1876, by J. C. Son, the present editor, is Palo Pinto County's oldest paper.

Nath A. Darnell and George Cravens in about 1858, established an old ox tread-mill on the branch in the western part of Golconda. This old mill at that time, was indeed a great asset to Palo Pinto and adjoining counties. Mill Branch derived its name from this early tread-mill. Darnell and Cravens sold the property to Anderson Allen about 1862.

Palo Pinto County has long been noted for its minerals. Coal in more recent years has been extensively mined in the southern portion of the county; and it is found elsewhere in the county. The famous mineral waters of Mineral Wells, a more recent town, are well known and well advertised throughout the United States, as well as in adjoining countries. These mineral waters are unexcelled, and Mineral Wells is one of the best and most noted health resorts in the world.

Unquestionably, Palo Pinto County has produced more noted cowmen than any of the frontier counties. The Lovings, Curetons, Slaughters, Daltons, Strawns, Stewarts, Harts, Taylors, Savers, Hittsons, Shieks, Goodnight, Watsons, Claytons, Cockrans, Carters, Beldings, Hillums, Reynolds, Matthews, McDonalds, and many others, who moved from Palo Pinto County westward, numbered among this list.

The Hittsons, Claytons, Matthews, Curetons, Lovings, Goodnights and many others moved their ranches from Palo Pinto County into the very heart of the Indian infested territory farther west.

History says that the Cattle Raisers Association of Texas was organized in Young County. Perhaps that is true. But W. C. Cockran of Midland, is of the opinion that its origin was in the store of Captain J. H. Dillahunty at Palo Pinto about 1876. At that time large herds of cattle were constantly being moved over the trail. Some of the cowmen too moved many of the

cattle that came in their path. And after the cattle were sold distributed to the respective owners their proportionate part of the money. But it seems that some were failing to make the necessary refund. Also cattle thieves were common. Consequently, the cattle men felt they should organize for mutual protection. Concerning the organization of this association, W. C. Cockran said:

"It was this wholesale driving off of everyone's cattle that brought about the organization of the present Cattle Raisers Association.

"One hot day in July, 1876, a little bunch of cowmen met at Captain Dillahunty's store in Palo Pinto. They were talking about a certain man gathering a herd to drive to Kansas. Captain Dillahunty, who had had two or three drinks, mounted a goods box and said it was time this driving off of everyone's cattle was stopped. Col. Kit Carter and Mark Lynn, two of the biggest cattlemen in Palo Pinto at that time, said they would commence then to see what could be done about stopping this driving off of everyone's cattle. Jerry Hart, Scott Warren, Ham Taylor, S. B. Strawn, Uncle Billie Cowden were in the bunch and seconded the motion. I may not be correct about this statement, but I will give it as my opinion, that Captain Dillahunty was the real father of the Cattle Raisers Association from that little talk. The talk spread from one outfit to another, until 1877, a bunch of cowmen met at Graham and organized the present Cattle Raisers Association."

Col. Kit Carter, a resident of Palo Pinto County, was elected the first president of the association after its organization at Graham.

For scenery Palo Pinto County is unexcelled in the southwest. Many tourists travel a thousand miles or more to see Western wonders, not any more sublime. But the description of all of the important scenic places would fill volumes. Mention will be made of only a few.

The most widely known, is a very pretty place called Lovers Retreat. This has been a pleasure resort for more than half a century. Just after the Indian depredations ceased in Palo Pinto County, and about 1877, Annie Hazzelwood, Mattie Taylor, Mary Jane McClaren, Mattie Warren, Pleas J. Taylor, Will Bevers, John McLaren, George Dalton, James Shirley, and perhaps one or two others, were then young and unmarried, and frequently rode out to Eagle Creek to enjoy one of the splendid Texas Sunday afternoons. Jim Shirley, a young attorney, made the remark that this is a regular Lovers Retreat. The young people then present agreed that this scenic beauty be called Lovers Retreat. The printed stories that a man named Lovers lived on the cliff above and was forced by the Indians to retreat to the craigs below and hide in the rocks, is mythical and untrue.

Nelson's Spring is also a very beautiful place. Here a splendid spring flows from a large perpendicular cliff. Nelson's Spring and Lovers Retreat have long been favorite resorts for picnics, barbecues, and outings. Before the advent of the automobile, many times H. G. Taylor, R. S. Dalton, G. W. McDonald, F. M. Watson, J. L. Cunningham and others gave many beeves to be barbecued at these gatherings.

In recent years, Inspiration Point, a few miles south and west of Mineral Wells, has become one of the most noted places in Palo Pinto County. An exceptionally beautiful panoramic scene is presented for many joy riders who drive out to this point.

The Ioni Falls about twelve miles west of Palo Pinto surrounded as it is by a beautiful valley, hemmed in by attractive hills, would be worth half a million dollars if it could be placed near some large city. There are hundreds of other splendid scenes along the Brazos, Caddo, Ioni, Eagle, and elsewhere.

But no doubt the most attractive part of the county is in the country occupied by the Set, Boydston, Belding, Watson, and adjoining ranches. The "Possum Kingdom Country," Bluff Creek, Hell's Gate, and the high cliffs along the Brazos, and within these ranches, are unexcelled for scenery anywhere within six hundred miles.

And of these, perhaps Hell's Gate would take the prize as being the most interesting place. Here the great erosive forces of nature have molded a marvelous scene. The valleys of the Brazos and Jowell Creek at this point, are almost parallel and only separated by a thin, stately stone wall. At one place this wonderful cliff is completely worn away, leaving a celestial gate towering far above the tallest trees. But its name is certainly a misnomer, for Hell's Gate presents a heavenly scene. This magnificent gate is not only a masterpiece of nature, but affords a passage from the silent and lonely beauties of Jowell Creek to the wild and untamed breaks along the Brazos.

Early population: In 1860, 1,394 whites and 140 slaves, total 1,524.

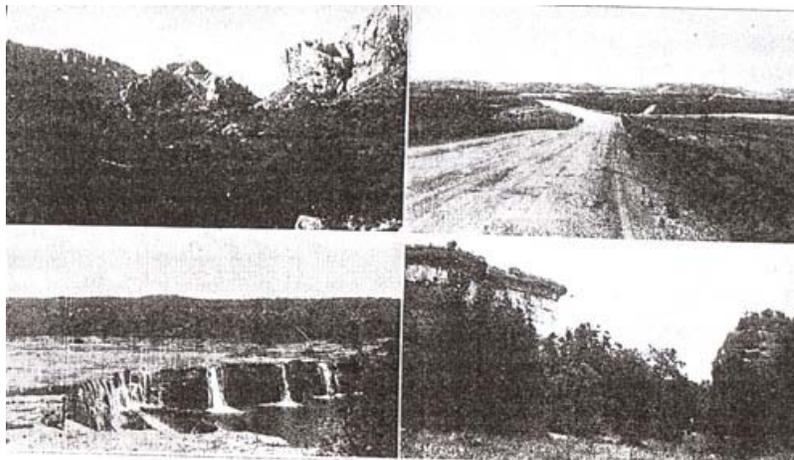
Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Golconda, J. H. Dillahunty; Pleasant Valley, J. C. Loving; Russell's Store, E. Whatley.

### **SECTION 139. - BROWN COUNTY**

The splendid lands along the Colorado, Pecan Bayou, Jim Ned, and other fertile streams attracted the settlers to this section at a very early date. In fact, the smoke was rising from newly constructed log cabins in the rich valleys of Brown County nearly as early as it did in Comanche, Erath, Palo Pinto, and some of the neighboring counties.

Judge Fisk, A. E. Adams, W. W. Chandler, and others reached the county about 1856 or 1857, and were about the first to settle near the present city of Brownwood. W. J. Coggins, S. R. Coggins, J. S. Harris and William Lewis, also reached the county about this time.

Jesse P. Hanna moved to Brown County in 1856, and settled Hanna Valley about one and one-half miles east of Regency. And it was from him the valley received its name. D. S. Hanna, George Robbins, Jim Robbins, and others arrived in the same neighborhood during the same year. John Jones and A. J. Jones, were living in Hanna Valley as early as 1857. Enoch Powell arrived during the same year.



Upper left: High in the Chisos Mountains, along the Rio Grande, in territory covered by U. S. Mexican Boundary Commission in 1849. See Sec. 39. Upper right: Scene near Canadian in the northern Panhandle of Texas. Typical of the country traversed by the Santa Fe Trail. (Courtesy Canadian Chamber of Commerce). See Sec. 25. Lower left: Ioni Falls, twelve miles west of Palo Pinto. This was formerly a favorite "happy hunting ground" of the Indian, See page 180 (previous page). Lower right: Hell's Gate" See previous page.

The Jackson family settled Jackson Valley on Pecan Bayou. This valley is about six miles above the mouth of the latter stream. To be sure Jackson and Hanna's Valleys are now in Mills, but prior to 1887, this territory belonged to Brown County. Brooks Lee was an early settler in the Clear Creek Community. David Lee, Dan Moseley, the Potters, Clements, Andersons, Browns, Willises, and others were also early settlers in Brown County.

This county was named for Henry S. Brown, who settled near the mouth of the Brazos in 1824, and who was an early merchant in that section of the state. He was prominently connected with the early affairs of Texas. Brown County was created by an act approved August 27, 1856, the same day the Legislature created Jack and Palo Pinto Counties. The Chief

Justice of Lampasas County was instructed to call an election of county officers and qualify the electors. The Chief Justice of Brown County was also authorized to qualify the remaining electors, after he himself qualified. The commissioners court was clothed with the power to name the county seat, and to purchase not to exceed three hundred and twenty acres of land for that purpose. But since the first act was somewhat doubtful of construction, an amendment was passed July 5, 1858, providing that the Chief Justice and any two of the county commissioners should select not to exceed three places within five miles of the center of the county, to be run for the county seat. This act also provided that the county seat of Brown County be called Brownwood.

The county was organized in 1857 and during that year the following officers qualified for office: J. Douglas Brown, Chief Justice; Gideon Willis, County Clerk; Reuben C. Williams, Sheriff; D. S. Hanna, Assessor and Collector; and Jasper Willis, District Clerk. Then in 1858, W. W. Chandler was elected Chief Justice; M. G. Anderson, County Clerk; R. M. Potter, Sheriff; Israel Clements, Assessor and Collector, and W. M. F. Brown, District Clerk.

The first county seat was temporarily located near the home of William Connell. Here a little log cabin was used as a courthouse and the first district court convened in this building. Usually the judges and attorneys, and others stopped at the home of Mr. Connell. But some of the court attendants camped.

The present location of Brownwood was finally selected and hotel accommodations at the new county seat were offered by Mr. and Mrs. Hodge.

James Fowler and Mary Ann Childers were among the first to marry in Brown County. This wedding was solemnized about 1857. G. L. Lee, who was born in 1858, is said to be the first white child born in the county. But a girl whose name we are unable to give, evidently was born previously. Henry Counts and David McAllister were among the first school teachers.

Early population: In 1860, 244 whites and no slaves reported. In 1870, 507 whites and 37 negroes, total 544.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Brownwood, W. F. Brown.

#### **SECTION 140. - BLANCO COUNTY**

This county was created from Gillespie, Burnet, Hays, and Comal Counties by an act approved February 12, 1858. William E. Jones was appointed special commissioner to call an election of officers and to qualify the electors. The commissioners court was charged with the duty of locating the center of the county and placing not over three locations within five miles thereof, as

candidates for the county seat The statute also provided, that the county seat as well as the county, should be called Blanco, and the name was derived from one of the county's principal streams.

The county seat was located near the stream, but after the creation of Kendall County, it was then situated near the southern line of the county. As a consequence several years later the county seat was moved to Johnson City.

The following county officers qualified for office during 1858: S. B. Patton, Chief Justice; Samuel Johnson, County Clerk; H. F. Stockman, Sheriff; J. M. Patton, Assessor and Collector; and J. B. Tenneson, District Clerk.

Early population: In 1860, 1,183 whites and 98 slaves, total 1,281. In 1870, 1,143 whites and 44 negroes, total 1,187.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Blanco, Thomas Durham.

#### **SECTION 141. - MASON COUNTY**

Mason County was the home of old Fort Mason, and the center of activity of this section. It was from this early fort the county and county seat derived their name. Two of the South's most famous generals, Robert E. Lee and Albert Sidney Johnson, were in command at this post prior to the Civil War. And the early settlers long cherished the recollection of the splendid personalities of these great generals.

The following citizens settled in Mason County as early as 1855, 1856, 1857: Billy Greenwood, Matt Allen, G. W. Todd, William Lewis, Louie Martin, Peter Heck, Peter Burk, John Limburg, Charlie Limburg, Mr. Weatherby, the Joneses, Major Peters, Thomas S. Milligan, John McSween. L. Burgdorf, Leifesters, Jordans, Simons, Kneeses, Hasses, Behrens, Ellebrandts, and others.

The following early citizens were living in Loyal Valley as early as 1859, and in some instances before: Henry and Christian Keyser and Mr. Mogford, who settled near Nick Miller's Spring and were among the very first to locate in this part of the state. Fritz Kothmann, Gathleib Brandenburger, Wm. Geistmeidt, John Musebach, M. Lehman, R. G. Stone, and John Moseley.

The county was created by an act approved January 22, 1858. G. W. Todd, by said act, was appointed commissioner to perfect the organization. The following officers qualified for office during 1858, the year the county was created and organized:

John McSween, Chief Justice; G. W. Todd. County Clerk; Thomas S. Milligan, Sheriff; L. Burgdorf, Assessor and Collector; and W. C. Lewis, District Clerk.

The first school of Mason County, of which we have a record, was taught by William Pafford, at the home of William Lewis. This school was taught about five blocks north of the courthouse. One of the first, if not the first, store of the county, was opened in a little picket building by William C. Lewis. Parson Laremore numbered among the very earliest preachers.

Rev. C. A. Grote was one of the first ministers to bring the gospel to Mason County. Henry Hoerster was one of the first, if not the first, to be born; and the first marriage license was issued to W. C. Lewis and Mrs. Celia Head.

James E. Ranck, David Doole, Wm. Koock, Wilson Hey, Christie Crosby, and others are often mentioned in connection with the history of Mason County, during the period immediately following the Civil War.

About this time, Wm. Koock, then a young man, opened a small store in a little log cabin, one and one-half, or two miles west of Mason. This place soon developed into a much larger enterprise - stone buildings erected, local residences were built, and became known as Koocksville.

Early population: In 1860, 606 whites, six free negroes and 18 slaves, total 630. In 1870, 650 whites and 26 negroes, total 676.

Early post offices and postmasters: In 1859, Hedwig's Hill, Louis Martin; Mason, James McSween.

#### **SECTION 142. - HAMILTON COUNTY**

Hamilton County was created from Lampasas, Comanche, and Bosque Counties, by an act approved January 22, 1858, and the county named in honor of Gen. James Hamilton. The statute also provided that the county seat bear the same name. The commissioners' court was charged with the usual duty of selecting, not to exceed three places within five miles of the center of the county to be run as candidates for the county seat. And in event the site selected was unappropriated state land, then the statute further provided that not exceeding three hundred and twenty acres be donated to be used as a townsite. The Chief Justice of Coryell was instructed to organize the county.

The first settlers arrived in Hamilton County during 1855. J. A. Carter and Frederick Bookerman were the first to stop in the Lankford Cove, close to the present town of Evant. They arrived in 1855. Asa Lankford arrived shortly afterwards. The two first families, however, did not remain but moved a few miles farther west. Consequently the Cove was named for Asa Lankford. William Bechamp also settled in the vicinity of Evant during the same year. Albert G. Gholson settled the Blue Water Hole Ranch

in 1855. Bob Carter was about the first settler in the Fairview Community and arrived in 1855. F. G. (Grundy) Morris, Frank Richardson, Littleton Dooley, James M. Rice. F. B. Gentry, Zekial Manning, H. C. Standifer, Dave Self, William Jenkins, and others also were among the very first to settle in Hamilton County and Evant Community. In 1855, however, there were no county lines, but when Lampasas and Hamilton were created, the settlements around Lankford Cove and Evant were divided into about four counties. It is therefore difficult to give the history of Hamilton alone, without reaching over into adjoining counties.

James Witcher, Dr .Williams, John Willis, John Hurst and Sam Sneed, settled three miles south of Evant and in the extreme northern part of Lampasas County. Ike Brown, Jim Fowler, Charlie Mullins, D. M. Morris, Masiac Scaggs, and others settled within a few miles of Evant as early as 1856. The Powers, Hansons, Funkleys, Shockleys, Roberts, Picketts, Hostys, Barbees, Kuykendalls, Peter Johnson, Patilla Fuller, and others were also early settlers in this section, but some of them lived over in adjoining counties.

In 1858 the following officers qualified for office: J. M. Rice, Chief Justice; J. S. Standifer, County Clerk; E. Manning, Sheriff; A. B. Griffith, Assessor and Collector.

Prof. Hazzard in 1857 or 1858 taught the first school in the Evant Community. Simm Williams taught a school in Hamilton County shortly afterwards. Patilla Fuller also taught an early school.

Charlottie Lankford was born October 10, 1855, and was one of the first white children born in the vicinity of the present Evant. The deaths of Mrs. Thurman Ragsdall, Peter Johnson, and J. P. Beene in 1857, and Mrs. Asa Lankford, who died September 14, 1853, numbered among the first deaths in this part of the state.

Brother Hugh M. Guilders, a Methodist minister, preached the first sermon in this section.

Early population: In 1860, 463 whites and 26 slaves, total 489. In 1870, 715 whites and 17 negroes, total 733.

### **SECTION 143. - MONTAGUE COUNTY**

In 1854 the same year Sam Woody settled in Wise, Henry Braden settled on Denton Creek and the smoke from his pioneer log cabin pointed to the first house erected in Montague County. But John Keenan was a close contender for the honors of being the first settler, for he too, arrived in 1854. John Miller settled in the county in 1854 or 1855. William Freeman and David Vance settled in the Newharp Community in 1855 or 1856. W. H. Taylor and W. H. Savage settled near Denton Creek about the same time, and Dr. N. H. O. Polly and Savil Wilson settled in

Willa Walla Valley during the same year. E. S. Singleterry, Domanac Burns, Wambles, and two or three other families settled on the head waters of Elm in 1856 or 1857. Isaac Burnet, John Morris, St. Clair Jones, Alfonso Templeton, Austin Morris, Joshua Baines, John Wainscott, Cash McDonald, and Jerrell McDonald settled in the county as early as 1857. John and W. R. Willingham and Fred Hamilton arrived late in 1857, or early in 1858. John Morris, father of W. A. (Bud) Morris, David S. Hagler and Parson D. G. Parkhill, settled in Montague County in 1858.

The county was created from Cooke by an act December 24, 1857, and named in honor of Daniel Montague previously mentioned in connection with the early history of Cooke County. Daniel Montague was an early surveyor in this section. The Chief Justice of Cooke was instructed to organize the county, by calling an election of county officers and qualifying the electors. The commissioners court when qualified was instructed to select as many as three places within five miles of the center of the county to be run as candidates for the county seat; and in the event the site selected was upon unappropriated state land, then the creating act further provided the state would relinquish to the county three hundred and twenty acres of land for a county seat.

The county was organized the first Monday in August, 1858. The first officers of the county were: Dr. N. H. O. Polly, Chief Justice; M. M. Hagler, County Clerk; Willis Lavander, Sheriff; George Moore, District Clerk; Warren Wilkerson, Assessor and Collector; and F. M. Totty, Surveyor; Isaac Burnet, Treasurer; Austin Morris, E. L. Singleterry, and Edwards were Commissioners.

Three places, namely: the head of Elm near the present St. Jo, Farmers Creek between St. Jo and Montague, and the center of the county, were placed in nomination. Montague, the center of the county, received a majority of the votes cast, and therefore became the county seat. Several families located here shortly afterwards.

The first courthouse was constructed of logs and stood on the south side of the square. It was used until after the Civil War, when an old store building rented on the north side of the square, was used as a county capitol. Later the county bought a frame building nearby, and used this as temporary quarters. February 28, 1873, the courthouse and all county records were destroyed by fire. A contract was let for a stone building in 1878. This building was also destroyed by fire in 1884, and part of the records were again destroyed. Two individuals were thought to have burned the courthouse to destroy some indictments then pending against them. A new building was soon erected and in 1912, the present splendid courthouse was constructed.

Montague County's first school house, a little log cabin, was erected in 1857 or 1858 near the Perryman Graveyard, about

twelve miles southeast of Montague. Prof. Seeley taught the first school. Prof. Sweet and J. T. Bellows were also early teachers. The first school building in Montague was also a log building, and was built in 1858 or 1859.

Burns, on the Head of Elm, opened the county's first store. John H. Cox attended the first sale of lots in Montague, bought property on the public square, and late in 1838 opened Montague's first store. David Aines opened a store shortly afterwards. W. B. Savage and Miss Elizabeth Ann Baylor were married in 1857 and, no doubt, this was the first wedding in Montague County.

The county has long been noted for its historical settings and landmarks. Old Spanish Fort in 1719 was established on soil now in the county. The Chihuahua traders of 1839-40 no doubt, passed through the present Montague County. The Old California Trail and Butterfield Route, both passed through the county. And "Old Red River Station," a log town on Red River, also played an important part in the early history of northern Texas. During the Civil War, soldiers were stationed at Red River Station. The Old Chisholm Trail passed through Montague County and crossed the river near Red River Station. There were times when tens of thousands of cattle were herded at this point, while the cowmen were waiting for an opportunity to push them across the river. Red River Station was destroyed by a cyclone in 1875, but it rebuilt shortly afterwards. When the railroad passed through Nocona, however, the station was soon abandoned.

Early population: In 1860, 814 whites and 35 slaves, total 849. In 1870, 861 whites and 24 negroes, total 885.

Early post offices: In 1870, Head of Elm and Montague.

#### **SECTION 144. - CLAY COUNTY**

Clay was created out of Cooke County territory December 24, 1857, the same day Montague came into existence. This act creating the county, provided that the Chief Justice of Cooke should also organize the county and further provided that the same proceedings should be followed as laid down in the act creating Montague. It also provided that the county seat of Clay be called Henrietta. The county was named for Henry Clay.

W. T. Waybourne and Wess Waybourne were the first white people to build homes in Clay County. In 1880 they settled on Dry Creek, a tributary of the Little Wichita, near the present site of Henrietta. The early settlement of Clay was different from other West Texas counties organized before the Civil War. Many of the first pioneers at first did not move to the county; but only established ranches, and many of these ranchmen were from Wise and adjoining counties.

Capt. J. B. Earhart, father of Lif Earhart of Lubbock, was perhaps the first man to locate a ranch in Clay County. He ranched near the mouth of Post Oak on the Little Wichita. Charlie Wantling established a ranch on the Little Wichita about six miles north and west of Henrietta. Jim Dumas and E. Emmerson were about the next ranchmen to arrive. Their ranch was located on the same stream about three miles north and east of Henrietta. They were followed by Calvin Smith and Harris Forsythe, who ranched about ten miles northeast of the county seat. Perry and Levi Wilson and Willis Sparks ranched at the mouth of the East Fork of Little Wichita.

George A. Shelton about the same time settled about ten miles northeast of Henrietta; Tip Mooney, about two miles farther on to the northeast; Ben Hubert, near the mouth of the Little Wichita on Red River; and John Carter located on Red River about seventeen miles northeast of Henrietta, Dan Waggoner established a ranch near the mouth of Duck Creek in 1860 or 1861.

Wichita County at this time was attached to Clay, and as a consequence we shall give a list of some of the first settlers who moved to that section during this same period. Bable Gilbert settled near the mouth of Gilbert's Creek on Red River about four miles southeast of Burkburnett, and was perhaps the first white settler to locate in Wichita County. Gilbert had several negro slaves and since fencing material was scarce, he had them erect a picket fence around one hundred acres of fine farming land on the river. This was planted in corn. But during the fall, a large herd of buffalo came in and completely demolished the corn field fence. Mr. Volentine settled on the Big Wichita at Volentine's Crossing about eighteen miles northeast of Wichita Falls; a Mr. Gouch, who settled near the Volentine Crossing, erected a nice plastered house, and employed four or five families of Mexicans. Ed Walffarth settled about three miles above the mouth of Big Wichita in 1861. Most of the locations were made during 1860, but a few were made during the early part of 1861.

The county was organized in 1860 and the following officers were chosen as the first county officials: G. A. Shelton, Chief Justice; E. Haller, County Clerk; C. T. Bailey, Sheriff; Perry E. Wilson, Assessor and Collector; Sam Green, County Surveyor; and W. T. Waybourne, County Treasurer.

Henrietta was selected as the county seat. But after the outbreak of the Civil War, the entire population, excepting perhaps Ed Wohlforth and family, moved away and relinquished the territory to the Indians. Several houses had already been built in Henrietta but all were vacated and Clay County attached to Montague for judicial purposes. Several ranchmen, however, maintained their ranches, notwithstanding the hostilities of the Indians, and destressing times during the Civil War. Can we

draw a mental picture of the early ranch life in Clay County during these trying times? Soldiers visited the deserted village in 1863, and could plainly see where the Indians had been marking on the walls of the deserted buildings.

The next attempt to settle Clay County occurred a few years later. A Dr. Elderidge, after the war, brought a colony of eight or ten families from Illinois. For a short time the colony stopped in Montague, and were told by W. T. Waybourne, Joe Bryant and others, that it was indeed very unwise to move out into Clay County just at that time, for the Indians were exceedingly hostile; but they persisted in moving and soon occupied the deserted houses in Henrietta. They soon found, however, that it was not possible to make peace with the Indians, as they had previously supposed, and after having some of their members massacred, the party was forced to move back to the East.

It was not until the early 70's before the Indians were sufficiently subdued to permit a second permanent settlement in the county. But during 1873, the county was re-organized and has since held a strategic position on the western frontier. Clay County was without its original records, for when the courthouse of Montague was burned February 26th of the same year, the fire not only destroyed all records of Montague, but destroyed the records of Clay County also.

Few counties there were whose early history and ranch life was as picturesque and as typically western, as Clay.

Early population: In 1860, 107 whites and two free negroes, total 109.

#### **SECTION 145. - STEPHENS COUNTY**

John R. Baylor was one of the first, if not the first to settle in Stephens County. In 1855 to 1857, he was Indian Agent near old Camp Cooper on the Comanche Reservation. But during the later year, we see the early morning smoke rising from his log cabin and pioneer ranch on the Clear Fork eighteen miles below Camp Cooper. William Holden also settled on the Clear Fork during the same year; Tom Dawson and Joe Curtis were very early settlers and reached the same vicinity about the same time or a little later. Capt. William Preston located near the mouth of Hubbard's Creek; Dr. Gonzales, James and John Broomfield settled on Gonzales Creek, and others located in the county about the same time, which was about 1857 or 1858. It was from Dr. Gonzales the stream derived its name. Elias Hale, Gad Miller, Dick Miller, the Cassadys, and Mrs. Huffstuttler came to the county perhaps as early as 1858. Miller Valley was named for Gad Miller. William Browning bought out William Preston in 1859 and established the Browning Ranch near the mouth of Hubbard's Creek. R. A. Clark moved from Young to Stephens County during the same year. George Hazzelwood moved from Palo Pinto County to Sandy Creek in 1860. He shortly

afterwards moved over on Battle Creek. Calvin J. Hazzelwood also moved into Stephens County about the same time, but soon returned to his former location. Wash Hullum another early settler of Palo Pinto came to the county during 1860. Mr. Reynolds located on the Clear Fork. Wesley Nelson, the Funderburghs, the Ellises and others moved from Palo Pinto to Stephens County during 1851. In the biography of John W. Schoolcraft, published in 1895, he states that his father, James Schoolcraft, settled in Parker in 1860, and moved to Stephens County two years later. It is probable, however, the Schoolcrafts may have reached Stephens County a short time earlier. Levi Current, C. C. Cooper, Snalum, Stone, McNutty, McKelvey, Traylor Maudlin, Sam and Pen Lindsey, Andy McDonald, Berry Meadows, James Walker, Wm. Cain, William and John Hittson, John Boggs, W. W. Ray, Kin Elkins, the Carpenters, the Sloans, E. L. Walker and others settled in the county between 1859 and the days of reconstruction.

Stephens County was first called Buchanan in honor of President James Buchanan. It was created by an act approved January 22, 1858. The Chief Justice of Palo Pinto County was charged with the duty of organizing the county, calling an election of county officers, and qualifying the electors. This election was held September 20, 1860. It has also made the duty of the commissioners court to select not to exceed three places within five miles of the center of the county to be run as candidates for the county seat. The creating statute provided that the place selected be called Breckenridge, in honor of John C. Breckenridge, then Vice-President of the United States.

The following were Stephens County's first officers: G. E. Miller, Chief Justice; S. F. Newcomb, County Clerk; T. Matthews, Sheriff; J. Clark, Treasurer; F. L. Stockton, District Clerk; I. L. Weatherford, Assessor and Collector; J. E. DeLong, County Surveyor, and B. W. Reynolds, A. Bishop, G. James, W. H. Stockton, Commissioners.

December 17, 1861, an act was approved which changed the name of the county from Buchanan to Stephens, in honor of Alexander H. Stephens, Vice-President of the Confederate States of America.

Picketville was the only village in the county at the time of the first organization, and was temporarily used as a county seat. This place derived its name from the number of picket houses erected there, and it came into existence about 1860 or 1861. Old Picketville was about one and a half or two miles from Breckenridge. Levi Current, Sam and Pen Lindsey, Wash Hullum, Berry Meadows, the Carpenters, Kin Elkins, Elgy Christeson, James Schoolcraft, Andy McDonald, John Boggs, Dr. Gonzales, and others numbered among those who lived in and near Old Picketville during the early days of the Civil War. Wash Hullum and the Carpenter brothers were early merchants. Berry

Meadows has been reported to have run an early saloon. And like the dwellings, a picket house with dirt floor and roof served as Picketville's first school building. The benches were made of split logs. John W. Schoolcraft no doubt, taught the first school. William Veale and Barney Batholemew were also early teachers. Henry Jones who was stopping in Picketville and arranging to open school three or four days later, was killed by the Indians.

J. A. Clark, no doubt, taught the first school in Stephens County. This school was located over on the Clear Fork in the vicinity of Miller Valley. An early school was also taught during the war by Sam Newcomb, a son-in-law of Reynolds, at Old Fort Davis, a citizen's fort on the Clear Fork only a short distance from the Shackelford County line.

Rev. G. W. Slaughter, a Baptist minister of Palo Pinto County was one of the first preachers to carry the gospel into this section. Dr. Gonzales was the county's first doctor. Dr. S. S. Taylor of Palo Pinto County was occasionally called to visit patients in Stephens County and beyond.

William Holden, who was massacred by the Indians about 1857, was, perhaps, the first white person to die in the county.

During the Civil War and immediately following, while the Indians were waging their greatest hostility, the citizens of Stephens County were so few in number and widely separated, practically all "forted up." Several families "forted up" at Old Picketville. Others "forted up" at Old Owl Head across the Clear Fork from Miller Valley.

But Fort Davis was one of the most interesting of the early citizen forts of this section. J. M. Franz, the McCarthys, Selmans, Broomfields, B. Y. Reynolds, Bozzells, T. E. Jackson, Sutherlins, W. B. Hoover, John Hittson, the Brownings, J. G. Jackson, and approximately one hundred and twenty-five people "forted up" here. Fort Davis was in reality a frontier village. June 30, 1866, John Hittson vacated a cabin at Fort Davis and moved his family to Camp Cooper. Immediately following a store was opened in the Hittson home by W. B. Hoover, and this was, perhaps, Fort Davis' first store.

Sam Newcomb, a teacher mentioned above, kept a diary for the years 1865 and 1866. Its contents is the concealed vault in which is hidden the story of the frontier affairs as they then existed, not only at Fort Davis, but at Picketville and elsewhere. Portions of this diary were given in the Graham Leader, January 29, 1922, and Frontier Times, December, 1925.

For further mutual protection, the people of Old Fort Davis formed a small company of home guards. The following men were in this company: J. G. Irwin, M. Anderson, A. L. Anderson, A. P. Bishop, J. A. Browning, John Boggs, W. H. Clark, Mark

January, N. McCarty, W. Nelson, S. Newcomb, W. D. Reynolds, Leon Shaw, W. W. Ray, W. Waits.

During the war and shortly afterwards, Bonner and Bingham made salt on Big Cedar about four miles above its mouth.

Albert Sidney Johnson, in addition to establishing his claim to acreage near the mouth of Big Caddo, also filed on land adjacent to the Clear Fork in Stephens County.

Immediately following the close of the Civil War, Stephens County became disorganized. An act was passed October 11, 1866, providing that the county again be attached to Palo Pinto County for judicial purposes.

But during 1876, Dr. D. B. Warren, who was then county judge of Palo Pinto County, perfected Stephens County's second organization. He called an election of county officers and thereafter the following officers qualified: E. L. Walker, County Judge; B. B. Meddows, Sheriff and Collector; D. W. Hulum District and County Clerk; George Gray, Surveyor; Silas Scarbrough, County Treasurer; W. W. Ray, J. D. Love, Elias Lovitt, and Pen T. Lindsey, Commissioners.

June the 6th of the same year, the commissioners court called an election to determine whether or not a location on the east side of the West Fork of Cedar Creek, where the Palo Pinto and Fort Griffin Road intersected this stream, or the present site of Breckenridge on Gonzales Creek, should be selected as a county seat. A big picnic was held about the 4th of July, of the same year, to better organize the county and to vote upon the candidates for county seat. The location on Gonzales was selected. August 7th of the same year the commissioners' court contracted with George Gray, the County Surveyor, to lay off Breckenridge into streets, blocks, and lots. It was further ordered that town lots be sold at public auction September 4, 1876. This organization proved to be permanent, and Stephens County today is one of the best counties in that section of the state. It has been reported that Breckenridge W. Walker was the first white child born in Breckenridge.

Early population: In 1860, 198 whites and 32 slaves, total 230. In 1870, 306 whites and 24 negroes, total 330.

#### **SECTION 146. - KENDALL COUNTY**

The territory of Kendall, like several adjoining counties, was very largely colonized at an early date because of Fisher and Miller's colony. The county was created from Kerr and Bexar counties by an act approved January 10, 1862, and Adam Vought designated special commissioner to call an election of county officers. The Commissioner's Court was instructed to select not less than two places to be run as candidates for the county seat. The county was named for George W. Kendall, a

former editor of the New Orleans Picayune, a member of the Santa Fe expedition and an early settler, who established a sheep ranch in Kendall County about 1846.

The election was called and the following officers qualified for office: Jas. Graham, Chief Justice; Julius Dressel, Collector and Assessor; William Kuhfuss, Treasurer; Leopold Schultz, Surveyor; Herman Holzapple, County Clerk; John G. O'Grady, District Clerk; John W. Sansom, Sheriff; and C. Rhodius, J. C. Nowlin, Charles Bonnett, and Adam Voght, Commissioners.

During the first meeting of the Commissioners Court held March 8, 1882, the county surveyor was instructed to run the line between Kendall and Blanco, and between Kendall and Kerr. The court also instructed the county clerk to give notice that March 30th, the commissioners would meet to receive nominations of places to be run as candidates for the county seat. Boerne and Sisterdale, as a consequence, were placed in nomination. Boerne was selected by a majority of sixty-seven votes at an election held April 26, 1862.

The first marriage license, issued May 7, of the same year, to Neinrich Lessman and Natalie Schmidt; the second Charles Seewald and Johanna Boehm, June 6, 1862; and the third to Rudolph Harpeck and Sophia Schlosser, June 8. 1862.

The first indictment returned in District Court was against Justus Sickenius, who was charged with murder. The first civil case was styled James Haynes vs. J. Graham, and was for damages in the sum of \$10,000 for false imprisonment.

Early population: In 1870, 1,435 whites and 101 negroes, total 1,536.

Early post offices: In 1870, Boerne and Hodge's Hill.

#### **SECTION 147. - COLEMAN COUNTY**

Coleman County was created by an Act approved February 1, 1858. The Chief Justice of any adjoining or the nearest organized county was authorized to call an election of county officers, and to qualify the electors. This act also provided that as soon as the Commissioners' Court was qualified, it should proceed to ascertain the center of the county and to locate not exceeding three places within five miles thereof, to be run as candidates for the county seat. In event the county seat be located on unappropriated state land, three hundred and twenty acres were appropriated to be used as a townsite. The county was named for Robert M. Coleman, who was a colonel in the army of the Republic, who scouted for Indians in the vicinity of Coleman and on the upper Colorado, and whose wife and son were killed by Indians on the lower Colorado in Bastrop County in 1839. The statute provided that the county seat should also be called Coleman. The county was organized in 1864.

We are not in possession of a full list of the first officers: James J. Callan, however, was the first Chief Justice, and E. Watts, the first county clerk.

This county was one of the several along the frontier that received a larger number of early local settlers because of a local military post.

Dow St. Clair, the Arnetts, John Sheen, Wm. Bevans, E. C. Morgan, L. D. Graves, Curt Mayes, Jim Lindsey, the Holdens and others were living in the county as early as 1858.

Rev. Hugh M. Childers settled in Coleman County in 1859. This daring frontiersman had followed the extreme outward edge of the settlements since the 40's. We then find him in Williamson County prior to its organization; then in Coryell, Hamilton, Brown, Coleman and elsewhere.

Ike Christman, who moved up from Coryell, the Alexanders, John Shane, Dudley Johnson Jr., Malcomb Hunter, J. J. Callan, Dudley Johnson Sr., Dave Thorp, Jessie Johnson, and others settled in the county as early as 1860. A well known character, commonly known as Mother Johnson, came to the county in '61.

Rich Coffee, A. Burrell Brown, A. Jack Herring, Nat, William and Barton Guest, W. A. and Jim Beddo, Tom Starks, Robert and James Wylie, Ben Barton, Sammy Croggins, Dave Upton, Sug and Will Robinson, settled the ranch headquarters commonly called Flat Top, which was near the Colorado in the southwestern part of the county. At this place these various ranchmen "Forted up" for frontier protection, and the name of this ranching community was derived from the peculiar flat top picket and log houses. No novel or moving picture ever had a more typical western setting than was presented by the ranch quarters of these early frontiersmen.

Aaron Hart and son, the Clayton brothers, Blairs, and Curetons, were early settlers on Jim Ned in the northern part of the county. Capt. J. J. Cureton and family had previously lived in Taylor County, but near the close of the war, moved to Coleman. Concerning this move, William E. Cureton in his unpublished memoirs, said:

"In 1865 we concluded to ranch our cattle on Jim Ned and throw in with the Clayton brothers and Harts, who were our good neighbors and had been our nearest ranch neighbors in pioneer days back in Palo Pinto County."

John M. and G. K. Elkins, Sam Gholsom, the Cheathams, and John Hunter, were also early settlers. Henry Sackett, J. B. Terrell, and others were living in the county as early as 1870.

John Hunter opened Coleman County's first store at Camp Colorado about 1860. In 1860 or 1861 J. J. Callan also opened a store, which was located on Jim Ned about one mile southwest of the post. Coleman County's first marriage was that of J. J. Callan and Margaret Sheen, whose frontier wedding occurred in 1859 or 1860. The second wedding was that of Dave Thorp and Miss Kemp. The third prize goes to R. C. Morgan and Melvina St. Clair. The two latter weddings occurred within a few months after the former.

William Bevans Jr., was born September 26, 1860, and numbered among the early births.

Perhaps the first deaths were soldiers at the army post. Wirebrandt, a soldier, accidentally shot himself in the late 50's. A sick man traveling for his health died at the post about the same time. S. B. Childers, a thirteen months old son of Mark Childers, drowned in a wash tub July 3, 1859, or 1860. William Bevans Sr., died in 1861, and each of these numbered among the first deaths in that section of the state.

Coleman County's first school was taught in a tailor shop at the old post, and a Mr. Keen was the first teacher. This school was taught about 1861. The second school was taught by Jesse Johnson at Camp Colorado. The third, according to early reports was taught by J. J. Callan at his home on Jim Ned about one mile from the post.

The first doctor came with the army to the local camp. And we should mention the daring deeds of that heroic woman. Mother Johnson, who settled at Fort Phantom Hill in 1852, removed to Fort Chadbourne two years later, and came to Coleman County during the first year of the war. This good woman without demanding compensation or reward because of scarcity of doctors, often rode horse back alone for miles through the most dangerous part of the frontier to treat the sick and care for the suffering. It seems Providence protected her from the hostile savages who were constantly depredating on all parts of the frontier.

Early population: In 1870, 340 whites and seven negroes, total 347.

#### **SECTION 148 - HOOD AND SOMERVELL COUNTIES**

This territory was not unknown to travelers, prospectors, hunters, and Indian fighters as far back as the 30's. Some of the early maps bearing the Mexican Coat of Arms unmistakably indicate that Comanche Peak, west of Grandbury, was known and named, before Texas became a Republic. The Santa Fe expedition crossed the Brazos, no doubt, very near the present city of Granbury in 1842. In 1843 a treaty with the several tribes of Texas Indians was made by the Texas Government, and it was agreed that trading posts be established at or near

Comanche Peak, which was both a light house and land mark to the early strangers. Then in 1847 Charley Barnard established his trading post in the southern part of the county. This adventure entitled him to honors of being the first settler erecting the first house and opening the first store in Hood County.

In 1852 a few settlers began to arrive. Elizabeth Crockett, wife of the immortal David Crockett, and her son, Robert, settled in Hood County. R. S. Profitt, J. R. Sykes, Malachi and Absolem Gregory, Joseph and Charles Baker, Ellis McCreary, the Huffstuttlers, W. L. Rippietoe, George Smart, Hiram Steele, Peter James, William Herndon, the Abbeys, Wylie Long, William McDonald, and Y. J. Rylee, and son Jeff Rylee, Jack Edwards, J. K. P. Harris, Thomas Lambert, A. Bond, William Gafford, Austin Yates, P. Thorp, Claiborne Arrington, Caddo John Smith, Keechi John Smith, and Comanche John Smith, T. P. Helms, Wm. Shelly, Stephen Shelton, G. B. Dillahunty, Thomas Atkins, Rev. Joe Roberson, Matt and Sam Graham, Judge Trimble, John Calvin, P. V. Rhea, G. A. Rucker, and mother, Mrs. M. L. Rucker, W. J. W. Powell, Pleasant Thorp, James Halford, and other important citizens came to the county between 1852 and 1855. Dr. S. S. Taylor and Johnnie Lynn moved from Rockwell County to Hood during the latter year. J. E. Norton, Sam White, Logan Landers, Jake Reynolds, A. J. Berry, Aaron Ferris, Jesse F. Nutt, Joseph Nutt, Jacob Nutt, Abe Nutt, and D. L. Nutt, G. W. L. Randle, and many others moved to the county between 1855 and 1859.

Since Hood County was not created until 1866, its population was not separately enumerated in the census of 1860. But the population at that time was perhaps close to one thousand. In 1870 there were 2477 whites and 97 negroes, making a total of 2574.

Hood County was created by an act approved November 2, 1866, and Claiborne Arrington, Wm. Manley, and C. C. Alexander were appointed commissioners to assist in the organization of the county, which was named for General John B. Hood of the Confederate Army. The county seat was first called Granberry, and was named by Statute in honor of General H. B. Granberry, but no provision was made concerning the manner of selecting the county seat. Perhaps that omission from the Statute partly explains why no little amount of confusion was experienced in locating the county seat of government.

The county was not really organized until 1867. At an election held during that year, the following officers were elected: Abe Landers, County Judge; A. J. Wright, Sheriff; --- McCamant, County Clerk; John Morris, District Clerk; Peter Garland, Treasurer; Gideon Mills, Assessor and Collector; C. C. Alexander, Wilks Barker, John Meek, and Joe Robertson, Commissioners.

In selecting a county seat, it seems that Thorp Springs, Stockton, Lambert's Branch, Andy Waters' place on the Brazos, and the center of the county, were contesting candidates. No little amount of difficulty arose and a third election was held before a county seat was finally selected. The Nutts and Lamberts donated forty acres as a consideration of selecting Granberry for the county seat. The townsite was surveyed and lots sold as usual in other counties.

The first courthouse of Hood County stood where the present courthouse now stands. It was a log cabin sixteen by sixteen feet, doors in the north and south, and contained one room which was heated by an old fashion fire-place. The records were moved over from Stockton, which had been the temporary county seat. Shortly afterwards, a stone and concrete house twenty-five by forty feet was erected on the square to supplement the picturesque little log courthouse previously built. But March 5, 1875, the courthouse was destroyed by fire; and it was generally supposed that some individual who wished certain records destroyed, fired the building. A new courthouse was built by Evans Strain, and Haney. But since this building was not substantial, in 1890 and 1891, a new courthouse was erected at a cost of \$40,000.

The first District Court of Hood County was convened by Judge Hood, at Stockton in the fall of 1867. Tom burns was the foreman of the first grand jury.

W. H. Millwee, A. V. Shorpsire, E. P. Anderson, were among the first lawyers of Granberry.

Dr. S. S. Taylor who settled within a few miles of Thorp Springs in 1855, and moved to Golconda in 1857, was one of Hood County's first doctors. Dr. J. C. Carnelious, who settled near Acton in 1855 or 1856, was also an early doctor. Dr. D. K. Turner, J. R. Cauffman, and A. S. Hanna, were among the first physicians of Granberry.

Perhaps Hood County's second store was opened at Acton by C. P. Hollis. Acton at that time was called Comanche Peak.

Fighting Joe Roberson, who settled in Hood County about 1854, the year Johnson County was organized; and Dr. S. S. Taylor, who was also a minister, were among the county's first preachers. Joe Roberson promulgated the Baptist faith, and Dr. Taylor was an able representative of the Christian denomination. A church building was erected on Walnut Creek in 1855, and used by the several congregations. This was, perhaps, the first of its kind in the county, and it was also used as a school building. William Wright in 1855 or 1856 taught one of the first schools.

The death of Mrs. Wash Hutchison was one of the first in Hood County, and she was the first to be buried in the Acton Graveyard.

Mention should also be made of the old Water Mill established by Aaron Farris, in 1855, about one mile below Acton. When Granberry was in its infancy, Holland and Anderson established a saw mill there. This mill supplied much of the material for early houses in and around the county seat.

Altho Thorp Springs was unable to be elected county seat, nevertheless, in 1873, she was instrumental in encouraging the Clark brothers, Addison and Randolph, to establish here the Add-Ran Christian College which has since grown to be the present Texas Christian University. Today this school is one of the largest and finest in the South.

Somervell County was created from Hood in 1875, and named for Alexander Somervell, a noted soldier of the Republic of Texas. Not unlike the remaining portion of Hood County, Sommervell enjoyed a very early settlement and several families lived within the vicinity of Glen Rose, before the Civil War. Today Glen Rose and Somervell County are noted as a pleasure and health resort, and thousands of tourists visit the county annually.

#### **SECTION 149 - MENARD COUNTY**

This county was created by an act approved January 22, 1858, and named for Col. M. B. Menard. The act creating the county also provided that the county seat be called by the same name. The county was organized in 1871, and by a special act approved November 28th of the same year. Menardville was named as the county seat.

In 1864 some of the first settlers reached this section. This was an extremely dry year, and as a consequence, several of the stockmen moved their cattle to the county for both grass and water. Wesley Nelson, the parent of Ben Ellis, Dr. Robinson, the Coxes and others moved from Stephens County and elsewhere to Menard, and numbered among the very first settlers. The Bevans arrived four years later.

This county was the former home of Old Mission San Saba, the history of which has already been related.

#### **SECTION 150. - EASTLAND COUNTY**

Eastland County was created by an act approved February 1, 1858, and named for Capt. W. M. Eastland, who was a Mier prisoner and was shot at Salado, because he drew a black bean. The act also provided that the county seat bear the same name.

Frank Sanchez, like Rev. Hugh M. Childers, followed the frontier from early in the 40's. Then we find Sanchez in the vicinity of

Austin and Georgetown. As early as 1850 he was living in Hill County; 1856 on Sanchez Creek in Parker County, and it was from him this Creek derived its name. In 1858 he moved to Eastland County and was the first settler in that section. He located about six miles south of Ranger, where he herded cattle for Tom Dunnahue. During the same year, Henry Mansker and John Flannagan settled in the county. Mansker Lake derived its name from Henry Mansker. George Killing, Dave Herring, William Upton, Singleton, Sam, Jim, Ben, Tom and Taylor Gilbert, in 1859 settled on the Savannah Creek. They were all unmarried at that time. C. C. Blair was living in Eastland County perhaps as early as the same year. W. C. McGough, who settled McGough Springs, came to the county in 1880.

Henry Mansker and Johnnie Flannagan, perhaps, erected the first log cabins in the county. Mansker built near the Mansker Lake. Flannagan built his first house at old Merrimond. A Mr. Hill, father of Mark and Will Hill, opened the first store. This store was at Jowell, and was opened not later than the early 60's. B. M. (Coon) Keith and Sarah Jane Blair, who "Forted up" at Hog Town, and whose wedding occurred during the early 80's, were perhaps the first to marry. Owen Blair, son of Mr. and Mrs. C. C. Blair, was born June 18, 1861, and was one of the first children born in the county. A son of W. C. McGough, born August 17, 1881, also numbered among the first births.

An early school was taught at Providence. One of the first school houses was built at Mansker Lake about 1873 or 1874. Elder Roark was one of the first preachers.

When J. H. Baker of Palo Pinto County organized the county of Eastland, the following officers qualified for office: Fred Hale, County Judge; Henry Smick, Sheriff; Dick Stewart, County Clerk; John Stewart, District Clerk; Bill Day, Treasurer; and Peter Davidson, the first County Surveyor. The first court of the county was held at Mansker Lake. In February, 1874, an election was held to locate the county seat. Flannagan's Ranch was selected and became known as Merrimond. It seems at first they did not follow the statutory requirement concerning the name of the county seat. William Vensonheler and his associates opened the first rock store at old Merrimond. This store was both a grocery and saloon. The first courthouse of Eastland County, which was made of clapboards, and not of stone was farther south. It has been destroyed and its former location is hardly discernible. The old stone building that still stands was not the courthouse.

In 1860 there were 99 whites and no slaves in Eastland County; according to the census of 1870, the population consisted of 87 whites and one negro, making 88.

## **SECTION 151. - SHACKELFOHD COUNTY**

This county was created February 1, 1858, named for Capt. John Shackelford, one of the survivors of Fannin's massacres, organized in 1874 and 1875, and Albany selected as the county seat. According to the United States census, there were forty-four people in Shackelford County in 1860. J. E. Matthews, who lived for a short while in Palo Pinto County moved out in Shackelford in 1859. George Greer, W. H. Ledbetter, Judge J. C. Lynch, the Maxwells, Collins, Mauldin, and a few others settled in the county before the Civil War. Ledbetter lived at the old Ledbetter salt works about eight miles south and west of Albany.

During the Civil War an army camp was established near Moran. This camp soon developed into a community, and several of the local settlers "Forted up" at this place, which became known as Mugginsville. Immediately following the Civil War old Mugginsville assumed the proportions of a frontier village. Wash Hullum, who had been previously connected with the early history of Palo Pinto and Picketville, taught the first school. This was one of the first schools ever taught in Shackelford County, and was the first school at old Mugginsville. The school building was made of pickets, had a dirt floor, and was a typical example of the architecture of that section. William Crow, who married a daughter of George Greer, taught the second school.

During the 60's a frontier school was also taught at the ranch of J. C. Lynch, and it was while attending this school that John Ledbetter mysteriously disappeared, and was perhaps, captured by the Indians. Early schools were also taught at Fort Griffin.

Fort Griffin was established on Maxwell's Ranch in 1867. Shortly afterwards a frontier town of a typical western type began to develop near this government fort.

The first county seat was located a short distance south of the present city of Albany, and almost within its city limits. This was later abandoned and the county seat moved to the present location. Palm and Wilhelm opened one of the first stores in Albany. Woody opened a store about the same time. Mr. and Mrs. Barr, perhaps, opened the first hotel.

Shackelford County has long been noted as a great ranching center. The Reynolds, Matthews, and others have held large ranch holdings here for a long number of years. And these early ranchmen ranked second to none along the entire southwestern frontier.

Early population: In 1860, 35 whites and nine slaves, total 44.

## **SECTION 152. - PRESIDIO COUNTY**

Presidio County was created in 1850, and this section has been settled to some extent by the Spanish and Mexicans for over two hundred years.

The first American settlers of Presidio County located along the Rio Grande. Ben Leaton, Milton Favor, Larkin Laundraum, John Daley, and perhaps others, immediately following the close of the Mexican War, settled near Presidio, Texas. Trappers, traders, and others had visited this section for many years before. But these gentlemen arrived about 1848, and soon afterward established what became known as Fort Leaton. This post, however, was not a Government post but a citizens fort. When the population justified a separate organization, Fort Davis was made the first county seat.

Early population: In 1860, 574 whites, two free negroes and four slaves, total 580. In 1870, 1,147 whites and 489 negroes, total 1,636. This census, of course, included the soldiers of the local army post.

#### **SECTION 153. - TOM GREEN COUNTY**

Tom Green County was created by an act approved March 13, 1874, and named for Gen. Tom Green. It was created from Bexar, and included all the territory north and west of a line running due west, of the southwest corner of Concho County, to the Pecos River. The county was organized in 1875, and Ben Ficklin made the county seat. Its name was later changed to San Angelo, the name by which it has since been known.

Rich Coffee, the Beddos, the Wylies, Starks, and others who have already been mentioned, ranched over this part of the state. And some of these early settlers also lived in Tom Green County. Mr. and Mrs. Whitehurst, moved to the county in 1864. Bruce McCain, Abe Hunter, Billy Gordan, John Chism, Criss Fitzgerald, an old bachelor, and Richard F. Tankersley, were early settlers in this section of the state. To be sure some of these early frontiersmen lived in adjoining counties, but ranched on the Concho.

#### **SECTION 154 - McCULLOCH COUNTY**

McCulloch County was named for Captain McCulloch who rose to the rank of General during the Confederacy. This county was created August 27, 1857, and the Chief Justice of San Saba authorized to organize its local government. The naming of the county seat was delegated to the commissioners court. The county was organized in 1876, and Brady, which is situated on Brady Creek, was selected as the seat of government.

T. J. Keys, John Cox, Lewis Hull, Jonathan Mulky and son, J. D. Lewis, Andrew and W. R. Hudson, and others, were living in McCulloch County as early as 1858. Lish Wilson and J. W. Jump were living in the county a few years later. In addition to the above community in the northwestern part of the county, there

was also a settlement in the vicinity of Camp San Saba and Voca.

Mrs. Wilson, a grandmother of Dan Wilson, died in 1863 and numbered among the first deaths. Rev. Hugh M. Childers preached the first sermon in the vicinity of old Milburne. A Mr. Patterson opened the first store in this section. This building was constructed of logs and located about one and a half miles east of Milburne, which has been often called Dug Out, because merchandise was kept and sold in a dug out. This peculiar means of disposing of goods, together with the early western cowboys and others, who, in Indian times, came here to trade, would, indeed today present a rare frontier picture. J. W. Stump taught a school about one and a half miles north of Dug-Out. on the Colorado, in the northeastern part of the county. This school opened in 1862 and was one of the first in the county and the first in this section. The school building was a picket house similar to the one at Mugginsville in Shackelford County.

Mr. and Mrs. Lewis A. Mulky were married in 1858 while living in McCulloch County and their marriage was, perhaps, the first in the county. Their daughter, Lucindia, who was born in 1859, numbered among the first births.

#### **SECTION 155 - CALLAHAN COUNTY**

Callahan County was created February 1, 1858, and named for James H. Callahan, one of the survivors of Fannin's massacre. The county was organized in 1877.

William and John Hittson, the Clayton brothers, Curetons, Harts, Blairs, Eubanks, all of whom had previously lived in Palo Pinto County, numbered among those who ranched in Callahan. But much like some of the early ranchers of Clay County, these people generally lived in adjoining counties. The old Narbo ranch of this county was well known in the early days.

When the county was organized Bell Plains was made the county seat. But when the Texas & Pacific Railway built through the northern part of the county, the seat of justice was moved to Baird.

#### **SECTION 156. - TAYLOR COUNTY**

Taylor County was created February 1, 1858. But it was not organized until twenty years later. Buffalo Gap was the first county seat, but when the Texas & Pacific Railway built through the northern part of the county, the seat of justice was moved to Abilene, which has grown to be one of the finest cities in West Texas. Clabe Mercher has often been called the father of Abilene, because of his early residence and activities there. William E. Cureton in his unpublished memoirs, gives us a vivid picture of Taylor County during the Civil War. He said:

"In the fall of 1863, my father gathered a part of his cattle and built pens down on the creek about a mile below where the courthouse in Abilene stands. The county was destitute of timbers, save the little post oak strip just north of town. You could see a jackrabbit run for a half mile, where now grows thick forest of mesquite in the valley. The cold winds and the thousands of buffalo they brought with them in early winter drifted the cattle south of the mountains on to the cattlemen on Jim Ned and Pecan Bayou. Our boss was Mr. Jeff Lythe, who built pens on the head of Elm Creek at the Gap for penning purposes and returning cattle; hence we have the names Lythe Gap and Lake Creek changed from Elm, but the cattle would not locate. We were farther west of anyone at that time. Ledbetter's salt works seven miles south of where Albany is located, was the nearest people to us."

Concerning their residence here, Mr. Cureton further says;

"I forget to mention that one winter we ranched where Abilene now is. Rex Stockton, Riley St. John, Joe Browning, a brother of late ex-Lieut. Gov. James N. Browning of Mobeetie, came on a hunt and killed more than a hundred and forty deer, for their hides for work and clothing. Every man then dressed in buckskin."

Sam Gholson was also an early rancher in Taylor County.

#### **SECTION 157. - THROCKMORTON COUNTY**

Because of old Camp Cooper and the Comanche Indian Reservation, both of which were located in this county, because of the fine territory bordering on the Clear Fork, and because of the old California Trail and Butterfield Route, this section enjoyed an early settlement and is unusually rich with early history.

John R. Baylor, who was Indian Agent from 1855 to 1857, moved his family to Camp Cooper in 1856. William Bevans came from New Jersey and settled at Camp Cooper during the same year. In 1856 Lieutenant Gibson erected the old stone ranch near the old California Trail and a short ways east of the Haskell-Throckmorton County line. This old building was a relic of former days and for many years there was not a fence or house between here and the settlements in New Mexico. Shortly after the war this ranch was occupied by the Reynolds. Before the war Thomas Lambshead bought a ranch four miles north and west of Fort Griffin. Charlie Marcus, the Sheens, Allen Adams, and a Mr. Steel lived near the Indian Reservation. A Mr. Nash lived across the Clear Fork. Jowel Myers, who was killed in the Big Elm Creek Indian raid in 1864, lived at Camp Cooper before the Civil War. Jonathan Lee was running a store at the post as early as 1859. Joe G. Irwin moved over from Fort Cradbourne and bought Lee's store. In 1860 Mr. Irwin also contracted to furnish meat for Camp Cooper. This contract was

signed by Robert E. Lee himself, then in command of Camp Cooper. John Irwin, a son of Joe G. Irwin, still lives above Fort Griffin, and has the original contract among his family possessions. J. M. Franz had charge of Franz Station on the old Butterfield Route, and numbered among the early settlers. Robert King lived in the county as early as 1858.

William Bevans married Elizabeth Sheen at Camp Cooper prior to his moving to Coleman County in 1858. Their wedding was one of the very first in this section. A daughter of J. M. Franz married a Mr. Thorp about the beginning of the Civil War or shortly before. This, too, was an early wedding.

Throckmorton County was created January 13, 1858, and named for Dr. William E. Throckmorton, who was one of the first settlers of North Texas. Thomas Lambshead, William L. Browning, and Robert King were appointed commissioners to organize the county. It was made their duty to call an election of county officers and to select not less than three suitable places within five miles of the center of the county to be run as candidates for the county seat. It was also proved that all courts be held at Tarrant and Gibbons Ranch on Elm Creek until a suitable building for a courthouse could be erected. But the removal of the Indian Reservation in 1859, and the outbreak of the Civil War in 1861, together with Indian outrages, delayed the county's organization until 1879.

The first county seat was called Williamsburg and was about six miles north of the present seat of justice. When the county capitol was moved to Throckmorton it was agreed that space would be given for public buildings, but it seems no mention was made concerning the amount of ground to be given. As a consequence, if reports be correct, the owner or owners of the land refused to donate only a very small courthouse square. The result was that Throckmorton County has one of the smallest, if not the smallest courthouse square in Texas. And Young County, adjoining on the east, has perhaps, the largest public square in the entire southwest.

A Mr. Tadley opened one of the first stores in Throckmorton. C. A. (Alex) Housley ran an early eating house and stage stand.

Early population: In 1860, 124 whites.

### **SECTION 158. - FURTHER ACTIVITIES AND SETTLEMENTS**

It is, of course, impossible to incorporate into this edition a detailed account of all the counties that have been created in the territory covered. And to be sure that is neither expected nor is it appropriate since it would compel us to go beyond the period intended to be inscribed in the present work. But it is, no doubt, befitting that we should briefly mention a few of the first

settlements and activities farther west and give at least a few considerations of the accomplishments of the early pioneers whose efforts made possible the present civilization.

As early as 1852 S. B. Miller was a meat contractor at Fort Phantom Hill. Louisa E. Miller, a daughter, was born at this post, April 17th of the same year. In later years she became the devoted wife of A. C. Tackett. During 1852, Dudley Johnson also moved his family to Fort Phantom Hill. But when it was abandoned two years later Mr. Johnson moved his family to Fort Chadbourne. His daughter, Emma, later became the faithful wife of John M. Elkins.

A. J. McCoy and Ben Gouch during the late 50's ranched near Valley Creek and in the vicinity of Old Fort Chadbourne. A Mr. Clusky also lived near this early cantonment. J. G. Irwin moved to this post as early as 1855. During this same year John Irwin, a son of Mr. and Mrs. J. G. Irwin, was born at old Fort Chadbourne, and was, no doubt, the first white child born in that section of the state. John Irwin now lives near the former location of old Camp Cooper.

After the establishment of the Butterfield Route, it, of course, became necessary to leave each of the stage stands, which averaged from twenty to thirty miles apart, in charge of some responsible person or persons. This route, as a consequence, distributed a line of daring frontiersmen from Preston to El Paso.

During the pioneer days private citizens were also invariably found around most of the early army posts, which usually kept them employed. But during the dark days of the Civil War and "Period of Reconstruction", practically all territory to the west of those counties created before 1860 was relinquished to the Indians. Clay and Wichita were entirely abandoned and much of the territory in other exposed counties along the frontier also abandoned.

Shortly after the Civil War, however, activities in the West were again noticeable. Oliver Loving, Charles Goodnight, J. J. Cureton and others were soon slowly moving many thousands of cattle to New Mexico, Colorado, Kansas and elsewhere, and the great tides and waves of civilization were again breaking and rolling against the barren wastes of the great West.

Fort Elliott was established in 1875. This opened new territory for settlement. And as a consequence Wheeler County was created in 1876 and organized in 1879.

One of the very first of the fearless ranchmen to settle in the Panhandle and near the Cap-rock of the Plains was Charles Goodnight. Concerning the early settlement of this section Colonel Goodnight said:

"In 1876 I moved my herd into the Panhandle, following an old Indian trail, which led into the banks between Canyon Blanco and the main canyon Paloduro, where we came to the cap rock over which the trail led, while probably the most practicable place to enter it for many miles around, but the descent was so abrupt and steep that we were compelled to take our wagons to pieces, first unloading them, and let them down into the valley below with ropes. We had to do the same thing with their contents. We had heavy loaded teams of provisions and many other necessary things for establishing a permanent camp or quarters. I located in Paloduro canyon with my herd of 1,800 head. At that time the nearest settlement eastward from us was Henrietta, 200 miles northeast, 75 miles to Fort Elliott, which had just been established the year before, having then only a small nucleus of settlers. North 80 miles was the Canadian River, where another cattleman located his family, T. S. Bugbee. My wife's nearest neighbor was Mrs. Bugbee, 80 miles away. Think of it, my lady readers, the lonesomeness of those two women, both by nature and education qualified to adorn the most exclusive society, but with willing hands and hearts helping their husbands to lay the foundation for their fortunes, and preparing the way for the future development of a grand civilization. In the fall of 1877 a small settlement was started in Donley County known as Old Clarendon, about five miles north of the present little and beautiful city of the same name, on the Fort Worth and Denver railroad."

H. C. (Hank) Smith, who previously lived at Fort Griffin, in 1877 followed the Old MacKenzie Trail to Blanco Canyon where he erected a picturesque ranch home. This splendid old stone structure, which stands about ten miles north of Crosbyton, today is still an asset to that part of that state.

About the same time or shortly afterward others from the vicinity of Fort Griffin established ranch quarters in Dickens County. Their interests were later sold to the Matador outfit. During 1879 or 1880 a colony of Quakers from Indiana settled near Estacado in Crosby County. Some sheepmen were also locating near Plainview. During the late 70's and early 80's, ranchmen were beginning to ride the ranges in Midland, Nolan, Scurry, Jones, Haskell, Baylor, Archer, Wilbarger, Hardeman, and in other western counties. The Panhandle and other sections also enjoyed an appreciable growth. Step by step our early pioneers pushed on to the Plains. The Slaughters, Cowdens, Hittsons, Daltons, H. G. Taylor, Charles Goodnight, Curetons, Tankersleys, Pulliams, John Chrism, Coffees, Hullums, Bevans, Swensons, Matadors, Elkins, Gholsons, Waggoners, Burnetts, Halsells, and many others established ranches on the great western ranges.

Let us briefly consider these ranches. Often they were provinces or small empires themselves and sometimes a single ranch covered several counties. In a measure they also established

their own code of ethics and local self-government. Never in the history of North America do we find our American institutions more interesting, more romantic and pulsating with more thrilling stories than are found interwoven with the history of the early ranchmen of West Texas. It is but the history of western Texas, itself, for ranching was the principal industry. This early history, however, not unlike an extended parade, has practically passed.

Millions have been spent to perpetuate the memories of distinguished soldiers, their names enshrined in the great halls of fame, and their glory engraved on magnificent statues of marble and stone. But what has been done for these early plainsmen who blazed the western trails with their own blood and marked the besetting miles with lonely graves of loved ones?

Ref: Before writing this part devoted to county history, author interviewed many old-timers in the former frontier counties. It required nearly three years to gather this and other material, and necessitated the author's driving approximately 30,000 miles; also made a personal study of county records. The names of the first officers of Stephens County were obtained from files in office of Secretary of State, and furnished by Mrs. Janey Y. McCallum. Further Ref: Acts of Legislature, creating counties, and found in Laws of Tex., compiled by H. P. N. Gammel; Early History of Bosque County by H. J. and C. M. Cureton; Incidents in the History of Dublin, by Mrs. S. C. Lattimore; Early Settlers Life in Texas and Organization of Hill County, by A. Y. Kirkpatrick; History of Johnson County, as published in the Enterprise, 1895; Historic Background for Cleburne City-builders, by Geo. L. Murphy, as was perhaps published in a Cleburne paper, the name of which we do not have; History of Johnson and Hill County; Reminiscences of Geo. B. Erath, as found in Waco City Directory for 1876; History of McClellan, Falls, Bell, and Coryell; Minutes of the Meeting of the Palo Pinto County Pioneer and Old Settlers Association, published by the Palo Pinto County Star, 1897; data copied from county records of San Saba County, by Arch Woods, and perhaps District Clerk, who failed to sign name; History of North and West Texas, by B. B. Paddock; Fort Worth and the Northwest, by B. B. Paddock; Fort Worth City Directory for 1876; An Account of Tarrant County's First Settlement at Bird's Fort, by Mary Daggett Lake, and published in the Fort Worth Star-Telegram about Oct. 2, 1927; History of Wise County, by Cliff D. Cates; History of Denton County, by Ed P. Bates; History of Montague County, by Mrs. W. R. Potter; Historical Sketches of Parker County, by Smythe (1877); History of Hood County, by T. T. Ewell; History of Eastland County, by Mrs. Geo. Langston; History of Bandera County, by J. Marvin Hunter; History of Young County, by Judge P. A. Martin, and published in the Graham Leader; Evolution of the State, by Noah Smithwick; History of Erath, Bosque, Comanche and Brown Counties, and published by Lewis

Publishing Co.; 40 Years at El Paso, by W. W. Mills; Texas Indian Fighters, by A. J. Sowell; Pictorial History of Texas, by Thrall; Big foot Wallace, by Duval; The Trail Drivers of Texas, by Geo. W. Saunders and J. Marvin Hunter; Indian Fights on the Texas Frontier, by E. L. Deaton; Early Days in Central Texas, by F. M. Cross; German Pioneers in Texas, by John H. Biggers; Five Years a Cavalryman, by H. H. McConnell; History of Williamson County, as published in the Williamson County Star, and furnished by the Georgetown Chamber of Commerce; Notes on History of Blanco County, furnished by Blanco Chamber of Commerce; Texas Almanacs, 1857-66; Cattle Industry in Texas 1895; Compendium of U. S. Census, 1850, 1860 and 1870; and Census records in Washington, D. C; List of U. S. Post Offices 1851 1855, 1857, 1859; and 1870. Duval's W. A. (Big Foot) Wallace; and other things we may have overlooked.

## **PART V. INDIANS OF WESTERN TEXAS**

### **CHAPTER I. THE EARLY INDIANS OF WEST TEXAS**

**159. Origin.** - The origin of the aboriginal man of America has received the attention and close study of scientists and scholars since the discovery of the new world. But conclusions reached are not in accord. Some theorists maintain that the first Americans immigrated from Asia.

It is reasonably certain that America was several times discovered prior to the time of Christopher Columbus. Some scholars are of the opinion the Chinese, Phoenicians, and possibly other nations may have reached America before the dawn of the Christian Era. The Norsemen, no doubt, made several trips to America as early as the 11th Century. The Welsh may have also made several trips to America approximately 100 years later. Then, when these early voyages are considered by scholars and scientists, it is easy to conjecture the first Americans, commonly called Indians, may have reached the American continent by water. But if they did, evidently, it was at a very early age.

It is plausible to suppose that the earliest Americans may have originated from different sources. And that America was inhabited by an unknown race of people that preceded the Indians. The remains of such a man may some day be discovered in caves, cliffs, or elsewhere. But, perhaps, the most plausible theory is the one first advanced. Many animals of America and Asia show a remarkable resemblance to each other. And not unlike certain animals, the American Indians also show a remarkable relationship to the peoples of the Pacific Coast countries of Asia. Then it is possible and, perhaps, probable that Alaska and Asia at one time were connected, and that the American Indians, by that route, reached America. If that be

true, was there a different race of people already in America? If so, perhaps some day we shall know.

**160. Indians in America and Texas.** - Although our knowledge of the origin of the first Americans is only theory, we know as a positive fact that the Indians have been on this continent a long time. The written records of the Mayan civilization of Central America and Mexico date back to the period previous to the time of Christ. And it is generally believed that the birth of their civilization dates back to a much earlier period.

But for convenience the early tribes of West Texas are classified, and will be discussed under the three sections, follows, to wit: Unknown Tribes, Cliff Dwellers, and Stone Mound Builders.

**161. Unknown Tribes.** - Under this classification, as the title would indicate, we place those early wandering tribes of Texas Indians about which we have little knowledge as no ruins and remains or artifacts excepting, perhaps, an occasional arrow point or other small stone implement can be found to relate their early history. And there is, to be sure, little to be said concerning such tribes. But, no doubt, such tribes existed, and in some instances were likely the forerunners of some of the later tribes with which we have been acquainted during the last four centuries.

**162. Cliff Dwellers.** - The Cliff Dwellers, who once lived along the rough and rugged cliffs of Texas, are not to be confused with the Pueblo Cliff Dwellers, who once lived farther west. Just what relation, if any there was between the two, we of course, do not know. The Cliff Dwellers of Texas were more primitive in their mode of living. Their only shelter consisted of an over-hanging cliff or cave, but in some instances they may have also used hides and skins for their further protection and shelter. They understood the use of bone needles in making their clothes and other articles. They also understood the use of fire, as is evidenced by the charred and smoked cliffs around their camping places; and they were, no doubt, well tutored and trained in fishing and hunting; but were evidently not a roving tribe of Indians, unless they continued to return to their old camps during certain seasons of the year. They understood the art of making flint and stone implements, but evidently did not understand the art of making and using pottery. Particularly is that true of such Indians of Northern Texas.

**163. Stone Mound Builders of Upper Brazos and Elsewhere.** - The first observations we made of these Indian mounds were approximately twenty-two years ago. Since that date it has been our pleasure, when the occasion permitted, to study a large number of such mounds. Because of the interest manifested in these ruins, we wrote to Dr. J. Walter Fewkes, head of the Department of Ethnology of the Smithsonian

Institute, Washington, D. C, and asked for information pertaining to these Indians. We were informed that so far as he knew they had never been studied. Subsequently, while the author was in Washington, D.C. during the winter of 1926-1927, he called in person to see Dr. Fewkes, and again requested such information. Dr. Fewkes again stated he was unable to furnish the author with such information, and was of the opinion that the mounds along the upper Brazos had never been studied, but that Dr. Pierce of the University of Texas had made a study of what appeared to be similar mounds of that section. After returning from Washington, D. C. the author consulted Dr. Pierce at the University of Texas. And we feel deeply indebted to Dr. Pierce for his kindness and co-operation, and his outlining the extent of his studying the Indian Mounds in the vicinity of Austin and elsewhere. The conclusions he had reached concerning the mounds of that section corresponded to similar conclusions we have reached concerning the mounds of the upper Brazos; and although our information of these mounds has been very largely derived from research work among the North Texas mounds, we feel deeply obligated to Dr. Pierce for the information advanced; and also to Joseph H. and Frank A. Taylor and W. E. and Fred I. McConnell, for valuable assistance voluntarily contributed to various field expeditions.

These stone mounds are circular in form, and have a depression in the center. In fact, their shape resembles a small dormant volcano. Due to that fact and due to the fact they are always black in the bottom of the crater where the Indians built their fires, no doubt explains why cowmen, surveyors hunters, and others who, by chance, often frequented their locations, called these mounds "Gas-blow-outs."

Their sizes vary from ten to fifty feet in diameter, and the measurement across the top of the crater is usually just about one-half of the distance across the entire mound. The bottoms of the craters in the interior of the mounds are always about seven or eight feet in diameter. That, of course, would be sufficiently large to inclose their tepees or wigwams. The rock walls of the mounds are often six feet high. The stones composing the walls are placed in an irregular position. Practically all the rocks appear to be burnt and seem to be the broken parts of flat rocks that were originally eight or more inches across their flat surface. We have noticed that it is not uncommon to find similar large flat rocks buried in the bottom of the craters, the place where the Indians built their fires. As the Indians had no metal cooking utensils I am of the opinion that such rocks were used for cooking and heating purposes. After a stone is burnt sufficiently long it invariably breaks into smaller parts, and it is just such burnt and broken pieces of stone that compose the walls of these mounds. Since the bottom of the craters of such stone mounds are always about the size of an Indian tepee, it is our theory that after these stones were burnt sufficiently long to break, the broken parts were placed around

the edge of the Indian wigwams to protect them from the rains, winds, and inclement weather.

By this process these stone walls were, no doubt, piled into their present circular form. By this slow process how long would it require to build up the larger stone mounds which often contain sufficient burnt stone to fill approximately one hundred wagons? The mounds usually form a complete circle, but occasionally there is an opening on one side, which no doubt, was their point of entrance. Joe H. Taylor, uncle of the author, reports that he recently found a mound that had two such entrances. We never find more than eight or ten mounds in any one place and usually not more than four or five. But it is not unusual to find three or four rock mounds in a single cluster and each tangent to the other.

The stone ruins are so numerous and so well distributed that it would be practically impossible to locate all of them within a reasonable length of time. They are found along the larger and smaller streams, near lakes and springs, and far back in the canyons and among the mountains. But they are always found close to wood, water, etc.

Such artifacts found while excavating into these ruins induce us to believe that in many respects these Indians were not dissimilar in habits, and culture, to the Plains Indians with whom the European people came in contact subsequent to the discovery of America by Christopher Columbus. In and around these mounds, flint arrow points, spear points, grinding stones and other stone implements are often found. Recently, when assisted by F. A. Taylor and W. E. and Fred I. McConnell, while excavating into some large mounds a few miles southwest of Palo Pinto, Texas, we unearthed a portion of a grinding stone that was buried about three feet in the bottom of the crater of a very large mound. From the depth it was found to the surface, the earth was charred and burnt and almost pure ashes. That, of course, was additional evidence of the age of the mound.

The discovery of numerous decayed bones indicates these Indians were dependent upon hunting for a large portion of their food. Their dead were buried along the cliffs not a great distance from their camp-sites. And their manner of burial, like their manner of living, was more or less crude and primitive.

These mounds have not been occupied for perhaps three or four hundred years and likely much longer. They have been vacated so long occasionally we find a tree approximately two hundred years old growing out of the ruins. Just how long the mounds had been vacated previous to the growth of the trees we do not know. Nor do we know just why they were abandoned. Did the introduction of the horse into America change their mode of living? Or had they disappeared long before to the introduction of the horse?

**PART V.  
INDIANS OF WESTERN TEXAS**

**CHAPTER II.**

**INDIANS FOUND ON THE FRONTIER BY THE FIRST  
SETTLERS**

**164. Anadarko.** - This tribe, like the Ioni, was closely allied to the Caddo, and spoke their language. In fact, they are classified as a division of the Caddo. We find them first mentioned in the writings of Biedma, who says that Moscoso in 1592, came in contact with this particular tribe of Indians. During the sixteenth, seventeenth, eighteenth, and part of the nineteenth centuries, the villages of these Indians were scattered along the Trinity and Brazos Rivers. The Spanish established a mission among the Anadarko during the early part of the eighteenth century, but it was soon abandoned. La Harpe, a French explorer, reached the village of the Anadarkos during 1719, and was kindly received. When the first settlers arrived in the Southwest, the Anadarkos were a peaceful tribe, but like the Caddos, once a powerful nation, misfortune knocked at their door. During the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, the tribal numbers were greatly reduced and pushed westward from their former locations. In 1812 a village of forty men and two hundred women and children was on the Sabine River. During the forties of the preceding century, however, these Indians were living in Village Bend in Palo Pinto County, about five miles southeast of Palo Pinto, and about six miles southwest of Mineral Wells. This was their permanent home up until 1855, the time they were placed on the Lower Reservation. They remained there up until 1859, and were then removed to Oklahoma. A prosperous town in that state today perpetuates their name.

**165. Apaches.** - This tribe, not dissimilar to the hostile Comanches, was one of the most bloodthirsty of all of the West Texas tribes. And like others, it was divided into numerous smaller bands which had their own organization. To be sure, many of the Apaches belong farther west, but their activities and excursions, as well as their occasional residence, often extended eastward into the wilds of West Texas.

They were first called Comanches by Onate in 1598, but their tribes had been previously reported under other names by earlier Spanish explorers.

Because of their extremely hostile disposition, Apaches were one of the last of all the tribes of the great west to be placed on the reservations.

**166. Caddo.** - This tribal name is often used to designate a confederacy of early Indians which extended from Texas to

Canada. But it is the southern division with which we are particularly concerned, and includes the Caddo, Ioni, Anadarko, and other kindred tribes. It also includes the Keechi and Wichita, Red River and elsewhere. It was here, they were first met by the white men. According to their tribal traditions, these Indians were of the opinion they had been living along Red River since time immemorial. When they were visited by La Harpe in 1719, one of the principal villages was located on Red River at the point which afterwards became known as Old Spanish Fort. As has already been related, this early fortification was of French origin and located in the present county of Montague. The principal tribes of Caddos remained at this point until about 1795, when driven by the Osage to a point about a hundred leagues down the river, and about one hundred and twenty-five miles above Natchitoches. They remained at this point for about thirty or forty years and some of their number then drifted out into the wilds of what is now Palo Pinto County, and settled in Village Bend and near the mouth of the Big Caddo, which today bears their name.

This tribe has always been less nomadic than some of the other Western Indians, and this partly explains their greater interest in agriculture, and domestic affairs around their villages.

The United States made a treaty of peace with the Caddos in 1835, and among other things, this treaty stipulated that for a consideration of \$80,000.00, to be paid in money and property, the Caddos agreed to leave the territory of the United States forever.

**167. Cherokee.** - Originally, the Cherokee belonged neither to Texas nor the West, but was an Eastern tribe, and first reported by De Soto in 1540. Traditional, linguistic, and archaeological evidences indicate that the Cherokee originated in the North. But they were found in possession of the southern Allegheny region, when first encountered by De Soto. In 1759, the Cherokees declared war against the English of the Carolinas. This conflict lasted until about 1794. During this period, parties of the Cherokees pushed down the Tennessee River, and formed new settlements, close to the Tennessee-Alabama line. Shortly after 1800, missionary and educational work was established among them. By 1820 these Indians had adopted a regular form of government modeled after that of the United States. In the meantime, large numbers of the more conservative Cherokees, angered by the encroachment of the whites, crossed the Mississippi and made new homes in the wilderness of the West. Some of these Indians found their way to the pine forests of Eastern Texas. And it was from them the present county of Cherokee derived its name. They were later forced to move further west, and finally located in Oklahoma.

**168. Comanches.** - During the frontier days, the Comanche together with their allied tribes, did more depredations than the

combined forces of all other Indians. These people belonged to the Shoshoean stock, and the only one of that group that lived entirely on the plains. It is generally supposed the Comanche was pushed southward by the Sioux from their former home in Wyoming and elsewhere, and located on the great southwestern prairies.

For nearly two centuries they were the bitter enemies of the Spaniards of Mexico, and extended their rades into Chihuahua, and other parts of Old Mexico. They were less hostile toward the Americans, but it seems the early Texans inherited their hostility toward the Spanish. For the Comanche raged a relentless war from the time of the arrival of the first colonists up until about 1875, when they were forced on the reservations.

These Indians of the plains extended over a wide range of territory, and depredated in New and Old Mexico, Texas, Kansas and elsewhere. But generally speaking, their home was around the head waters of the Texas and Oklahoma streams where buffalo were found in countless numbers.

The Comanches were divided into small bands and each of these bands had their own tribal name. Their population has been estimated from fifteen hundred to thirty thousand people. In 1860, however, their number did not likely exceed two thousand.

**169. Delaware.** - The Delawares originally lived in the states of Delaware, Pennsylvania, New York, New Jersey, and along the Atlantic Coast, and have been closely associated with the whites since the arrival of the first settlers. They were always considered peaceable, and often used as interpreters and guides. Many treaties of peace have been made with this tribe, whose numbers were estimated at about twenty-five hundred. The Delewares drifted as far West as Texas.

**170. Ioni.** - This tribe, like the Anadarko, is a division of the Caddo, and has been closely associated with the early history of Texas. In fact, it was from this tribe the State of Texas derived its name. Like other tribes, the Ioni have been known by almost a countless number of names. They have been called Inie, Hainai, Aenay, Agerones, Aahinai, Ainaie, Anais, Annay, Ayanais, etc. They were also known as the Thechas, Tesias, Pechas, Texaias, Tehas, and Texas. Since they lived not a great distance from Nacogdoches and were commonly associated with the early Spanish, French and English adventurers, Texas became known as the land of the Tehas, and the various names by which they were known, a few of which have already been given. From this source the early explorers and settlers derived the name Texas. These Indians, who in later years, were generally known as Ioni like the Caddo and others, drifted to the Brazos and located in the present county of Palo Pinto. They settled in Village Bend about five miles southeast of Palo Pinto

and about six miles southwest of Mineral Wells. Some of the Caddoan tribes lived at the Jose Maria village, in the western part of Hill County, during the thirties and forties. It was at this place that Fort Graham was established in 1849. These Indians, however, had by this time pushed on up into Hood, Palo Pinto, and adjoining counties.

**171. Keechi.** - The Keechi also belong to the Caddoan group. When the French visited these Indians in 1701, they lived on the upper waters of Red River of Louisiana, and had pushed southward to the upper Trinity in Texas. In 1712 a division of the Keechi were at war with the Ioni, who lived on the lower Trinity near Nacogdoches. The former tribe was already in possession of horses which had been introduced into this country by the Europeans. In 1719, La Harpe met a band of Keechi on the Canadian River in company with other members of the Caddoan tribes, who were on their way to New Mexico to wage war against the Apaches. In 1772, the main village of the Keechi was east of the Trinity, not far distant from Palestine. This village contained about 80 warriors, and was equal in size to that of the Ioni. The Keechi Indians were somewhat more nomadic than other members of the Caddoan tribe. During the 40's and early 50's they were often found in Palo Pinto County and elsewhere along the Brazos and Big Wichita, the Canadian and Red Rivers.

The Keechi, like their kindred brothers, the Ioni, Caddo, Anadarko, etc., were placed on the Lower Reservation when it opened in 1855. This reservation was in the southeastern part of Young County. In 1859 they were moved to Oklahoma.

**172. Kickapoo.** - The name Kickapoo, signifies that the tribe moved about. In later years they were ever true to their name and true to their traditions. These Indians first appear in the realm of history about 1667. At that time they were living in the state of Wisconsin. According to the evidences and their language, we are led to believe this tribe is a division of the Sauk and Fox.

In 1712, they entered into a conspiracy with the Foxes, to burn the forts of Detroit. In 1765 the Illinois confederacy to which this tribe belonged was destroyed and the Kickapoos moved farther south and fixed their headquarters for a time at Peoria. Other divisions of the tribe drifted to the Wabash and to other neighboring streams. During the early part of the nineteenth century, they were engaged in war against the United States. Many of the Kickapoos fought in the Black Hawk War of 1832. In 1837 they joined hands with the United States to fight the Seminoles of Florida.

In 1809 the Kickapoos ceded to the United States their claim to lands along the Wabash and other streams, and in 1819 ceded all their claims to the central portion of Illinois. Many of the

Kickapoos afterwards moved to Missouri and Kansas. In 1852 a large number of Kickapoos passed through Texas going to Old Mexico, where they became known as the Mexican Kickapoo. Another division passed through Texas in 1865. The Dove Creek Fight was fought with this particular tribe. Shortly afterwards this division also moved into Old Mexico and for a number of years proved a constant source of annoyance to the border settlements of Texas and adjoining states. Efforts were made to induce the Kickapoos to return, but such efforts were unsuccessful until 1873 when a number were brought back and settled in the Indian Territory. But a great portion remained in northern Mexico and were settled on a reservation given them by the Mexican Government.

The Kickapoos often professed friendliness to the frontiersman. But regardless of their friendly attitude, the Kickapoos occasionally committed sundry depredations on the isolated settlements.

**173. Kiowa.** - This tribe once roamed as far north as the upper Yellowstone and Missouri, but in later years lived on the upper Arkansas, Canadian, Red, Brazos, and Colorado Rivers. The Kiowa tribe was mentioned by the Spanish as early as 1732. When they moved southward these Indians formed an alliance with the Crows, with whom they have since continued on friendly terms. The Cheyenne and Arapaho, continued to push them farther southward, until 1840, when they established a permanent peace with these respective tribes. In 1805 Lewis and Clark reported the Kiowas to be living on the North Platte.

According to Kiowa traditions, when they first reached the Arkansas River, they were opposed by the Comanches, who claimed all the country to the south. But afterwards peace was declared and they formed an alliance among themselves. Subsequently they carried on a continuous Indian warfare against the frontier settlements of Texas, New, and Old Mexico. When the Comanches and Kiowas depredated on the Texas settlements, almost invariably they left in their path a trail of human blood.

**174. Lipan.** - This tribe was a division of the Apache and roamed along the Rio Grande and in Western Texas, as well as in New, and Old Mexico, and elsewhere. Due to their petitions, the mission of San Saba was established in 1757. In 1761-62 the missions of San Lorenzo and Candelaria were also established primarily for the benefit of the Lipans. These missions, however, were soon abandoned because of the hostility of the Comanche and other northern tribes. The Lipans joined the Spanish in their war against these hostile Indians, and as a consequence, their number was greatly reduced in the border wars that followed. Finally they withdrew to Coahuila, Mexico, where they took up their abode in the Santa Rosa Mountains, and confederated with the Kickapoos and other

refugees from the United States. They later returned, however, and were placed upon reservations in charge of the Federal Government. In 1805 it was reported they were able to produce one hundred and fifty fariors. In 1905 it was reported their population including men, women and children, totaled approximately thirty-five souls.

**175. Shawnee.** - Remnants of this tribe, like the Cherokee, Delawares and others, found their way to the fertile valleys of Texas streams. At first they located along the Sabine, but were forced to abandon this location about 1839. In 1855, a portion of this tribe located on the Lower Indian Reservation opened in the present Young County.

**176. Tawakoni.** - The Tawakonis belonged to the Caddoan tribe and were closely associated with the Wichita group. During the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, their home was on the middle Brazos and Trinity Rivers.

In 1753, and several times thereafter, the Tawakoni were reported to have been plotting with the Ioni to kill all the Spaniards of Eastern Texas. After the founding of the San Saba Mission for the Lipans and others, the hostility of the Tawakoni was increased, and in 1758 they joined the Comanches when they stormed the Mission. In 1760 Father Talaharia of Nacogdoches, made a treaty of peace with the Tawakoni and Waco tribes. This treaty, however, was soon broken. During the next two years Talaharia made them other visits and they in turn promised to enter a mission. The establishment of a mission for their benefit was often discussed but never materialized. In 1770 De Mazieres, an expert Indian agent and trader, made a treaty of peace with the Tawakoni and other tribes in the name of the governors of Louisiana and Texas. In 1778-79 De Mezieres made two additional visits to the Tawakoni villages and in 1796 these Indians sent representatives to the City of Mexico to ask for a mission. Although the matter was seriously considered their request was not granted. In 1820 they again became hostile, but in 1821 Governor Martinez perfected a new treaty with this tribe. To the early settlers they always proved more or less troublesome. The Tawakoni were placed on the Lower Reservation in 1855.

**177. Tonkawa.** - This particular tribe was one of the best known and most frequently mentioned of all of the Southwestern Indians. Perhaps that is due to the fact that the Tonkawas were distinctly a Texas tribe and were more closely associated with the early settlements. These Indians were practically always peaceable and professed friendship to the early frontiersmen because the hostile Comanches were their bitter enemies.

We find them mentioned as early as 1691, in the archives and early Spanish records. La Harpe mentions them in 1719, when

he made extensive investigations of the affairs of Texas. Between 1746 and 1749 three missions were planted by the Spanish on the San Gabriel, somewhere in the vicinity of the present town of Georgetown. The Tonkawa, who were at home in Central Texas, were placed under the jurisdiction of these missions. While here, they suffered from a terrible epidemic of small-pox and from raids of the Apache and Comanche Indians. These missions were abandoned in 1756, and Spanish troops, agents, etc., transferred to the Lipan mission on the San Saba, near the present town of Menard. Since the Lipans were the enemies of the Tonkawas, the latter tribe joined hands with the Comanches when they stormed the San Saba mission in 1758. The hostility of the Tonkawas toward the Spanish continued until about 1770, when efforts were made to win their friendship. A permanent peace was established and the Tonkawas were then always peaceable.

In 1778, the tribe was estimated to contain about three hundred warriors. But in 1847 their ranks had been reduced to about 150 warriors. They were placed on the Lower Reservation in 1855, and in 1859 moved to the Washita in Oklahoma. On the night of October 25, 1862, the Tonkawas were camped near the present town of Aandarko, Oklahoma. Because they had long been hated by the Caddo, Shawnee, Delaware, Comanche, and others, their camp was charged in the dark hours of the night and one hundred thirty-seven men, women and children, out of their population of three hundred, were murdered. The survivors finally found their way to Fort Griffin, where they were sheltered by the early Texans.

This once powerful tribe, in 1884 numbered ninety-two, and were again moved to Oklahoma and placed on the Oakland Agency, near Ponca City. In 1908 they numbered only forty-eight, but their early activities will long be remembered on the West Texas frontier.

**178. Waco.** - This was a division of the Tawakoni. They formerly lived at the place now occupied by the present city of Waco, which received its name from this particular tribe of Indians. According to the reports of Stephen F. Austin, in 1824 the main Waco village consisted of thirty-three grass or straw houses, which occupied about forty acres. About one-half mile below was another village of fifteen houses built close together. The Wacos were then cultivating about two hundred acres of corn, inclosed with brush fences. Along about this time they also had a breast works built wound their village.

Geo. B. Erath, in company with other soldiers, in 1837 visited the present site of Waco. He stated at that time everything indicated the Waco Indians had left there only a short time before. Corn stalks were found in the field, and peach trees were growing where the present city of Waco now stands. The remains of their straw houses and camp grounds could still be

plainly seen. Not unlike other Texas tribes, these Indians were moved to Oklahoma, and in 1902 received allotments of land.

**179. Wichita.** - This tribe also originated from the Caddoan stock and for many years lived in Northern Texas and Oklahoma. They formerly ranged from the middle of the Arkansas River in Kansas, southward to the Brazos River in Texas. In this section, they appeared to have been aborigines, and antedated the Comanche, Kiowa, and other tribes. The Big and Little Wichita Rivers, and the Wichita Mountains of Oklahoma, derived their names from this particular tribe.

**180. Other Tribes.** - There were, of course, remnants of other tribes found on the early Western Frontier. About eighty Seminoles were attached to Fort Duncan, near Eagle Pass in 1870. Numerous small tribes were also reported from time to time along the frontier and Mexican border. But as a rule, these tribes were of less importance, and played only a minor part in the early affairs of Western Texas.

Ref: Handbook of Indians North of Mexico, by Hodge; U. S. Ethnology Bulletin No. 70 and data furnished by Dr. J. Walter Fewks of the Smithsonian Institute; reports of various government surveys immediately following the La. Purchase, and outlined in Chapter I, Part I, this edition; Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs and Secretary of War, 1846-60; Texas Almanacs, 1857-60; Thrall's Pictorial History of Texas; North Mexican States and Texas, by H. H. Bancroft; Native Races, by H. H. Bancroft; and the surviving old settlers, whose names appear under the various Indian depredations.

## **PART V. INDIANS OF WESTERN TEXAS**

### **CHAPTER III. INDIAN ACTIVITIES AND ENGAGEMENTS FROM 1829 TO 1840**

**181. Waco and Cherokee Fights.** - Cherokees who were en route to Texas, encamped on Red River during the winter of 1828-29. Shortly after their arrival, Waco warriors on a stealing expedition, during the silent hours of night, slipped in and stampeded the Cherokee horses and drove away a large number. In a council of war the Cherokees decided the Wacos should pay dearly for this dastardly deed. Consequently, during the month of May, 1829, fifty-five well armed Cherokee warriors left their Red River encampment in search of the far away villages of the Wacos, then on the beautiful banks of the Brazos near the present city of Waco. When the village was finally located, scouts were sent out to reconnoiter the Waco camp. Just after the break of day when the invading enemy was quietly stealing along like a cat after its prey, the Cherokees were discovered by a lone Waco, who was slowly collecting the

remaining coals of fire left from the preceding day. This Waco warrior instantly gave the alarm, and his shrill voice echoed for many miles in the still morning air. All Wacos were instantly on their feet. Like demons who had dropped out of the dark clouds of night, the Cherokees stormed the village. Altho, greatly outnumbered, the invading enemy was much better armed, for they had only recently immigrated from Tennessee. The Wacos were soon forced to retreat to their own fortified sink holes, which afforded ample protection. The enemy held a council of war, and decided to storm these breast-works, fire their guns and then with tomahawks fight the battle to a bloody finish. About this time, however, the Cherokees were charged by the thundering Tehuacanos coming from the breaks on the opposite side of the Brazos. The Tehuacanos captured a twelve year old boy, the only son of his father. This boy was brutally murdered, and his scalp placed on the end of a lance, which was used by the Tehuacanos to defy the Cherokees. The angered father of the boy, stripped himself of all apparel and without a word, seized a knife in one hand and a tomahawk in the other, without heeding the protests of his companions, charged onward and said, "I shall die with my brave boy, by slaying the wild men who have plucked the last rose from my bosom." He rushed forward and before he fell successfully slayed a number of the Tehuacanos.

Since the Cherokees had already scalped fifty-five Wacos and lost only two men and a boy, they decided to retreat and in due time reached their encampment on Red River.

**182. Cherokee-Tehuacano Fight.** - The Cherokees were not contented to allow the Tehuacano go unpunished for the part they played in the previous engagement. Guided by an Indian trapper, who was familiar with the country, the Cherokee stormed one of the principal camps of the Tehuacano in the early part of the summer of 1830. During the first part of the charge, the Indians from the Red River used the surrounding trees for protection and as a rest for their deadly arms. The local Indians were soon forced to retreat into rudely fortified structures, made by piling up stones and covered with poles and hides. The Cherokees charged forward, but were soon repulsed. The Cherokees then decided to carry an abundance of dead grass and fire the enemy's village. Shortly afterwards the enemy's camp was on fire, and the Tehuacano almost annihilated by the evading Cherokees. Several Tehuacano Indian women and children were made prisoners.

**183. James Bowie and Others Fight on the San Saba.** - November 2, 1831, James and R. P. Bowie, David Buchanan, Robert Armstrong, Jesse Wallace, Matthew Doyle, C. D. Helm, James Coryell, for whom Coryell County was named, and two or three others, under the leadership of James Bowie, left San Antonio in search of a Spanish silver mine, and old Mission San Saba. November 19th following, the party met two Comanches and a Mexican captive, who stated they belonged to Chief

Isaone's band, and were on their way to San Antonio, to return a drove of stolen horses, which they had recovered from the Wacos and Tehuacanos. After being hospitably received, and presented with presents, these Comanche spies returned to their companions on the Llano. The next morning the Mexican captive, again visited Bowie and his men and stated that the above chief was anxious for the whites to know that one hundred and twenty-four Tehuacanos and Wacos, together with forty Caddos, were upon their trail and armed to annihilate the Texans.

The treacherous Comanches also sent word they were doing their utmost to prevent the above tribe from assaulting the expedition, and would gladly escort the Texans back toward San Antonio, if they preferred. Realizing this was perhaps one of the well known intrigues commonly practiced by the Comanches, the Texans pitched their camp at an advantageous place, protected by clusters of live oaks, so often seen in this section of the country. This location was approximately six miles below the ruins of the old San Saba Mission. The next morning the party were making preparations to continue their journey, when they discovered Indians were following their trail. The Texans being greatly outnumbered, sent R. P. and David Buchanan to talk terms of peace with the Indians, but the Indians refused to send a messenger forward to meet them, and said "Howdy do," fired and broke Buchanan's leg. R. P. Bowie in exchange fired his double barrel shot-gun and pistol. He then took Buchanan on his shoulder and started toward the Texans. The yelping and dancing demons, continued to fire; but their shots and arrows failed to bring Bowie down. As a consequence, eight Indians on foot charged with their tomahawks, but the remaining Texans rushed out with their rifles and killed four of the eight Indians. The remaining savages quickly retreated. Shortly afterwards, it was discovered that a hill northeast of the Texans was red with savage warriors, who were under the command of a principal chief. James Bowie cried, "Who is loaded?" "I am," responded C. D. Helm. Bowie directed Helm to fire. He did and not only broke the chiefs leg but killed his horse. Six or eight warriors rushed to his aid and by this time four more Texans were reloaded. They too, were directed to fire, and finished the chiefs career, and wounded several others. Soon another chief appeared on the scene of action. James Bowie took Buchanan's gun and downed this chieftain.

By this time fifteen or twenty Indians, said to be Caddos, concealed in the bank of the creek, back of the Texans, wounded Matthew Doyle, and one other. The Texans were now practically surrounded and were forced to retreat to a better place of concealment. After charging the Texans for about two hours the Indians, who were losing heavily, changed their mode of fighting. The prairie grass was fired and it spread so rapidly it threatened the very existence of the Texans. It seemed that if they stood their ground, they would be destroyed by fire. A

consultation was held. The whites decided to do their utmost to smother the flames with buffalo robes, etc. At the same time, they continued to build up breast-works out of available brush, rock and dirt. Night was now fastly approaching from the East. The Indians made a final assault, mainly for the purpose of recovering their dead and wounded, which lay in all directions. They then withdrew to a distance approximately three hundred yards away, and camped for the night.

During the night, James Bowie and his men could hear the Indians crying over their dead. The next morning the savages retreated to a mountain about one mile away where they buried their dead warriors. Two of the Texans reconnoitered the ground where the Indians spent the night, and forty-eight bloody beds were counted. The Comanche themselves later stated that 82 of their warriors were killed. These figures, however, seem to be too large. The Texans lost one man. Three others, including James Coryell and David Buchanan, were wounded.

**184. Mrs. Hibbans and Her Misfortune.** - During the bleak and bitter month of January, 1836, Mr. and Mrs. Hibbans, Mrs. Hibbans' brother and two small children, were traveling alone to their home on the Guadalupe, when attacked by a band of hostile Comanches. The two men were killed, the wagon plundered, and Mrs. Hibbans baby and three year old boy, captured and carried away on mules. Because of this predicament, the baby cried continuously. An angered Indian knocked the baby from Mrs. Hibbans' arms and bursted its brains against a nearby tree.

Feeling their presence was secure, and were in no danger of being attacked by the Texans, the Indians camped on the Colorado not far distant from the scene of this bloody massacre, which was near the present city of Austin. The Indians, feeling that Mrs. Hibbans would not leave without her boy, made no great effort to restrain her. During the dark hours of a winter night while the Indians slept, she softly tucked a robe about her sleeping child and stole away, leaving him in the bloody hands of the barbarians. Knowing there were settlements below, she followed the Colorado's general course. Once she thought she heard her little boy calling and paused breathlessly, but soon pushed on. Soon her clothes were torn into shreds, and her soft flesh badly lacerated by the thorns of the forest. In a state of exhaustion, she finally reached Capt. Tumlinson's company of Texas rangers, then stationed at Hornsby Station about ten miles below Austin. No one knew who she was but she fell fainting into the ranger's arms. It was some time before she could relate her story.

The thing uppermost in the minds of all, was to rescue the child. By the time the rangers reached the vicinity of the Indians, the clouds of night began to darken their pathway. So the rangers

halted until morning. These Indians were encountered about ten miles northwest of Austin. Noah Smithwick wounded an Indian, who fell from his horse. After he fell this warrior shot at Capt. Tumlinson and only barely missed his mark. Conrad Rohrer snatched the Indians' gun from his hands and burst it over his head. What had become of the little boy? The Indians had again wrapped him up warmly in a buffalo robe and tied him on a mule. One of the rangers, not realizing this was a white child, rush up to the mule, pointed his gun and pulled the trigger, but fortunately the gun refused to fire. He tried again and the second time the gun did not fire. A third time he was determined to shoot Mrs. Hibbans' boy, when he was prevented only by the interference of a companion, who knocked the gun upwards, causing the ball to go whistling through the air. Although grief-stricken as she was, can you imagine the joy of the mother when this three year old child was again placed in her arms?

**185. Josiah Wilbarger and Companions.** - Josiah Wilbarger, one of the Hornsby boys and a third young man in 1833 were out hunting on Walnut Creek, to the east of the present city of Austin. They were charged by a large group of Indians, at a moment when least expected. Wilbarger was wounded, scalped and left apparently dead. The third young man was killed, and young Hornsby, who was riding a splendid horse, made his escape. A rescue party was hastily dispatched to the scene of action, when young Hornsby reached his home. The rescue party was much surprised to find Mr. Wilbarger still alive. He lived for twelve years, but his death was attributed to the wounds received on this occasion.

**186. Taylor Family's Fight Near the Three Forks of Little River.** - In 1835, a few families had found their way into Bell County. Mr. and Mrs. Taylor and their two sons and two daughters, erected a log cabin about three miles southeast of the present city of Belton. This home consisted of two log cabins with a covered passage between.

On the night of November 12, 1835, eleven Indians made a moonlight attack. Mr. and Mrs. Taylor and their two daughters occupied one room, and the two sons the other. The faithful dog which was soon killed gave the first alarm. Shortly afterwards, one of the demons of the forest, who was able to speak English, attempted to force open the door, and at the same time demanded tobacco, the surrender of the family and a statement of the number of men in the house at the time. Mr. Taylor replied there were ten men present, and Mrs. Taylor answered: "No tobacco, no surrender." The Indians defied these statements as false, and shortly afterwards Mr. Taylor punched him in the stomach with a board. The Indian then retreated, and Mrs. Taylor hastily instructed the boys to join them in their part of the house. The door which was opened to let them in was then fastened, and braced with a table. The smallest boy, twelve years of age, was mounted on this structure and instructed to shoot through the space over the door when the

first Indian appeared. Since bullets were short, the girls began to mold more. Mr. and Mrs. Taylor and their older son stationed themselves near the cracks in the walls, ready to shoot when the occasion demanded. Shortly afterward, a second warrior assulted the door, and the twelve year old boy shot him down. An Indian warrior rushed in to drag his wounded comrade away, but Mr. Taylor shot this Indian down also. The fate of these two Indian warriors rendered the remaining assailants more cautious. So they decided to resort to a new form of tactics in their efforts to destroy these peaceful pioneers. The vacated room was now fired and the savage demons feeling they had accomplished their goal as the flames began to leap into the still night air, screamed with delight. A large amount of bear meat was hanging under the passage between the two rooms, and as this began to cook, the hot grease poured on the naked hides of the savages below, one of whom was not yet dead. Mrs. Taylor having no sympathy for the savage, cried out, "Howl you yellow brutes, your meat is not fit for hogs, but we will roast you for the wolves." The fire was now threatening the room occupied by Mr. and Mrs. Taylor and their children. To run out in the yard meant certain death. To remain it appeared they would be destroyed by fire. While Mr. Taylor was perplexed in deciding on the next move, Mrs. Taylor climbed on a table and where arrows and bullets were flying fast, pushed down sufficient boards on the passage way to enable her to extinguish the flames, rapidly approaching their part of the building. She used a large quantity of milk and a small barrel of homemade vinegar to put out the fire. Several bullets and arrows passed through her clothes, but her flesh remained untouched. And during these exciting moments, Mr. Taylor and his sons were seriously fighting the Indians, and successfully wounded one or more. About this time, an Indian was discovered in a chimney corner attempting to fire the remaining part of the house, but when Mrs. Taylor filled his eyes with a shovel full of live coals, this Indian hastily retreated. It was afterwards learned the coals destroyed his sight. Two Indians now lay dead and three others painfully wounded, so the remaining savages decided it was high time to retreat.

**187. Frontier Protection.** - After Texas declared her independence in 1836, one of the first official acts of the Congress of the Republic of Texas was to raise a battalion for frontier protection. From this time forward, up until the cessation of Indian hostilities in the state, the Texas statutes contained numerous acts providing for frontier protection. From time to time, new acts were passed and new frontier military organizations raised. These forces played a prominent part in the early history of the frontier, and were under the leadership of such men as Edward Burleson, John C. Hays, Gen. Rusk, Gen. Tarrant, Col. Fitzhugh, Major Geo. B. Erath, Ben McCulloch, H. E. McCulloch, John S. (Rip) Ford, Col. R. B. (Buck) Berry, Gen. John R. Baylor, Col. J. M. Norris, Col. James McCord, and many others whose names from time to time will be mentioned in the present work. After Texas was annexed to the Union these state

forces augmented the Federal troops stationed from the Red River to the Rio Grande and from Brownsville to El Paso.

**188. The Stone House Fight.** - During the summer of 1837, Capt. Eastland, who was in command of Coleman's Fort, led an expedition up the Colorado as far as the mouth of Pecan Bayou, and on out to the source of this stream. When this point was reached, Captain Eastland gave orders for his men to return to the fort. But it seems that eighteen or twenty of the rangers refused to obey his orders and desired to advance farther. These eighteen men were under the immediate command of Lieut. Vansen. They took a northern or northeastern course and soon reached what was then known as the Stone Houses, but were in reality only rock mounds. From these we get the name, "The Stone House Fight." And near here was an Indian encampment.

The exact location of these mounds is not known but they were near the villages of the Caddos, Wacos, and Keechi Indians, and were evidently somewhere in the vicinity of the present counties of Eastland, Palo Pinto, Stephens, or Young. A party of Delawares, who were friendly with the whites, were stopping with these Indians at that time and visited the Lieutenant and his men in their camp. Felix McCluskey, about this time, saw a lone Indian warrior coming towards the rangers' camp. Since all Indians were Indians to him, and peaceable and hostile Indians appeared the same, without using discretion, he started toward the savage. The Delawares tried to stop him but their efforts were in vain, and realizing what was about to happen, left the camp of the whitemen and went back to the Indians. McCluskey killed and scalped the warrior and was severally chastised by his companions. But it seems that it did him little good for he exhibited a small piece of tobacco taken from the body of his victim and recklessly swore that he would kill any Indian for that amount of tobacco, if reports be true.

Soon a hundred warriors appeared on the scene and demanded the man that did this deed. The whites, of course, refused to part with their companion and entrenched themselves in a nearby ravine where they were successful for a time in staying out of reach of the Indians, who had them surrounded on all sides. An effort had been made by the Texans to reach terms of peace, and a Mr. Nicholson, who understood the Indian language, climbed up in a tree for the purpose of communicating with the Caddos and other natives, but the Indians were determined to fight. Finally the gass was fired and this forced the Texans to flee. Indians were on all sides excepting one which was occupied by a band of Delawares, who took no part in the conflict, because of their peaceful relations with the whites. Their presence, however, deceived the Texans, who thought they too were warriors. So the whites decided to

fight their way through the Indian's line. Of the eighteen, Joseph Cooper, Alexander Bostick, Wm. P. Wills, and a Dr. Sanders had already been killed. As the whites advanced through the Indians line, approximately six more were shot down, making ten killed and three of the remaining eight were wounded. It was reported that sixty Indian warriors were slain. But the number of Indians reported killed seemed to be somewhat overestimated.

Captain William Eastland was later one of the Mier prisoners in Old Mexico, and was shot because he drew a black bean. It was from him Eastland County derived its name.

**189. William A. (Big Foot) Wallace in The Wilds of Palo Pinto County.** - October 24, 1837, Big Foot Wallace took his gun and hunting equipment, left his camp alone and ascended to the summit of a nearby hill in territory that afterwards became Palo Pinto County. From here Wallace descended the hill and after going through a nearby path was hemmed in a small valley, where he found an excellent variety of pecans. Wallace stated these were the finest nuts he had yet seen. When he had gathered two or three handfuls, and while resting against a tree to enjoy the nuts, Wallace was surprised to see a band of twelve or fifteen Indians riding rapidly in his direction. His only hope of escape was to conceal himself in the nearby underbrush or steal away into an adjacent canyon.

Big Foot Wallace started off in a long trot, and after going for a considerable distance, could see the Indians still trailing him, but he successfully reached the nearby canyon, and tried to conceal himself in the crags and rocks. Big Foot Wallace, however, soon saw he would be overtaken, for the Indians were fastly following his trail. So this veteran of the Southwest hid behind a large rock. In a moment or two a lone Indian was seen traveling along his trail in a "Dog trot." The famous old frontiersman, who was then in his younger days, gave a low whistle, which caused the Indian to halt. At that moment Wallace shot him down, and the Indian fell dead in his tracks. Wallace reloaded his gun as soon as possible and then pushed on. He had gone only about half a mile, when again he struck another canyon coming in at right angles to the one he had been previously following. Up this he wound his way for he thought he was being pursued by the remaining Indians. Soon dark overtook him and when he discovered he could go no farther because of his exhaustion, he soon fell fast asleep among the cliffs and crags. He did not awake until the sun was well on its way during the succeeding day.

Wallace was now lost approximately two hundred miles from the nearest settlement. Noon came and he was tired and hungry. But in this hour of his bewilderment a large buck deer came down to the creek for a drink and stopped within twenty yards of where Wallace was sitting. He felled him in his tracks,

and Wallace said, "This was the fattest venison I ever saw." It was not long until he had him roasting. After satisfying his hunger, he cut off as much of the venison as could be safely carried. It was now night, and the veteran old frontiersman began to look around for shelter for it was drizzling rain and unpleasantly cold. Nearby he found a shallow cave in a cliff, where he made a bed of grass. Wallace said, "I was lucky in finding this cave, for that night there fell a torrent of rain, which would have made camping out of doors extremely unpleasant."

On and on he journeyed. Near a splendid spring Wallace found the remains of old Indian camps, and here he picked up a Mexican gourd, which was used as a canteen for water. In this vicinity the lonely wanderer found a companion, a lost dog which Wallace called Comanche.

After eating his breakfast Big Foot Wallace filled his gourd canteen with water and with gun in hand, and other utilities hanging on his side, he continued his journey with his companionable dog at his heels. But the following day Big Foot sprained his ankle, so he was compelled to lay up in a cave for several days. When Wallace awoke on the morning of November 21st, a dozen Indians were coming rapidly toward him. He resolved to sell his life as dearly as possible and kill as many of the Comanches as he could. But one of the Indians asked Wallace in Spanish, who he was and what he was doing. Wallace, who could also speak a little Spanish, told them he was an American lost from his party and on his way back to the settlements. The Indian then made signs for Wallace to put down his arms, which he did, for he saw that resistance would bring him nothing and perhaps if he would be friendly, the Indians would possibly spare his life. Wallace's hands were then bound with buckskin, and he was carried to their camp.

After much pow-wowing, several warriors came into the lodge or tepee where Wallace was confined, and one of them proceeded to black his face and hands. Much excitement prevailed among the Indians, and Wallace was led out to a nearby point where preparations were being made to burn him at stake. The dry wood was piled thickly around his feet, and the principal chief made a thrilling speech to his warriors. Afterwards a big dance started and the Indians were singing their wild songs. Wallace said:

"I thought sure enough my time had come, and I tried to summon up courage enough to meet my fate like a man. I don't know how far I would have succeeded in this, for just at this moment an old squaw, who had taken a liking to me in the lodge, rushed through the crowd of painted warriors and began to throw the wood from around me. One of the warriors seized this squaw and put her out of the rank by main force; but she adjusted herself to the cause, and made them a regular speech, during which every now and then turned and pointed at me. I

was satisfied that for some cause, I knew not what, the old squaw was doing her best to save me from burning at the stake, and it is hardly necessary to say that I wished her success from the bottom of my heart. The crowd listened to her in silence for sometime when some began as I thought to applaud her and others cry out against her; but it seems that she at last brought over the majority to her side where after a great deal of jabbering a number of women rushed in between the warriors and untied me from the stake, and handed me over to the old squaw for safe keeping, and somehow I had understood but little of all that had been said on either side for or against me, I knew that I was saved, at least for the time. I felt as much relieved in my mind as when I drew the white bean at the City of Saltillo. I learned afterwards that the old squaw had lost one of her sons in a fight with some of the neighboring tribes, and that she had set up a claim to me according to Indian customs, in such cases as a substitute."

Afterwards Wallace was treated hospitably. He said:

"I might lengthen out my story a good deal, by telling of all that occurred to me while I was with these Indians - I went with them upon their buffalo hunts, and once upon a foray with them into Mexico, where I acquired a considerable reputation as a promising young warrior in a hard fight we had there with the Mexican Rancheoes, etc."

The chiefs that captured Wallace and intended to put him to death also took a liking to the white companion and offered his sister to Wallace for a wife.

When Wallace had been with the Indians for about three months, he became dispondent and discontented and longed to return to his own people, and this dispondency was noticed by the adopted mother and her son, Black Wolf. Black Wolf who was Wallace's brother by adoption, said to Wallace: "My brother, what is it that makes you so unhappy and discontented, for it seems for some time you have had something on your mind. Has anyone mistreated my brother." "No, said Wallace, "everyone has treated me well, but I tell you frankly my brother, I am anxious to see my own people."

Black Wolf replied:

"I shall be very sorry if you leave us, and so will my old mother, but it is not strange that you should wish to see your own people again and you must go. I will help you all that I can to reach the settlements in safety. "But be careful," Black Wolf said, "not to say a word about this to anybody for if you should attempt to escape and be recaptured nobody could save your life and I should be put to death for having aided you."

After secretly making necessary preparations, Wallace led by

Black Foot left the camp on a pretense of hunting bear. But before he left, the old Indian mother presented her adopted son with a necklace made of grizzly bear claws and porcupine quills, and also presented him with a large copper ring to wear in his nose. As they advanced, the faithful dog, Comanche, followed along behind.

On the morning of the second day, Black Wolf traced upon the ground a map of the route Wallace had to follow, and indicated accurately all of the ranges of hills and water courses by which he had to pass. The Indian brother then bade Wallace good-bye shouldered his gun and took his course back towards the home of the savage mother. In due time Wallace safely reached the settlements, and his faithful dog Comanche remained his loyal companion until he died of old age.

This initial experience of Wallace helped to produce one of the most famous frontiersmen known to the early history of Texas.

**190. Andrews' Men Fight With Indians Near the Present City of Austin.** - During the quiet hours of evening in the early spring of 1837, the presence of Indians and their camp was discovered not far distant from the present city of Austin. Captain Andrews and his men were soon on their way in search of the savages. Lieut. Wren, Noah Smithwick, and Joe Weeks formed the advance guard; and in due time before the break of day they discovered a large caballado of horses, which became somewhat frightened at the Texans, who were fearful of arousing the Indians. Silence prevailed among the men and soon all was quiet. So the searching party was compelled to feel its way in the dark. Cautiously they advanced for fear they might stumble over a sleeping Indian. Finally some oblong objects were discernable and when one of the savages reversed his sleeping posture there was no longer any doubt in the minds of the Texans concerning whether or not they had located the enemy. Subsequently, they quietly retreated; and it was agreed that the rangers divide into two divisions; one of which was in charge of Lieutenant Wren and assigned to a ravine while the other was instructed to charge in front. But Lieutenant Wren and his men missed their mark. At the break of day a lone Indian raised up and began to sing his morning song, lieutenant Wren then retraced his steps and his companions made sufficient noise to alarm the Indians. Joe Weeks fired and felled an Indian. Others fired, but the Indians were successful in reaching a ravine. They now began to shoot back at the Texans, and early in the engagement, Phillip Martin was instantly killed. Shortly afterwards, the engagement was over, and when the Texans went back to scalp the wounded Indian, they were surprised to find him gone. The Texans were successful, however, in recovering a large number of stolen horses.

**191. Karnes Fight on the Arroyo Seco.** - Henry W. Karnes, in command of twenty-one fearless frontiersmen, camped on

the Seco, August 10, 1838, was suddenly attacked by two hundred mounted Comanches. Although outnumbered about ten to one, the Texans stood well their ground, and fired in alternate platoons of about seven men at a time. In this way, some of the men were firing while others were reloading. The savages fought fiercely until twenty of their number lay dead on the ground and others wounded. Colonel Karnes was also severely wounded and a number of the rangers' horses were shot down. Colonel Karnes afterwards died from the effect of his wounds.

**192. Colonel O'Neal and Party Fight with the Comanches at Fort Graham.** - October 25, 1838, about eleven years before the establishment of the above fort, Colonel O'Neal and his companions engaged a party of Comanches in a bloody battle. As usual, the Indians were heavy losers and after a large number of their warriors had been killed, they fled from the scene of action. The Texans took charge of their camp, which was known as Jose Maria village.

**193. Captain Journey's Men Fight Indians Near Fort Worth.** - The Indians stole several head of horses from Capt. Journey's men. Preparations were made the following day to reprimand the redmen. The soldiers started for the Indian village, which was not far from old Birdville and near the present city of Fort Worth. When the camp was reconnoitered the rangers charged forward. Several Indians were killed. The whites suffered the loss of one horse and one man wounded. Some of the stolen horses were recovered.

**194. Captain Lynch Killed in Lampasas County.** - In 1838 a party of surveyors and others under the leadership of Captain Lynch pitched their camp between Salt and Cherokee Creeks in the present county of Lampasas. Twenty-five men composed the party. Work progressed rapidly and game was found in abundance. But just at the critical hour when the men were breaking camp to return to their homes, they were unexpectedly surprised by forty Indians.

Since most of the surveying party were experienced frontiersmen and veteran Indian fighters, order was soon restored and the Indians forced to retreat. The white men immediately reloaded their rifles, preparatory for another attack, which soon came. But again the Indians were repulsed. Again and again they charged, and discharged their shower of arrows, but after fighting for nearly an hour and losing several of their warriors, the Comanches craved no more fighting and made a final retreat. The Texans also suffered a severe loss. Captain Lynch, during the thickest of fighting, was instantly killed on the battle ground.

**195. Texas Indian Treaties of the Late 30's.** - From the beginning of settlements in Texas, even up to the present time,

the public has been divided over the Indian question. Many there were who preferred being philanthropic and wanted to gain the good will of the Indian by peaceable negotiations. And there were those who thought the only means by which the Indian could be subdued, was by physical force. Needless to say, it seems that ninety per cent of the frontiersmen themselves, belonged to the latter class. In the work of George W. Bonnell, styled the "Topographical Description of Texas" and printed in 1840, he said: "In 1829-30 four treaties were made by Comanches and violated in one week's time which gives rise to the expression 'as faithless as a Comanche treaty'." He also stated the Indians made hundreds of treaties with the Government and disregarded all of them and invariably continued to depredate as if no treaty had been made.

In the works of W. P. Johnston, concerning the life of Albert Sidney Johnston, we find the following quotation:

"The Comanches had always been the scourge of neighboring people. General Johnston solicitous for the alliance of Indian tribes, had made several treaties with them. Under his instructions General Johnston had in February, 1838, arranged the preliminaries of a treaty with them, and in May they came into the town of Houston under the protection of a white flag at the president's invitation. The Indians made a treaty and received their presents. Nevertheless, as they retired, still under the white flag, they killed two men in sight of town, and while passing Gonzales, carried off Bird Lockhart's daughter, a girl fourteen years of age."

Shortly afterwards, they killed a party of six men near San Antonio. One writer states that the two men, above mentioned, killed on the outskirts of Houston, were murdered with the new guns given the Comanches as presents.

But permit us to state at this time that it is not the policy of the author to arouse prejudice against the redmen, who once roamed over the western plains; nor is it necessarily his intention to assume a partisan position. But it is his policy to endeavor to present facts as he found them, and to relate the history of West Texas as accurately as possible, after giving it several years of exhaustive study.

**196. Captain John Harvey.** - Captain John Harvey, who often said, "When you least expect Indians, there they are," accompanied by ten men, made a surveying expedition into the wilds of Burnet County during June of 1839. And a Mr. Burnet was on guard during the night. The snorting of one of the pack mules first aroused his suspicion but no Indians could be seen in the darkness. All remained quiet until just before day when Captain Harvey attempted to awake the remaining members of his party. As he did the surveyors were unexpectedly fired upon by Indians concealed in the nearby bushes. The Texans became

somewhat disorganized and three of the number ran entirely away. Those who remained soon rallied and in a few moments a fierce fight followed. One warrior anxious to steal a fine horse staked nearby, left his place of concealment and was in the act of cutting the rope when three individuals fired and shot him down. The Indians believed a wounded warrior could not go to the Happy Hunting Grounds if he were scalped by the enemy. That being the case, almost invariably they resorted to extreme measures to recover the bodies of their dead and wounded. So on this occasion, several warriors rushed forward to recover the body of the dead warrior. The Indians then retreated and accidentally ran into two of the white men who had run away. This, of course, only augmented their fright and they became completely lost from their companions. Eight days later, however, after wandering among the wilds, the two lost men reached Austin. The third man successfully found his way back to his companions.

**197. The Besiege of Colonel John H. Moore and His Men on the San Saba.** - Fifty-five whites, forty-two Lipans under the leadership of their chief, Colonel Castro, and twelve Tonahua Indians, making a total of one hundred and nine under the command of Col. John H. Moore, started in quest of the Comanches' camp on the San Saba. This, like other similar expeditions, was in retaliation for the depredations the Indians were continually committing on the settlements. Having reached their goal, Colonel Moore and his men on the 12th of February, 1839, before the dawn of day, were in battle formation ready for the light. When the signal was given, every man was ready. It was agreed that Castro and a part of the Indians stampede the horses, grazing in the valley, so they could be successfully driven away. The remaining force of seventy-nine men rushed on the Indian encampment and fired at each Indian that came in sight. Many of them were killed, and for a time the Indians were demoralized. But in a few minutes, their bows were strung for battle. Andrew Lockhart was along, in quest of his captive daughter. He cried out, "Matilda, if you are here rush unto me, your father calls." The daughter was there, and she recognized her father's distressing voice, but was prevented by the squaws from rejoining him. The contest was bitterly fought, but Colonel Moore soon realized he had only struck the lower end of the encampment, for in a short while the warriors from above, came charging in almost countless numbers. The whites were soon forced to retreat, and when they reached the place where they had left their horses, they had already been mounted and ridden away by the Comanches, who won a signal victory. Capt. Wm. Eastland was painfully wounded; he recovered, however, but was later shot by the Mexicans when he drew a black bean. S. B. Fields, James Manor, Felix Taylor, and others were also wounded.

**198. Wild Ride of Indians Across Weber's Prairie and the Battle of Brushy.** - When Colonel Moore and his men returned

from their expedition against the savages on the San Saba, the hostile Comanches made a wild ride across Weber's Prairie where they left a trail of human blood. Early in the morning, Mrs. Coleman, wife of Captain Coleman, a famous Indian fighter, and her several children were near the house in a small field or garden. It was the 18th day of February, 1839. A large group of yelling Indians, when least expected, rushed upon them. James Coleman, and a Mr. Rodgers, escaped into the brushy bottom of the Colorado. Mrs. Coleman and her remaining family rushed toward their little log cabin, the type of home now almost classical in Texas history. The attack was so sudden and the shock so severe, the Coleman family became demoralized. Mrs. Coleman rushed toward her residence, but before she reached there, in exemplification of mother love, stopped to see about her children, and the unfortunate consequence was she was pierced through the throat with an arrow, and died shortly afterwards. Before she died she said, "Oh, children, I am killed." And then turning to her oldest son, she said: "Albert, my son, I am dying, get the guns and defend your sisters." Altho only fifteen years of age, this he did, and heroically he stopped the hostile Indians.

Three or four of these blood-thirsty creatures faced the discharge of his gun; but in a short time, he too, received a fatal wound, and died shortly afterwards, with his head on a pillow in the lap of his oldest sister. His last words were, "Sisters, I can't do any more for you, farewell." The two daughters of Mrs. Coleman, now left to their fate, took refuge under the bed. In accordance with instructions, they kept up a conversation to make the Indians believe there were others in the house, and evidently it worked well, for the savages refused to enter the small pioneer residence.

Shortly afterwards they began to withdraw, but robbed the home of Dr. J. W. Robertson, who was away at the time. As was their usual custom, they ripped open his feather bed, and flooded the country with feathers. Seven of the doctor's negroes were made captives and carried away.

In a short time twenty-five men under the leadership of Jacob Burleson, were soon in search of the enemy. They were joined by Captain James Rodgers in charge of twenty-seven additional men, making a total of fifty-two. The trail was followed with the utmost dispatch, and the next day about 10 o'clock in the morning, the enemy was discovered about three miles north of Brushy. It seems that both Indians and whites made a rapid rush for a thicket, situated between the opposing parties. But due to the lack of military organization and discipline, most of the rangers became confused and fell back. This, of course, made it much more difficult for the others, who attempted to cover in a measure, the retreating Texans and citizens. The Indians realizing the whites were somewhat demoralized, charged on, and brave Captain Burleson who was one of those

attempting to recover the retreating rangers, sustained a wound that cost his life. Had all of the Texans held their ground, no doubt the Comanches would have been defeated.

**199. Trouble with the Cherokees.** - When General Mirabeau B. Lamar was elected President, he resolved the Cherokees should be removed from the heart of East Texas to their kindred tribes farther east, because they were not a native race and because they only recently immigrated to the state, and because of the unfriendliness of a portion of their tribe toward the Texans.

Vice-President David E. Burnet; General Albert Sidney Johnston, secretary of war; Hugh McLeod, adjutant general, and General Thomas J. Rusk were appointed as commissioners by President Lamar to treaty with these Indians, and arrange for their peaceable movement. Col. Edward Burleson then in command of the regular army of the Republic, was ordered to march from Austin with two companies of regulars, and the volunteer companies of Capt. James Owensby and Mark B. Lewis, as a safeguard of any hostility that might be demonstrated by the Cherokees. Negotiations were conducted for three days, and a verbal agreement reached with the Indians.

It was agreed the Indians were to leave the country for a valuable consideration, and that on the second day following, they were to sign a treaty to that effect. But during the day set for the signing of the treaty, the Cherokees did not appear. Scouts were sent to their camp, ten miles away, to ascertain the reason of their absence. When they reconnoitered the Indians' ground it was discovered that the Cherokees, instead of arranging for the signing of the treaty as agreed, were preparing to surprise the whites. But up to that time, some of the reinforcements of the Cherokees had not arrived. Colonel Burleson was ordered to advance with his men, and late in the afternoon of July 16, 1839, the Texans encountered these Indians and fought a severe engagement. When night arrived, the Cherokees had been pushed back into heavy timber, and the Texans encamped for the night.

It soon became apparent that the Cherokees were making every effort to fall back and join the reinforcements. The two separated factions of the Indians were crowned with success on the morning of the succeeding day.

General Rusk realizing the seriousness of the situation, assumed command. The Indians were completely routed by the Texans, and the Cherokees lost their principal chief.

After their defeat, the Indians disappeared in the jungles of the Neches. Some of them went back to their tribe from which they came. Another division under the leadership of John Bowles, son of the deceased chief, and Chief Egg, en route to Mexico,

were charged by Colonel Burleson near the mouth of the San Saba River, December 25, 1839. The two chiefs and several warriors were killed and twenty-seven women and children captured. These captives were afterwards sent to the Cherokee tribes. The present town of Cherokee in the southeastern part of San Saba County, no doubt, derived its name from this particular engagement.

**200. Indians Assault Mr. Webster's Party.** - During the year 1839, a Mr. Webster started from Austin to settle a league of land on the North Gabriel. His party was composed of fourteen men, his own family and a negro woman. When he reached the property he wished to settle he was surprised to find a large body of Comanches camped nearby. When the Indians were discovered a barricade was made with the wagons and preparations made for a fight. The next morning, true to expectations, these early trail blazers were bitterly assaulted by the Comanches and a very bloody battle fought. According to reports all of the men of Mr. Webster's party were killed. Mrs. Webster, her two children and the negro woman were taken prisoners, and carried into captivity.

Ref: - The Ind. Deps. that occurred before 1850 were too early for the author to gather the material from surviving old settlers. Consequently the information for such depredations was obtained from the following sources and others mentioned in the 2 subsequent chapters. Indian Depredations in Tex., by J. W. Wilbarger; Ind. Wars and Pioneers of Tex., by J. H. Brown; Evolution of the State, by Noah Smithwick; Pictorial Hist. of Tex., by Thrall; W. A. (Bigfoot) Wallace, by Duvall; Texas, by Wm. Kennedy; Hist. of Tex., by Henderson Yoakum; and other early histories mentioned in the first 2 chapters.

## **PART V INDIANS OF WESTERN TEXAS**

### **CHAPTER IV. ACTIVITIES AND ENGAGEMENTS FROM 1840-1846**

**201. The Council House Fight in San Antonio.** - Following the bitter engagements of 1839, the year of 1840 also experienced a number of bitter conflicts.

January 10, 1840, Col. Henry W. Karnes wrote General Albert Sidney Johnston, then secretary of war, that three Comanche chiefs had been in San Antonio during the previous day expressing a desire for peace; and stated their tribes, eighteen days previously, had held a council and appointed the three Indian chiefs as commissioners to arrange for a permanent peace between the Comanche tribes and white settlers. Colonel Karnes further stated that he told the Comanches a treaty was impossible unless they returned the prisoners and stolen property they held in their possession. To this statement the

Indians replied that it was agreed in the council above mentioned, the various tribes would return their prisoners of war and stolen property.

When the Indians went back to the wilds they promised to return in twenty or thirty days with a larger number of chiefs and warriors, prepared to make the proposed treaty; and that all of the white prisoners in their hands would be returned. But due to their false promises, on former occasions, and their well known treachery and intrigue with Mexico from time immemorial and with the Texans since the arrival of the first colonists, neither President Lamar nor Albert Sidney Johnston, the secretary of war of the Republic of Texas, nor Col. Karnes, who had been a prisoner among them, had any faith in the Comanches, and fully realized that when such council was held, it would be both advisable and necessary for the Texans to be prepared for any emergency.

January 30th General Johnston instructed Lieut. Col. Wm. Fisher, commander of the first regiment of infantry, to proceed with three companies to San Antonio, and assume a position that would enable the Texans to detain the Comanche chiefs and warriors if they came in without prisoners, which was really expected. And in event the Comanches failed to return the white captives, General Johnston further ordered that some of the Indians so detained be dispatched as messengers to their respective tribes and ordered that the remaining chiefs and warriors be held as prisoners until the Indians had returned all white prisoners. Further, that the usual custom of presenting presents, which had been previously followed would be abolished. General Johnston recalled two years previously the occasion when President Houston presented the Comanches with new guns as presents, after making a treaty in the City of Houston, and that these savages killed two of our citizens after they left the city.

President Lamar appointed Col. Hugh McLeod, adjutant general, and Col. Wm. G. Cooke, quartermaster general, as commissioners to treaty with the Comanches, should they come into San Antonio.

March 19th following, two Comanche runners entered San Antonio and announced the arrival of a party of sixty-five men, women, and children, and only one prisoner, Matilda Lockhart, a girl about fifteen years of age. This brilliant and brave little girl informed the commissioners that she had seen several other white prisoners among the Indians a few days before, and that she was brought in to see if they could sell her for a high price. If the Comanches succeeded, they intended to bring in the others from time to time, and demand a high reward for them.

The chiefs and warriors were called together in the council room and asked, "Where are the prisoners you promised to bring?"

Nuke-War-Rah, the chief, who had previously promised to return the prisoners, replied, "We have brought in the only one we have, and the others are with other tribes." One company of soldiers was now brought into the council room, and another stationed outside. The Indians were told that no treaty would be made until they returned the prisoners as promised. The Comanches stated they realized they had violated all their previous treaties and promises. But true to their custom and intrigue, these Indians again demanded that new confidence be placed in them, and again promised to return the prisoners.

Whereupon, the chiefs and captains twelve in number, were told they were held as prisoners of war, and would be kept as hostages for the safety of the white captives then in their hands, and that some of their young men would be permitted to carry the news to the respective tribes, and as soon as the white prisoners were returned the chiefs would be liberated. They were also told that the soldiers were their guards, and came forward to discharge their duty. The chiefs arose and followed.

About this time one of the wild demons of the plains, sprang for the back door, and when the sentinel presented his musket, he was stabbed by the Indian chief. A mad rush was then made for the entrance. Capt. Howard collared one of the chiefs and he also received a severe stab in his side. This Indian was then killed by a sentinel. The remaining Indians now drew their knives and bows, and evidently resolved to fight to the last. Col. Fisher ordered the soldiers to fire if they did not voluntarily surrender. But the Indians rushed on, and in a short battle, the twelve chiefs and captains in the council house lay dead upon the floor. Several of the Texans, however, were also wounded. Capt. Howard's company was formed in front of the outside door to prevent the retreat of the remaining Indians. Capt. Rudd's company was stationed at the rear of the council house and was attacked in the yard by the warriors, who fought like tigers. A small group of Indians escaped across the river, but they were purged by Col. Wells, with a few mounted men, and all of these Indians were killed. The only enemy that escaped was a renegade Mexican who slipped away unobserved. A single warrior concealed himself in a stone house and refused each and every solicitation by squaws and others, who promised him security, if he would surrender. When night arrived, a ball of twine soaked in turpentine and ignited, was dropped through the smoke escape on his head. This brought him from his place of concealment and he dashed through the door only to be riddled with bullets. During the fighting Judge Hood of San Antonio, Judge Thompson of Houston, Mr. Pafer, Lieut. W. M. Bannington, Private Kamiski, Mr. Whitney, and a Mexican were killed and several others wounded. There were also thirty Indian chiefs and warriors and three women and two children killed, making a total of thirty-five. Twenty-seven women and children and twenty Indian men, making a total of twenty-nine, were made prisoners. As requested by the Indians, one squaw was

released, mounted, provisioned and allowed to return to her people, to carry the news that the Indians would be released when they returned the white captives. Shortly afterwards, a party of Comanches displayed a white flag on a hill overlooking the city, and seemed to be afraid to venture farther inland. As advised, they brought in several white children, which were exchanged for the Indian prisoners.

**202. Kinney's Fort.** - One morning in August, 1840, Mr. Joseph Weeks, who was staying at Kinney's Fort, on Brushy Creek, about eighteen miles from Austin, heard the hooting of owls and howling of wolves. Every old frontiersman well knew that this was one of the common tactics of the Indians to decoy the citizens from their homes, and was also used by the savages as a signal code to communicate with each other without arousing suspicion. Consequently, these sounds immediately alarmed the citizens stationed in this fort, and preparations were made for an attack. Shortly afterwards the Indians made a charge and soon the fighting was intense. A courier was dispatched from the post to the nearest settlement for reinforcements. But when a company of sixty men arrived they discovered the Indians were gone and had carried away their dead and wounded. The whites stood their ground against these great odds and only one man was injured during the conflict.

**203. Claiborne Orsburn.** - During the year of 1840, a small party of men went out on Brushy Creek, not a great distance from Austin, to kill buffalo. Claiborne Orsburn was detailed to bring up the pack animals, while the older men killed the game. Two or more Indians had been trailing young Orsburn for some time and waiting for an opportunity to assault him. When this opportune time arrived the Indians shot his horse and left Claiborne Orsburn for dead. He was scalped but soon regained consciousness and could hear the Indians apparently disputing over the possession of his scalp. Young Orsburn however, had sufficient presence of mind to pretend that he was really dead. After the Indians were gone and Alex Hamilton was galloping to his relief, Orsburn in a half dazed condition, sprang to his feet. The first words he asked Hamilton were, "They have cut my head. Have they scalped me?"

His companion bound up his scalp with wet handkerchiefs and took him to the home of Noah Smithwick where Mrs. Smithwick dressed his wound. Claiborne Orsburn recovered, raised a large family, and lived until March 6, 1899.

**204. Comanches Charge Village of Victoria and Linnville.**  
- Enraged because of the Council House fight in San Antonio, the Comanche warriors rendezvoused somewhere far out beyond the settlements, for the purpose of making a major raid. August 5, 1840, four or five hundred Indian warriors passed through the present county of Coryell. Two days later they stormed the village of Victoria, and, after murdering some of

the peaceful citizens and burning a part of the town, taking away merchandise, and committing other depredations, the Indians then proceeded toward Linnville. This place was reached early in the morning of August 8th. Stores were robbed of their merchandise and two or three thousand head of horses and mules driven away. Linnville, like Victoria, was pillaged and burned. The news of this major foray soon spread through the several settlements. Edward Burleson, Ben and H. E. McCulloch, Owen N. Cordell, Thomas Ward, W. J. Wallace, Monroe Hardeman, and others who had seen no little amount of service with the ranging companies in charge of their respective commands, and under the leadership of Gen. Felix Houston, met the Indians, August 18th. The wild men had much luggage which had been captured on this expedition. Considerable skirmishing had occurred before the main and final attack, but this was made by small numbers, mainly for the purpose of holding and checking the Indians, twenty-seven of whom were killed and others wounded. During the invasion twenty-one whites were also killed, but some of the citizens were killed during the fighting.

This was one of the largest Comanche raids ever made upon the settlements of Texas; and in many respects, resembled the Big Young County Raid, of 1864. But since it occurred in territory not covered by the present work, the story is only briefly related to enable the reader to keep informed of the movement of both Indians and whites at that time, and during the years to follow.

**205. Colonel Moore's Decisive Victory on the Colorado.** – Not satisfied with the defeat he received on the San Saba in January, 1839, and exceedingly anxious to retaliate the Comanches for their daring expeditions into the settlements during the preceding August, when both Victoria and Linnville were sacked and partly burned. Col. John H. Moore, immediately following the preceding raid, sent out circulars and called for volunteers, to again penetrate into the savage wilds of West Texas. Ninety able bodied men immediately responded to the call, and the Texans were also joined by twelve Lipans under the leadership of Col. Castro, their chief and able commander. The expedition left Austin near the first of October, 1840, and followed the valley of the Colorado without encountering the enemy until they reached a point, perhaps somewhere within the region of the present city of Ballinger. When the Lipan scouts returned and reported the Comanches were camped in a horse-shoe bend of the Colorado, about fifteen miles farther on, Col. Moore and his men traveled by night until they halted about a mile from the village of the Comanches. The cold clear, crisp October skies of the upper Colorado brought shivering chills to the citizens, while the savages slept comfortably in their beds of buffalo robes. Lieut. Owen with thirty men, was stationed on a cliff across the river from the Indian village to check the retreat of savages in that direction. Col. Moore and his main command slowly pushed on toward the Indian camp, and when they were

within two or three hundred yards of the village, the rumbling of their horses aroused the Indian guard. The alarm was given and the quietness of the upper Colorado suddenly changed to a thundering storm. Fighting like Trojans, the Texans rushed into their midst and engaged the Indians in a hand-to-hand battle; and so deadly were their blows, the Indians soon became demoralized and fled. As expected a large number rushed across the Colorado only to fall in the hands of Lieut. Owen, and one by one they were shot down as they scaled the bluff on the opposite side of the river. During the onslaught, in so far as the Texans were able to ascertain, only two warriors escaped on the only two horses at the village. All others were killed, excepting those that surrendered.

Many of the Indian women fought like men. One hundred and thirty Indians were left dead on the field; thirty-four squaws and children and several hundred head of horses were captured and brought back to the settlements. They also captured much camp equipage and no little amount of goods and merchandise the Indians carried away when they plundered Victoria and Linnville during the preceding August.

This decisive victory of Col. Moore and his men, had a strong tendency to check the future raids of the Comanches into the Texas settlements.

**206. Fate of Dick Sparks' Surveying Party.** - Dick Sparks, in company with several companions, left San Augustine, November 18, 1840, for the territory between the headwaters of the Brazos and Red Rivers. For fifteen days they traveled without seeing an Indian sign. This, of course, made them feel secure. In due time they reached their destination and had been surveying for about three days when a large herd of buffalo came driving towards the expedition. Since the animals seemed somewhat frightened, Good Eye Roberts, a veteran old Indian fighter, told Captain Sparks and his men that the critical time had come to be on alert for Indians. But it seems the captain became impatient with the old frontiersman and informed him that he was a coward and should wait until night to waste his words. To this statement, Roberts replied, "Very well, Captain, you will talk too, after a while and with good reason." After camp was reached, and a very fine supper of venison and wild honey was enjoyed by the hungry surveyors, and after exchanging the usual campfire stories, the surveyors retired to bed for a much-needed rest. They had hardly fallen asleep, however, when they were awakened by the hideous screams of yelling savages. Robert Wires and Kellogg alone made their escape from camp, and they were pursued by the hostile savages of the plains. For a considerable distance they ran. Wires told Kellogg he had recently been suffering with chills and did not have sufficient strength to go farther. He also told Kellogg to save himself if he could; but shortly afterwards they reached a cliff, and, altho Kellogg dashed on, Wires made a

quick turn to the right and hid himself in the rocks. Shortly afterwards, four Comanches came breaking through the night in search of the two citizens. In the mad rush they hurriedly passed the place where Wires was hiding, but did not go a great distance before they stopped. The Indians then turned and came to the identical spot where Wires was hidden. At one time the assailants almost stepped on him, but fortunately they never found his whereabouts. Battered and bruised by a long bitter journey, the two surveyors finally found their way back to San Augustine. Kellogg arrived one day and Wires the next - only to relate the sad story of their companions.

**207. The Strategic Victory of Major Howard and His Men Near the Present City of Georgetown.** - During the month of December, 1840, after the rangers had followed an Indian trail for several miles, they discovered the savages without being seen. Since the Indians almost always rode splendid horses without saddles and were splendid horsemen themselves, they were often exceedingly hard to catch. So Major Howard resorted to a little strategy of the kind and character often practiced on the whites. He secreted his men in a thick grove of timber and he, himself alone, rode along in the direction of the Indians, as if he were unaware of their presence. This caused them to believe he would be an easy prey and they dashed after Major Howard like mad demons. The able officer trusted his faithful steed and made a successful ride back to the rangers, concealed in the timber. The Indians came rushing after him and when they were within a few yards of the white men, the discharge of their guns tumbled several Comanches from their steeds. Only one brave warrior now remained and he was desperately attempting to recover the dead body of his brother. In this he succeeded and was almost on his horse, when he too, received a mortal wound, and fell with the body of his brother to the ground. The remaining Indians made a rapid retreat in the direction from which they came. When the smoke of the battle had cleared away seven warriors lay dead on the ground and Major Howard and his men were uninjured.

**208. Fight of Ben McCulloch's Men on The Llano.** - During the spring of 1841, the Indians made a night raid in the vicinity of Gonzales, and drove away a number of horses. The venerable Ben McCulloch hastily called for volunteers. Sixteen men of the neighborhood immediately offered their services, and were soon following the Indian trail. Realizing however, the difficulty of overtaking the retreating savages, Ben McCulloch and his men decided to wait until they were unsuspecting of being followed by the citizens, and then proceed.

When the opportune time arrived the Indian trail was pursued in a northwesterly direction. The rangers realized when they reached the mouth of the Llano they were in close proximity to the Indians and true to expectation, their camp was soon discovered. The Texans, at an unexpected moment, stormed

their encampment. When the short conflict was over five warriors lay dead on the ground and half of the remainder were wounded. Only about eight of the original twenty-two escaped unharmed. Ben McCulloch and his men also captured the Indians' horses, saddles, equipage, blankets, robes, and other articles.

**209. Famous Battle of Bandera Pass.** - Different accounts do not agree concerning the date of this engagement. According to one account, it was fought in the spring of 1841, while others place the date in 1843. Nevertheless, the story will be related at this time.

Soon after the big raid of the Comanches on Victoria and Linnville, President Houston felt a stronger need for frontier protection. So he appointed Capt. John C. Hays to recruit a company of rangers. Many noted Indian fighters saw service in Capt. John Hays' company. Among the number were: Big Foot Wallace, Ben Highsmith, Creed Taylor, Sam Walker, Ed Gillespie, P. H. Bell, Kit Ackland, Sam Luckey, James Dunn, Tom Galberth, Geo. Neill, Frank Chevallier, and others. When the famous fight of the Bandera Pass was fought in about 1843, some of Capt. Hays' best men at the time, were prisoners in Old Mexico. But on this particular occasion, Sam Walker, Ed Gillespie, P. H. Bell, Ben McCulloch, Kit Ackland, Sam Luckey, James Dunn, Tom Galbreth, Geo. Neill, Frank Chevallier, and others, numbered among the fighting forces. Hays and his men arrived at the Pass about 11 o'clock in the morning and were unexpectedly charged by a large band of Comanches. At first his men became somewhat demoralized by the sudden shock, but the voice of the brave Captain cried out, "Steady there, boys, dismount and tie those horses. We can whip them. No doubt about that." The Colt five and six-hooters had just been invented and Captain Hays and his men were fortunate to acquire fifty or sixty of these weapons, which were apparently unknown to the savages. Although many times outnumbered, the Texans began discharging their rifles and new pistols, and every shot seemed to strike an Indian. Sam Luckey was soon wounded and as he fell, Ben Highsmith caught him and laid him down easy on the ground. He immediately called for water which was tendered by Highsmith out of the latter's canteen. The Comanche chief during the thickest of the fighting, charged and wounded Sergeant Kit Ackland. Ackland then wounded the chief with his new pistol, and immediately following the two clinched and went to the ground. Both of the men were large and fought a terrific combat with their knives. Over and over they rolled, but finally the ranger was successful in the duel. Covered with blood and dirt, he then arose from the ground where lay the chief literally cut to pieces. This engagement of Captain Hays and his men was one of the most bitter and bloody battles ever fought in the West and continued until the Indians finally ceased fighting and retreated to the upper end of the Pass, leaving the rangers in charge of the battleground. Five rangers, however,

lay dead on the field, and others wounded. A large number of horses were also killed and their bleaching bones could still be seen in this famous old Pass for many years afterwards. After the Indians had retreated, Capt. Hays and his men withdrew to the south entrance of the mountains, and the night was spent burying the dead and treating the wounded. During the same time, the Comanches buried their chief near the other end of the exit through the mountains.

**210. Expedition of General E. H. Tarrant and Others, When John B. Denton was Killed.** - Since the Indians had also been doing no little amount of depredating in the northeastern part of Texas, the citizens of that section organized for an expedition into the Indian territory. General Edward H. Tarrant, for whom Tarrant County was named, W. C. Young, for whom Young County was named, Colonel Wm. Cooke, for whom Cooke County was named, John B. Denton, for whom Denton County was named, James Bourland, and about eighty men, met on Choctaw Bayou, the 4th of May, 1841, and made preparations to advance. General E. H. Tarrant was unofficially in command. The command halted at the Barracks built by Colonel Wm. Cooke and his men during the preceding year, in the vicinity of the present city of Denison.

They then made the start for the territory now embraced in the present counties of Tarrant, Denton, Wise, Parker and Palo Pinto. Allen Coffee accompanied the expedition for several miles, but soon turned back to his trading house on Red River, not far distant from Denison. About seven others also went back with him. So the company now only contained about seventy-two. It was believed the Indians were camped on the West Fork of the Trinity, somewhere in the vicinity of the present town of Bridgeport in Wise County. But when the Party reached there the Indians were gone, and the village for sometime had been abandoned. The party then traveled south and westward for approximately two days towards the Brazos, and evidently reached somewhere in the vicinity of the Palo Pinto and Parker County line. From here they took a northeasterly course, and on the second day again struck the Trinity. The expedition followed the north bank of this stream until they camped for the night. The next day they followed a trail to an Indian encampment on Village Creek, which was a short distance above where that stream is crossed by the Texas & Pacific Railway today between Fort Worth and Dallas. The first Indian observed was a woman who was washing a copper kettle under the bank of the creek. The scout and spy who saw her and realized she failed to see him, slipped back to the main command and the news was conveyed to General Tarrant. Scouts continued to watch the Indian and shortly afterwards a second squaw came on the scene. When General Tarrant and his men came up, they were discovered by the squaws, who gave a loud scream and rushed into the bed of the creek. The Texans charged, for they supposed the warriors were there. A man named Alsey Fuller

killed one of the squaws without realizing she was a woman. The other woman and her child were captured.

At this point the men scattered into several different parties in quest of the unseen enemy thought to be near by. Bourland with about twenty men, including John B. Denton, crossed the Creek and found a road leading along its valley. About one mile farther on they came upon a large Indian camp. Bourland with about half of his men went to the right and the others to the left in order to check the retreat of the Indians.

Cochran and Elbert Early attempted to fire on a retreating warrior, but the guns of each of them snapped. The Indian then fired at Early but missed his mark. The entire command was badly scattered and soon became somewhat confused. The Indian village was already deserted. General Tarrant ordered his men to fall back to a second village. About forty men were now present and were waiting for the others, when Denton asked and obtained Tarrant's consent to take ten men and go down the creek, promising to avoid an ambush of the Indians. Bourland likewise took ten men and started in the opposite direction, and about a half a mile below, they came together. Bourland and Calvin Sullivan then crossed a boggy branch and captured some horses, one of which wore a bell; the others went farther down the branch toward a corn field and found a road leading into the bottom.

When the timber was struck, to fulfill his promise of avoiding an ambush, Denton halted. Henry Stout then rode in front and said, "If you are afraid to go in there, I am not." Denton replied that if necessary, he would follow him into the infernal regions, and said, "Move on." About three hundred yards farther they descended the creek bank and had only followed that a short way when the three foremost men were fired upon. Stout was in front, but partly protected by small trees. He received a wound in his left arm then wheeled to the right and was again painfully wounded. Denton, immediately behind, was shot at the same time and as he wheeled to the right, showed signs of weakness. When John B. Denton reached the top of the bank, he fell dead with a wound in one arm, in his shoulder, and through his right breast. The others were now out of reach of the savages, who fled after the firing of a single volley. Griffin, however, was dazed by a ball that struck him on his cheek. The remaining men, somewhat demoralized, retreated back to where they met Captain Bourland, who with twenty-four men, went back and carried away the body of Denton. Due to mismanagement, the whites had failed to draw the Indians into battle; but eighty horses, a considerable number of copper kettles, many buffalo robes, and other articles were carried away. The Texans then retraced their steps to where they camped during the preceding night, and arrived about the midnight hour. The next morning the command buried the body of John B. Denton under the bank of a ravine, not far from where old Birdville later came into

existence. The troopers then turned toward home and on their way the captured squaw escaped. The child, however, remained in the hands of Captain Tarrant and was restored during the Big Peace Council, two years later.

**211. Thomas Staff.** - During the spring of 1842, Thomas Staff left his home, near Austin, which was then on the extreme frontier, and went to the house of a neighbor for a cow. Before he left, however, he told his wife he was going to take his young son along, but his wife replied, "No, don't wake him, he is asleep." When Mr. Staff returned and was near the house, he was charged by Indians, who had secreted themselves by the roadside.

**212. Baker and Souls.** - During the summer of 1842, these two gentlemen were ambushed by Indians while riding the range near Manchaca Springs. Baker seems to have fallen as a result of the first fire, but Souls made a considerable fight, and perhaps killed or wounded several of his assailants. Finally, however, he also was killed. Baker was merely scalped, but the Indians completely obliterated the body of Souls; and the enraged demons cut his heart from his bosom.

**213. Gideon White.** - Mr. White moved to Travis County in about 1840, and settled at Seider's Springs, near the city of Austin, where he lived up until the time of his death, which occurred in 1842. He was frequently admonished about traveling afoot through the forest, but it seems he did not heed the admonitions. Early one morning in the spring, Mr. White was searching for his stock and was attacked by Indians only a short distance from his house. For a considerable distance he ran, but realizing the Indians were rapidly gaining on him, he took protection behind a tree in a thicket, where he was soon killed.

**214. James Boyce.** - In 1842, James Boyce started from his home one morning for the city of Austin, then a mere frontier village. He had only gone about three miles, and was near Walnut Creek, when attacked by a band of Indians, who had secreted themselves near the road like a serpent waiting for his prey. Boyce was riding a mule and when he saw the Indians, he made a break for his home. After running about two miles he was killed and scalped.

**215. Attempts of the Texans to Establish a Permanent Peace.** - January 14, 1843, the Congress of the Republic of Texas, feeling the opportune time had arrived to establish a permanent peace, took necessary steps in that direction. The Indians had been annihilated and the intense fighting carried into their own camps, causing them at all hours to feel insecure for they had no way of knowing just when they might be stormed by a company of citizens. An act was passed which provided for the establishment of a Bureau of Indian Affairs, to be attached to the War Department. And the president was also

authorized to appoint agents, not to exceed four, to aid in the preservation of peace among the border tribes. Thirdly, the president was instructed to provide for the establishment of trading posts, at the following places. No. One: On or near the south fork of the Trinity, somewhere between the lower and upper cross timbers. No. Two: At or near the Comanche Peak. No. Three: At or near the old San Saba Fort or Mission, etc. It was also required that all traders be required to use the greatest discretion to maintain a permanent peace, and that each and all of them be licensed. No intoxicating liquors were to be sold to the Indians. No person or persons were allowed without the permission of the President to pass the line of trading houses, and then only for friendly purposes. Nor was any person or persons allowed to reside among the Indians or remain within their limits without the expressed permission of the President. It was also provided that commissioners should negotiate with the Indians for a permanent peace.

General Sam Houston was president of the Republic at the time, and he always favored a peace policy toward the Indians when same was possible. But even at this early date, public opinion was greatly divided on this question. Joseph Eldridge, a man of education, experience, courage and high moral character, was appointed by the president, as Commissioner of Indian Affairs. At the same time, a delegation from several of the smaller tribes called on the president and requested a "talk." This delegation included Jim Shaw, John Conner, and Jim Second-Eye, three semi-civilized Delawares, who were employed to arrange with the several Indian tribes for a treaty of peace. Mr. Eldridge appointed his friend, H. T. Bee and Thomas Torrey, already an Indian agent, as his assistants. The expedition equipped itself with a caravan of pack mules loaded with necessary provisions and presents for the Indians, and left Washington, the early capital on the Brazos, in March 1843. They also had with them two Comanche children, who had been taken as captives. The party passed Fort Milam, near the present city of Marlin, which at that time, was the outward edge of the settlements. Mr. Eldridge was instructed to visit the head-chiefs of the Comanches and as many of the wild tribes as possible, to induce them to attend a council to be held August 10, 1843, at Bird's Fort on the north side of the main or West Fork of the Trinity. This, of course, was near old Birdville.

At some point above the Three Forks of the Trinity, probably in Wise or Jack County, the expedition halted for a few days, and sent out Delaware messengers to invite the several tribes to a conference. Delegates from eleven small tribes responded. These included the Wacos, Anadarkos, Caddoes, Keechis, Tehuacanos, Delawares, and other small tribes. Capt. Eldridge appeared in full inform and Mr. Bee was appointed secretary. The council was opened by Delaware interpreters, who made short addresses, and the entire day was consumed by a series of interpreted dialogues between the wild tribes and the Texas

commissioners. Capt. Eldridge requested an opportunity to speak, and when he requested an audience, he was told by the interpreters that it was not yet time for him to talk. This privilege was granted Mr. Eldridge during the preceding day, and he had the interpreters to state to the wild tribes the following: "Tell them I am the mouth piece of the President and speak his words." Two of the Delawares interpreted the sentence, but Jim Shaw refused saying it was a lie, but the result was satisfactory, and the tribes present all agreed to attend the council at Bird's Fort.

After the commission had returned to the tent of Captain Eldridge, Mr. Eldridge demanded of Jim Shaw the meaning of his conduct. Shaw replied, that the three Delawares considered themselves the Commissioners, and Eldridge was only along to write down the proceedings. The Commission, which was in writing and attested by seals, was produced and read to the Delawares. After the reading of the instrument, Jim Shaw said, "I beg your pardon, Joe, but I have been misled. I thought the Delawares were to make the treaty. We will go not farther, but will go to our own country on the Missouri River; we will start tomorrow and we will return to Texas." The Commission became alarmed at this unexpected change of affairs, and appealed to the trio of the Delawares to stay and act as guides, as the President had expected of them. During this dark hour, Captain Eldridge sent for Jose Maria, the noted chief of the Anadarkos. The situation was explained to him, and he was asked to lead the Commission back to the settlement. This greatly pleased the old warrior, who promised to discharge his duty promptly and with the greatest of reliance. The next morning rapid preparations were being made by Jose Maria and his one hundred warriors to escort the Commission back to the settlement, when Jim Shaw sent word that he had changed his mind, and was ready to proceed with the journey. An interview followed and a satisfactory agreement was reached between the commission and the Delawares. The march was again resumed, but the Delawares did not give their full cooperation, and continued to show some degree of stubbornness.

The members of the peace commission then continued their march toward the village of the Wacos, and when they arrived, they were warmly greeted. The Delaware guides, at this time, said that it would be necessary to wait fifteen days to enable runners to be sent to the various Comanche tribes for the purpose of locating their villages. Shaw, Conner, and Second Eye, stated that during the intervening time, they would take their furs and hides to Warren's Trading House on the Red River, to be deposited or sold, and would return within the allotted time.

While the runners were in search of the Comanches, and the guides had gone to Warren's Trading House, the wife of Acoquash, the Caddo chief, became violently ill. The chief

requested his white guest to exert his skill as a medicine man. Mr. Bee responded to the request, to the very best of his skill and ability, and fortunately, the sick wife immediately recovered and regained her health. But little did they realize, as we shall later see, their fate and security was dependent upon her sickness.

The Indian runners returned in due time and stated that they had received encouraging reports from the Comanches. The Delaware guides, however, were absent twenty-eight days.

The commission next proceeded to the Wichita village, then near the present site of Fort Sill. Here they were kindly received and the Wichitas promised to attend the peace council to be held at Bird's Fort. The commission then turned to the West, toward the wilds of the great plains in quest of the Comanches. They were accompanied by Acoquash and his faithful wife, only recently saved by Mr. Bee. It was now July, provisions were exhausted, and the party dependent upon wild meat and fruits. Fresh plums were soon found and Mr. Bee, in his report, stated these plums were the best he ever saw. Here an Indian runner soon arrived and told the commission the great head-chief of the Comanches was only a few miles distant. During the afternoon of the same day, a delegation of the Comanches visited Mr. Eldridge and invited the commission to visit the Indian village. The commission accepted the invitation and were escorted by five hundred Comanche warriors to the savage encampment. When they arrived, Pahayuca was away, but the white guests were received by his seven wives, which caused the very best tent to be vacated for the commission. It was one week later before the chief returned. During the intervening time the village of the Comanches was twice moved, and the commissioners were much astonished with the regularity with which this work was performed. Each time the new location was laid off in lots, blocks and streets, with as much precision as a village is surveyed today. Mr. Bee accompanied the Indian warriors on a buffalo hunt, and was exceedingly surprised at the skill of the native plainsmen.

Pahayuca, the principal chief, arrived August 9, 1843, and occupied a tent adjoining Mr. Eldridge and his associates. In due time, the commission was presented to the chief and courteously received, but no clew was obtained concerning his peaceful or hostile attitude toward their presence. The next morning, the chief and about one hundred of his men held a council at sunrise. The Delaware guides attended the meeting, but the whites were not present. About ten o'clock in the morning, a committee from the council visited the whites and informed them they had understood the whites were bad men. The commission was now informed by a negro that the council was deliberating on their lives and were talking savagely. The whites sent for the Delawares, who denied the statement. But about one-half hour later, the commission was informed that

the Comanches were preparing to take their lives. Again they summoned the Delaware guides and demanded of Jim Shaw that he tell the truth, for they were not children. Shaw now admitted that he was endeavoring to hide their fate as long as possible, and for that reason had told them a lie; that all the chiefs, authorized to speak, had done so, and all were against them; that the Delaware guides had done all they could for the whites, and had told the Indians they would rather die themselves than to have the whites killed, for they had promised the white father they would take care of them and see they suffered no harm; that Acoquash, chief of the Caddos, had been equally true to the commission. The commission was told that Pahayuca was yet to speak, and that although he should decide in their favor, it was doubtful whether or not his influence was sufficient to save their lives. Fearing their fate was forever doomed, the three white commissioners alone quietly waited the announcement of the chiefs of the plains. General Bee said, "Our dear old friend, Acoquash, next came into our tent where we three lone white men were sitting. Betraying the most intense feeling, shaking all over, and great tears rolling from his eyes, as best he could, told us that we would soon be put to death. Poor old Indian; my heart yearns for him yet, after the lapse of so many years."

The Waco chief returned to the council room and from twelve o'clock to four p.m., not a word was spoken, for all sat in silence awaiting the voice of Pahayuca. At four o'clock, he spoke. Then others spoke. And occasionally the white commissioners heard the voices of the Delawares. Bee said to Eldridge: "See the setting sun, old fellow; it is the last we shall ever see on earth." Footsteps they now heard, and the trio sprang to their feet, for they intended to sell their lives as dearly as possible. But wait a minute! It is Acoquash, our friend whom they thought had come to relate their final fate. His uncontrollable joy, however, told a different story. Just at this minute, the Delawares rushed into their tent and cried, "Saved! Saved!" General Bee said, "Oh God, can I ever forget that moment." And that night, to insure their safe keeping, Pahayuca placed one hundred warriors around their tent.

When morning arrived, the white men waited for the council, and Captain Eldridge invited the Indians to join in the great council to be held at Bird's Fort. He also related, since this council was to have been held August 11, and since that time had already arrived, the date would be postponed.

Captain Eldridge now tendered to the chief little Maria, a beautiful Indian child, neatly dressed, and knew no words but English. When she was being given back to the Indians, the little girl seemed horrified and hung to the clothes of Captain Eldridge, and desperately clung to his body, for she had forgotten her native race, and was anxious to stay with the white men. But poor little Maria, with heart overflowing with sorrow, was

rapidly rushed from the scene by a huge warrior of the wild tribes of the plains.

The commissioners were now told that the majority had ruled no delegates would be sent to the council at Bird's Fort. Shortly afterwards, these brave and bold messengers of peace started on their five hundred mile overland journey toward Bird's Fort. In due time they arrived at the principal village of the Wichitas, near Fort Sill, and informed them of their unavoidable delay. The day set for the council had already passed, so Captain Eldridge sent Thomas Torrey, Jim Shaw, John Conner and Indian attaches, to inform other tribes of the postponement, and that the meeting would be held as soon thereafter as circumstances would afford. Captain Eldridge, himself, in company with Bee, a Delaware hunter, and Jim Second Eye, decided to proceed directly to Bird's Fort.

The second day about three p.m., Captain Eldridge and his associates halted at a pretty grove on a beautiful stream to cook their last food, a little bit of green Wichita corn. Jim Second Eye became enraged because of the scarcity of food, and after seizing the hunter's gun, galloped boldly away, leaving the remaining members of the commission only with pistols. When the commission and associates reached the cross-timbers, a Delaware climbed in a high tree for the purpose of obtaining his bearings; and located a party of men on their way to Fort Arbuckle. From them, the commissioners obtained relief and then pushed on to Warren's Trading House, on Red River. When they reached this point, the first man they saw was Jim Second Eye, who had deserted them during their critical hour. He came rushing forward, and shouted. "How are you, Joe, how are you? I am glad to see you." The courteous Captain Eldridge, for one time, lost his temper, and placed no restraint on the words used to denounce this unfaithful guide. He then turned and apologized to Mr. Warren, for language used in his presence, but explained it was fully justified under the circumstances.

After resting two days, Captain Eldridge and Bee, an assistants, left for Bird's Fort, where they arrived about the middle of September, and were warmly welcomed by Commissioners George W. Terrell, and General E. H. Tarrant. They were told that President Houston had remained at the fort for approximately a month, but feeling that the commissioners were forever lost, chagrined and despondent, he returned to the seat of government.

Anxious to report to the president, because of their delay, Captain Eldridge and his men soon moved on toward the settlements. On their way Mr. Bee took sick with chills and fever and being unable to go farther, stopped at Fort Milam. Eldridge, however, hurried on, and when he reached President Houston, he was greatly surprised to find that the president acted so distant and indifferent, and showed no appreciation of

Eldridge's dangerous experiences and hardships. Why? Jim Shaw and John Conner, who had accompanied Thomas Torrey when the commission parted at the village of the Wichita, near the present Fort Sill, had already arrived and greatly misrepresented to the president the true facts pertaining to the expedition. This Indian treachery and intrigue caused Captain Eldridge to be dismissed from office, and another appointed as Commissioner of Indian Affairs. Very soon, however, President Houston became convinced of his error and had Captain Eldridge appointed Clerk of the State Department, under Anson Jones; and immediately after annexation, secured his appointment as paymaster in the United States Navy, a position he held until his death, in 1881. President Houston often lamented over the above mistake in after years, but the friendship of him and Captain Eldridge thereafter remained loyal and true, and Captain Eldridge later named a son in honor of President Houston.

Thomas Torrey died from the effects of the extreme exposures and hardships encountered on this trip, which was one of the most daring exploits ever undertaken in the Great West.

**216. The Treaty of 1843.** - From time to time the delegations of the various tribes arrived at Bird's Fort as a result of the expedition outlined in the preceding section. Leonard Williams and Luis Sanchez, both of Nacogdoches, assisted in collecting the tribes; and Roastingyear, Lewis, and McCulloch, and Delaware chiefs were also present and rendered a valuable service during the conference.

The Commissioners, General E. H. Tarrant and George W. Terrell, were clothed with full authority to consummate the treaty. Representatives of the Tehuacanos, Keechis, Wacos, Caddos, Anadarkos, Ionis, Delawares, and forty isolated Cherokees and others, were present, and pledged their respective tribes to the treaty. An agreement was reached on the 29th of September, 1843, and the stipulations of the treaty were almost identical with the provisions of the act approved January 14, 1843, and mentioned in the preceding section. The line of trading posts marked the deadline, and was at least partially recognized until 1855, when the reservations of Young and Throckmorton Counties were opened to Indian settlements. This deadline deterred the settlement of West Texas for several years, but when the two reservations, previously mentioned, were set aside in 1854, and opened for settlement in 1855, this line of demarcation was no longer recognized, and immediately the early settlers began to whip their oxen for the West Texas territory.

**217. Captain George M. Donaldson.** - During the spring of 1843, a party of Indians made a raid into the vicinity of Austin, killed two citizens and stole a number of horses. The Indians were pursued by Captain Donaldson and a company of citizens,

and were overtaken when they reached the Leon River. Captain Donaldson ordered his men to charge and he led the war, but his fast horse soon carried the captain beyond his companions, and among the Indians. Captain Donaldson was soon wounded, and when the Captain attempted to mount his horse, because of weakness, the brave leader fell to the ground. The Indians then made a rush toward the Captain with their spears, but the remaining citizens had now begun to arrive, and in time to save the life of their captain. A bloody battle then followed, and the Indians soon retreated to a thicket of brush. Shortly afterwards, however, when they realized their number was rapidly falling before the deadly fire of the citizens, the savages fled.

A litter was then constructed for the wounded captain, who was carried to Austin, about one hundred miles away. The captain recovered from his wounds.

**218. Hotchkiss, Henry Castleberry, and Courtney. -**

During the spring of 1843, the Caddo Indians came down from the Palo Pinto Mountains, along the Brazos and killed Henry Castleberry and Courtney, on Salado Creek. After stopping and stripping them of their clothes and mangling their bodies, they then crossed over to the Colorado River, which they struck about twelve miles below the city of Austin, at a point known as Moore's Prairie. At this point, they stole a large number of horses and were in the act of driving them away when discovered by W. C. Reager, Wm. S. Hotchkiss, Samuel Gilliland, Jos Hornsby, and Puckett, who were unarmed. The Texans, however, dismounted and each cut a heavy mesquite club, using this for self-protection. They again mounted their steeds and attempted to ride between the Indians and stolen horses. In this, they almost succeeded; although the Indians fired at them with a volley of arrows. When the arrows failed to stop the brave citizens, the Indians resorted to a new type of strategy. Six of their number fell on their knees and began to make gruesome and hideous noise with their bow strings. This hideous noise so frightened the citizens' horses, they ran away. The Texans again attempted to go between the Indians and the stolen horses. But again the Indians resorted to their former tactics and obtained similar results. Shortly afterwards, a settler, who was armed, came to their assistance; and just as he raised his gun to fire, the Indians fell flat upon the ground and again began to fiddle on their bow-strings. Like the others, his horse also became frightened and ran away. As a consequence, his gun was of little use. Six additional Indians joined the number, and several settlers also augmented the forces of the Texans. The Caddos now retreated into the timber and in a short time were on their long journey to their home on the upper Brazos. They were pursued, however, by the Texans for about twenty miles, and William Hotchkiss was wounded.

**219. Wade Hampton Rattan and Companions. -** In about 1843, Wade Hampton Rattan and two associates left Bird's Fort

in search of game. When they failed to return, a searching party was sent out, and found where they had been murdered by the Indians. Their bodies were brought back to the fort and given a decent burial.

**220. William Bird, a Daughter, and Cartwright.** - Wm. Bird realized it was dangerous to leave his fort for water, so he decided to dig a well within the fort. When the well had been dug to a depth of about eight feet, it became necessary for Mr. Bird, a daughter, and a man by the name of Cartwright, to make a trip to Callaway's Lake for water. While returning back to the fort, they too, were murdered by Indians.

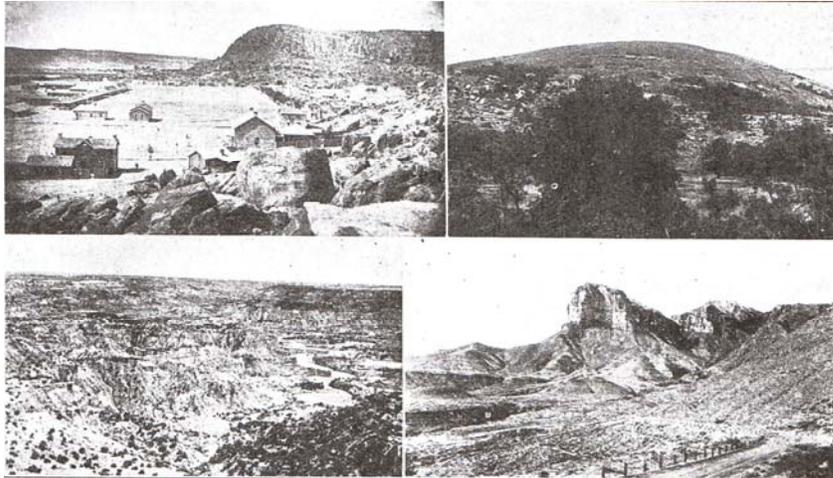
**221. Captain Jack Hays' Fight in the Nueces Canyon.** - About 1844, Kit Ackland, Mike Chevalier, Creed Taylor, Noah Cherry, an Irishman named Paddy, and others, under the leadership of the brave and bold John C. (Jack) Hays, made an expedition up the Nueces River in search of Indians. But no Indians were found, so the rangers started home. After traveling for a considerable distance, someone about noon discovered a bee tree, and the point of entrance of the bees was a considerable distance from the ground. Noah Cherry took a small axe and ascended the tree to get some honey; and his position gave him a splendid perspective of the surrounding country. At a moment when least expected, he sang out, "Jerusalem! Captain, yonder comes a thousand Indians." Since they were coming at a rapid gait, Captain Hays who was sitting on the ground, jumped to his feet and exclaimed, "Come down from there quick! Men, put on your bridles, pick up your ropes. Be ready for them! Be ready for them!" The rangers were armed with two colt five or six-shooters, a rifle and a holster single-shot pistol.

Captain Jack Hays has been credited with having never lost a single Indian battle, although he was almost invariably greatly outnumbered. On this occasion, he had fourteen men, and they were charged by approximately two hundred Comanche warriors. The Indians, thinking that such a small number would be easily routed, came charging and yelling like wild demons. Captain Hays cried out, "Now, boys, don't shoot too quick; let them come closer; hit something when you shoot, and stand your ground. We can whip them, there is no doubt about that." When the citizens fired, the Indians who were at close range, lost several of their number, and many of their horses were also wounded. Indeed, they were surprised that the few whites were still standing their ground, so the remaining Indians divided and were making an effort to strike them from each side. Capt. Jack Hays instantly sprang into his saddle, and shouted, "After them boys; give them no chance to turn on us; crowd them; powder burn them." The Indians fully expected the rangers to assume the defensive, and in a short time, cause them to exhaust their ammunition. Evidently never before had this particular band of Indians encountered rangers using the five shooters.

Such weapons of war with which they had previously come in contact, were single shooters, and this new weapon had only recently been invented. So, when Hays and his men boldly charged into their very midst, the Indians, altho they outnumbered the whites nearly fifteen to one, became completely confused, demoralized, and being unable to rally their forces sought safety in flight. Some of them dropped their bows and shields, and other implements, while trying to dodge the flashing pistols. The Comanches were charged for about three miles, by the rough and ready rangers. In this mad rush for life, some of them prevented the rangers from really powder burning them, only by the force of their lances. Brave Kit Ackland followed the captain's orders closely, in trying to powder burn the Indians and he was lanced on three different occasions.

When the fight was over, and the rangers rode back to their bee tree, the Irishman Paddy, said he saw a wounded Indian go in a certain thicket and that he was going in there after him. Capt. Hays exclaimed, "If there is a wounded Indian in there, you had better let him alone. If you go in where he is, he will kill you before you see him." But he persisted in going, and was pierced through the heart by the wounded warrior. Three or four of his companions cautiously advanced to his aid. When the first movement of the wounded Indian became discernable, each of them fired and upon examination, it was found that none of them had missed their mark. Poor Paddy, however, lay dead with an arrow through his heart, and he was buried nearby.

Many years afterwards, the Comanche chief who led his warriors on this occasion, asked a friendly Delaware who was it that made so brave a fight on this occasion. The Delaware replied, that it was Captain Jack Hays, and his Texas Rangers. The chief shook his head and said that he never wanted to fight him again, for his men had a shot for every finger on his hand, and that the Comanches lost half of their number. He also stated that the warriors died for a hundred miles back towards Devil's River.



Upper left: Fort Davis about 1883. See Sec. 65. (Courtesy Fort Davis Chamber of Commerce). Upper right Enchanted Rock, between Llano and Fredericksburg. See Secs. 112 and 223. (Courtesy Llano Chamber of Commerce). Lower left: Palo Duro Canyon, an Indian rendezvous during the pioneer days. Near here Chas. Goodnight established his ranch in 1876. See page 204. (Picture courtesy, Amarillo Chamber of Commerce). Lower right: El Capitan, about 100 miles east of El Paso, and one of the highest points in Texas. Elevation 9,500 feet. The old Butterfield Route and California Trail passed near this high point.

**222. Captain Jack Hays Fight on the Pedernales.** – About 1844, while scouting in the present Gillispie County, Capt. Jack Hays in charge of a detachment of fourteen men, discovered about fifteen Comanche warriors who showed signs of wanting to fight; but Hays realizing that the Indians, no doubt, were endeavoring to ambush the Texans, led his men around the timber and stationed them on a ridge, separated from the Indians by a narrow valley. The Comanches realizing that their strategic maneuvers had failed to decoy the rangers, about seventy-five in number rode out into the open, and summoned Captain Hays and his men for a fight. The challenge was accepted and the rangers slowly rode down the hill in the Indians' direction. But contrary to expectation instead of charging in front, they followed a ravine and charged the Indians in the rear. This, of course, somewhat demoralized the Indians, who nervously awaited the first appearance of the Texans from the opposite direction. The Indians, however, soon rallied and made a countercharge.

Captain Hays ordered his men to be ready, and they waited until the Indians were almost within throwing distances with their lances, before they fired a single shot. Twenty-one warriors almost immediately fell from their horses, and the Indians fell back in confusion. The rangers in turn charged the retreating savages. Charge after charge was made by both the Indians and rangers; and the fight lasted nearly an hour. The Texans

had almost exhausted their loads in both revolvers and rifles. Capt. Jack Hays asked who was loaded.

Ab Gillespie replied that he was, and Hays told him to dismount and make sure work of the chief, as that would, no doubt, end the fight. Altho the ranger was badly wounded, he tumbled the chief from his horse. The Comanches now retreated and when the smoke of battle had cleared away, thirty dead Indians remained to indicate the accuracy of the Texans' deadly aim.

### **223. Captain Jack Hays' Fight at the Enchanted Rock. -**

On one occasion when Capt. Jack Hays and about twenty members of his company were scouting in the vicinity of the Enchanted Rock, Hays became separated from his companions. At an unexpected moment he was charged by Indians, and as a consequence, retreated to the Enchanted Rock. Hays was pursued by the Indians until he reached the summit of this great wonder of the southwest. Here he entrenched himself in a crevice and intended to sell his life as dearly as possible. He did not fire until it became absolutely necessary, and when he did, an Indian hit the granite. Again and again it became necessary for him to fire, and nearly every time other Indians were desperately wounded or killed. For a time the Indians, who were loosing heavily, fell back, and this gave Captain Hays an opportunity to re-load his firearms. And in this manner for sometime, he made a desperate fight for his life. His comrades were having a fight of their own near the bottom of the Enchanted Rock, but could hear the firing of their Captain and screaming of Indians near the crest of this wonderful structure. As rapidly as possible they fought their way in his direction, and so deadly was their fire, the Indians were soon forced to flee. Those warriors who had surrounded the Captain, now saw the advance of the rangers and immediately retreated to the opposite side of the Enchanted Rock. Consequently, Capt. Jack Hays and his men were soon again together, and another victory was added to the lists of this noble Indian fighter and his men. After the smoke of battle had cleared away, five or six Indians lay around the spot where Hays had fought, and twice the number were found below. Three or four rangers were seriously, but none fatally wounded. The exact date of this fight is not known, but it occurred about 1844 or 1845, and is reported at this particular time.

### **224. The Capture of the Simpson Children. -**

Mrs. Simpson and her children numbered among the first settlers in the vicinity of Austin, and located there about 1842. At that time and for several years following, the capitol was on the extreme frontier. Late in the afternoon of the summer of 1844, two of her children, Emma, a girl of fourteen years of age, and Thomas, a boy, about twelve, were sent out to drive home the milk cows. Shortly afterwards Mrs. Simpson distinctly heard the screams of her children, about four hundred yards west of the center of the village of Austin. She at once realized what had happened, and

heart broken as she was, without hesitation, rushed to the more thickly settled part of the town, to invoke the assistance of the early settlers. A party of men were soon in the saddle and rapidly following the Indian trail. The four Indians that did this dastardly deed were on foot, and moving rapidly towards the timber along the river. Shreds of the girl's dress were soon found, but it was difficult to follow their footsteps. From a nearby hill, however, the Texans saw the Indians enter a ravine. Immediately they charged, but were unable to overtake the fleeing demons. The shadows of night soon aided the Indians and they successfully made their escape.

The saddest moment was yet to arrive, for the rangers were unwilling to return and disclose the sad news to the children's mother. Hour after hour and day after day, she grieved for their return, but no word had ever been heard from them and their whereabouts were totally unknown. But about one year later, Thomas was ransomed by an Indian trader in New Mexico and returned to his mother. And when he returned, for the first time the fate of little Emma became known to the mother. As she was being borne away by the Indians, she fought them on every hand, and offered the bitterest of resistance. Shortly afterwards, the Indians became desperate, and it was not long until little Thomas saw the scalp of his sister dangling from an Indian's belt. The bones of this innocent little girl were later found within a few miles of Austin.

**225. The Manchaca Fight.** - During the spring of 1844, when the Indians made a raid on Hill's Prairie and drove away a large number of horses, they were followed by about sixteen citizens. When the Indians reached Manchaca Springs, they evidently concluded there was no danger of being pursued, so the savages then camped. The next morning shortly after the break of day, they were unexpectedly charged by the Texans. For a time the natives offered resistance, but when they realized their warriors were rapidly falling, the Indians fled, but were pursued by the citizens, under the command of Captain Hill, until they reached the mountains. The settlers then returned to Manchaca Springs and not only took possession of all the stolen horses, but recovered the camp equipage of the Indians.

**226. The Texas Indian Treaty of 1844.** - October 9, 1844, the Republic of Texas made an additional treaty with the several tribes of Indians, similar to the one made during the preceding year. Some confusion arose concerning the council at Bird's Fort, because of the lateness of Captain Eldridge and his associates in arriving from their journey to the village of Pahayuca. Several tribes failed to attend the first council, and consequently failed to take part in the peace treaty. Consequently, a new council was held on Tahwah-karro Creek, and the treaty containing the same stipulation, set out in the preceding treaty made during the previous year, was entered into with the following tribes; namely: The Comanches, Keechi, Waco, Caddo, Anadarko, Ioni,

Delaware, Shawnee, Cherokee, Lipan, and the Tahwahkarro. The treaty also provided for trading houses to be established at the various points set out by Statute, and also recognized the deadline between the Indians and white settlement; but it was agreed that if the trading posts were established some distance inland from said line, the Indians would be permitted to cross, in order to reach the trading posts.

**227. Daniel Hornsby and William Adkinson.** - During June of 1845, these two gentlemen were fishing on the Colorado, a short way below the present city of Austin. Regardless of treaties, at the unexpected moment, they were dashed upon by the red demons of the forest and murdered, and were some of the last if not the last settlers killed by Indians in the vicinity of the capitol.

**228. Lieutenant Knox's Fight in the Sabinal Canyon.** - Captain Warfield was placed in command of a company of rangers stationed near D'Hanis, in 1845, to protect the German settlements in that vicinity. A part of his command under the leadership of Lieutenant Knox, went on a scouting expedition in the Sabinal Canyon. Somewhere in the vicinity of the present town of Utopia, a large number of Indians were encountered and in the fight that followed, eight of their number were killed. Lieutenant Knox lost one man.

**229. Heck Killed and Huffman Wounded.** - Captain Warfield's company, mentioned in the preceding section, was moved from the ranger camp near D'Hanis, shortly after the preceding engagement, to a point on the Leona River about three miles below the present city of Uvalde, and occupied a position that was later known as Fort Inge. Privates Lee Gholsten, Heck, Huffman, and three others were detailed to go to San Antonio for supplies. While the rangers and freighters were returning in five wagons, and when they reached the Sabinal River, Heck and Huffman left their companions and proceeded ahead for the purpose of killing a deer. They had only gone about one mile, when the two were ambushed by about fifty Lipan Indians, who often professed friendship to the whites. Heck was killed and as Huffman made a rapid retreat back to the wagons, he was wounded in the thigh with an arrow. When he reached the wagons, and was prepared for battle, the Indians stopped and did not charge. As they retreated, they fired the grass to obliterate their trail.

Since it burned over the dead and mutilated body of Heck, his corpse was difficult to find. Private Lee was dispatched to headquarters for assistance, and in due time the rangers were on the Indians' trail, which led toward the Leona River and reached that stream about seven miles below the camp, at which point the forty Lipans were charged by thirteen rangers. It cannot be said either side whipped the other, and during the fighting Nat Mangum received a mortal wound. Most of the

firing was done at long range, and a chief who wore a helmet of buffalo horns, would dash out of the timber, fire at the rangers, and then retreat again under cover. It was agreed that the next time he made his appearance several would simultaneously fire at this particular individual. They did, and he instantly fell dead on the ground. Evidently, this ended the battle, for shortly afterwards, the Indians retreated across the river.

**230. Captain Warfield's Men Fight With Comanches on the Cibolo.** - Above the Laredo-San Antonio Road during the latter part of 1845, while Captain Warfield and his men were camped at what afterwards became known as old Fort Inge, fifteen of his famous veterans while on a scout discovered the trail of sixteen Comanche warriors who had passed between the mountains and the Frio River. The trail was followed for a considerable distance and when they reached the Cibolo, the rangers located the Indians and were still undiscovered themselves. The savages were riding tired horses and not a great distance above the Laredo Road, when they rode out into the open. Here the Indians were unexpectedly charged by the Texans. John Saddler fired the first shot and knocked an Indian from his horse. The remaining warriors began their hideous yells and attempted to fall back into such ravines and thickets of cactus as would afford them a certain degree of protection. But they were cut off from such places by the charging rangers, and this forced them to make their escape across the open country, over which was occasionally found bunches of cactus and catclaw bushes. Tom Galbreath, the veteran old Indian fighter who was along, singled out a certain Indian and shot him down. He soon shot another Indian riding a painted pony as he galloped away. Stake Holmes who was riding a fast horse singled out a certain Indian and attempted to rope him, but just at the moment he was attempting to throw his lariat, his horse jumped a large cactus, and when his saddle carried him high in the air, Holmes became unbalanced and fell backwards into the pears. One of his comrades then killed the Indian, and subsequently came to his rescue. In a helpless condition he lay, with thousands and thousands of pears sticking in his body. His comrades extricated as many as possible, and with a sharp knife shaved off the others. Not a single Indian of the original sixteen escaped to relate the sad fate of his comrades; and all were killed within a half-mile of the place they were first charged by the rangers.

Ref: Same as preceding chapter.

## **PART V. INDIANS OF WESTERN TEXAS**

### **CHAPTER V. RELATIONS WITH TEXAS INDIANS FROM 1846 TO 1854.**

**231. The Treaty of the United States With Several Tribes of Texas Indians in 1846.** - After the United States acquired complete jurisdiction over the several tribes of Texas Indians the government desired to arrange for a permanent peace.

T. M. Butler and M. G. Lewis were appointed commissioners to represent the United States, and to negotiate a treaty made the 15th day of May, 1846. This treaty was consummated at Council Springs in the County of Robinson, near the Brazos River and the above commissioners were assisted by Major Robert S. Neighbors, J. H. Rollings, T. J. Smith, E. Morehouse, Louis Sanchez, John Conner, Jim Shaw and others. It will be recalled that these interpreters played a prominent part in the treaty of peace negotiated at Bird's Fort in 1842.

This treaty, among other things, contained the following stipulations: The respective tribes to be under the protection of the United States; the United States to have whole and exclusive right to regulate trade and intercourse with Indians; all white persons and negroes held by the Indians as captives be released and returned to their homes before the 1st of November of the same year; all Indian hostages be also released; Indians guilty of murder or robbery to be delivered to the authorities of the United States; horse stealing to be forever abolished and all stolen horses restored; establishment of trading houses, agencies and posts to be located on the border; the United States present the Indians with presents in the amount of \$10,000; perpetual peace be established between the United States and the several tribes; no ardent or intoxicating liquors to be sold to the Indians; blacksmiths so often needed by the several tribes be introduced among them; school teachers and ministers of the gospel to be sent to the Indians aid, etc. The treaty was signed by B. M. Butler and N. G. Lewis, United States Commissioners and many of the leading chiefs of most of the important tribes of the Texas Indians.

Since Texas retained title to her land, a very serious legal question arose concerning the authority of the United States preventing the whites from going beyond the former deadline established in the treaty between the Texans and Indians in 1843. Consequently, over the protest of some of the Indian chiefs, Art. 3, of the peace treaty, which related to the establishment of the deadline between the Indian and Texas settlements, was omitted, but the deadline was nevertheless recognized. And these treaties, altho not an absolute barrier, prevented settlers from locating in many of the West Texas counties, until about 1854 and 1855, when the two Indian reservations of Young and Throckmorton counties were surveyed and opened to colonization.

**232. Honorable W. Medill's Report on Indian Affairs in Texas for the Year 1846.** - Hon. W. Medill, Commissioner of Indian Affairs of the United States, in his report of November 30,

1846, among other things, had the following to say concerning Texas Indians:

"Some provisions should also be made for the protection and security of our citizens, and the maintenance of peaceful relations with the various tribes within the boundaries of Texas. The necessity for some action of this kind is greatly increased by the events which are now transpiring on the borders of the State.

"These tribes are of the roving and unstable disposition, and probably among the most barbarous and least civilized portions of the Indian race. Their position and present relation toward the general government, are analogous and not altogether free from embarrassment and difficulties. The lands which they occupy, as well as most of the rights enjoyed, are under the control and legislative authority of the State, and it is questionable whether the intercourse act and other laws of the government, and regulation of Indian affairs can be extended to these people, without interfering with the local jurisdiction of Texas."

**233. Capt. Bartlett Simms, Nephew, Clark and Grant. -**

Because of the several treaties and the number of chastisements received by the Indians, they were not so hostile from 1846 to 1857. Nevertheless, their depredations never ceased.

Capt. Bartlett Simms in company with his brother's sons, Clark and Grant, made a surveying expedition from Bastrop County to the Pedernales. While engaged in work, at a critical moment, they were charged by a large number of Indians, who had concealed themselves in the tall grass. The Indians first attacked the nephew of Captain Simms, and the youth shot one savage and knocked another down with the breech of his gun, but was then killed himself. Clark and Grant were also murdered by the Indians and their bodies almost obliterated by arrows. When Captain Simms reached his horse, a large Indian caught his bridle rein, but this warrior was wounded by the Captain with a pistol, and only Captain Simms reached the settlement in safety to relate the sad story.

**234. Report of Major Robert S. Neighbors, Superintendent of Indian Affairs in Texas for the Year 1847. -**

After Texas was annexed to the United States, it became necessary to find some suitable person friendly towards the Indians, to act as their agent and superintendent. Major Robert S. Neighbors was employed for this purpose. He came to Texas from Virginia in 1837, and entered the Texas Army under President Houston. From that time forward, he played a prominent part in the affairs of Texas. When Texas was annexed to the Union, he was appointed Superintendent of Texas Indians and served in this capacity, except for a brief period, up until the

time of his death. In 1849, in company with Col. John S. Ford, he assisted in surveying a route from San Antonio to El Paso and Santa Fe. During 1851, Major Neighbors was elected a member of the Legislature. In 1854 he assisted Marcy in locating and surveying the two Indian reservations in Young and Throckmorton Counties, and when they were open for Indian colonization early in 1855, these reservations were placed under his immediate supervision, and it can be safely said that he was always the warm friend of the frontier Indian tribes.

Let us turn our attention to his activities during 1847. In a report made from Torrey's Trading House and dated June 22, 1847, Major Neighbors said that he arrived one month previously at the principal village of the Comanches, which was about one hundred miles north of Austin, and presented the \$10,000 worth of presents, promised in the treaty. Pochanaquahie, Pahayuca and Mocochochopie, as well as other Indian chiefs were present, and in the council that was held, the Indians again pledged their faith in the treaty, and promised to abide by its provisions.

The chief first above named, who was generally known among the white settlers as Buffalo Hump, in the council stated,

"I cannot agree that the third article in the treaty shall be stricken out for that article was put in at my request. For a long time a great many people have been passing through my country. They kill all the game and burn the country, and trouble me so much. The commissioners of our Great Father promised to keep these people out of our country. I believe our white brothers do not wish to run a line between us, because they wish to settle in this country. I object to any more settlement; I want this country to hunt in."

Pahayuca stated,

"We all object to any alteration in the treaty, and the men that made the treaty were the best men we had and we considered it good as made, and do not want to alter it now. The third article was put in at the request of my war chief, for the protection of my people."

Robert S. Neighbors stated that alterations made could not materially change the treaty; and to substantiate him in this contention, he read to the Indians a letter from Washington, and the Indians then became more reconciled. The matter "of running a line between the territory of the Indians and the whites, similarly to the one outlined in the Texas and Indian Treaty of 1843, was for the time, tabled since it was a delicate and dangerous subject. Major Neighbors told the Indians the question would be settled by the government to their complete satisfaction, and again the Indians pledged their support to the treaty.

Major Neighbors stated that the laws of Texas do not recognize the Indians' right to land, and the Texans contended they had a right to locate lands unsurveyed at any point within the State. He further stated that the settlements at that time were expanding very rapidly and pushing farther West, and that unless checked would continue. Large parties of surveyers were also pushing beyond the deadline. These things, he stated, kept the Indians excited and unless some means were adopted to check surveying expeditions it would finally lead to trouble, for the Comanches were on the verge of war over the matter.

The 30th of May, Robert S. Neighbors arrived at the village of the Caddos, Ionis and Anadarkos, which was situated on the Brazos. These Indians at that time were cultivating large fields of corn and appeared to be prosperous. The village consisted of about one hundred and fifty houses, made of wood covered with grass. Due to the frequent depredations of the Wacos, Wichitas and Keechis, as well as associated tribes, Robert S. Neighbors realized the importance of visiting them and perfecting a better understanding. Assisted by Indian escorts and interpreters, he made a visit to these tribes and presented them with presents. The Indians promised to abide by the treaty, and to return stolen property.

Major Robt. S. Neighbors again writing from Torrey's Trading House stated that he arrived at this point September 13, 1847, and learned that the Indian presents were at Galveston. He also arranged with Geo. Barnard, who had a trading house not a great distance from the present Fort Spunky in Hood County, to furnish a certain amount of supplies and provisions. Major Robert S. Neighbors then visited the villages of the Caddos, Ionis, Aanadarkos, etc., who were located in the present Palo Pinto County and many of whom were at the time living in Village Bend five miles southeast of Palo Pinto, and about the same distance southwest of Mineral Wells. He then visited the villages of the Comanches farther West, and was told that certain unlicensed Indian traders were selling intoxicating liquors among the Indians. He was also told that Buffalo Hump, the Comanches' war chief, was on a foray into Old Mexico, and had with him about six or eight hundred warriors.

Space will not permit, nor will circumstances afford our giving a detailed account of all the movements of the Indian agents, but it will be readily seen both in the above statement and in accounts to follow, along about this time the Caddos, Ionis, Anadarkos, Wacos, and other tribes were located along the Brazos in Hood, Palo Pinto, Young and perhaps other counties. The Caddos had a camp near the mouth of the stream that bears their name, and located in the northwestern part of Palo Pinto County, now generally known as the Boydston Ranch. The Caddos, Ionis, Aanadarkos, etc., also had villages in the Village and DeVaughan bends of the Brazos, between the present

towns of Palo, Pinto and Mineral Wells. These locations were frequently visited by Major Neighbors and his assistants.

\*\*\* *There is no para. 235 in the original work.* \*\*\*

**236. Activities of Indian Agents During 1848.** - Reporting from Torrey's Trading House, January 20, 1848, Major Neighbors stated that shortly before his arrival, the Comanches voluntarily returned six horses stolen from Captain Suttin's ranging company. Major Neighbors was informed by the Tonkawas, who were almost always friendly, that Tenawish, a Comanche chief, and his men had stolen the Texans' horses, consequently, Major Neighbors informed the Comanches that the remaining horses, which had been stolen and in their hands, must be immediately returned. He also stated in his reports of 1848, that the Indians had a battle with Captain McCulloch and his men; that the Indians were continually stealing horses from the settlers; that the rangers had killed a Caddo boy, and in turn three surveyors of Peter's Colony had been murdered by the Indians on the Trinity.

**237. General Burleson's Indian Fight in 1848.** - The noted Texan above mentioned was one of the first settlers to locate near the present city of San Marcos, and while living here he was often visited by Placido, the Tonkawa chief. During 1848, while making one of these visits, Placido and his sons were seated in the family room conversing with General Burleson and his family. About nine o'clock Placido detected the hooting of an owl, and being well aware of this intrigue of the Comanches, he instantly covered the blazing fire with ashes and informed General Burleson of the presence of hostile warriors. When the room was darkened, this faithful Indian crawled to the door and disappeared, but he soon returned and exclaimed to General Burleson, "Scurry stole, Comanche steal him." Scurry was General Burleson's favorite horse, and derived his name from Gen. Dick Scurry, who rode this steed in the battle of Monterey. The horses of Placido and his son and two other horses left in a nearby stockade had not been bothered; and after they were hastily saddled Placido and General Burleson, altho it was night, took the Indian trail. Little did they dream they were being pursued. Altho the Comanches moved slowly along until just before sunrise, when they were crossing an open prairie, the three warriors, who stole the horses, were unexpectedly charged by General Burleson, his Tonkawa companion, and their two sons. A running fight followed with the Indians in the lead. At least two of the Comanche warriors paid the penalty of death, and Placido was slightly wounded.

**238. Government Activities and Reports in 1849.** - Each year in the general reports of the Commission of Indian Affairs, the attention of the Federal Government is repeatedly reminded of the fact, that in Texas the lands belonged to the State, and as

a consequence, the jurisdiction of the Federal Government over Indian territory was greatly handicapped.

In response to a request by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs at Washington, March 7, 1849, Major Robert S. Neighbors submitted an estimate of the number of Texas Indians in existence at that time. His figures were as follows: Comanches, 20,000; Kiowas, 15,500; Lipans, 500; Caddos, Ionis, Anadarkos, and their allied bands, 1400; Tonkawas, 650; Wichitas and Wacos and associated bands, 1000; Keechis, 300; Delawares and Shawnees, 650; Creeks and Cherokees, 75; Apaches, 3500, making a total of 29,575, and it was estimated that one-fifth of that number, or 5,915, were warriors, capable of bearing arms.

He also pointed out that these Indians ranged across the frontier from the Red River to the Rio Grande; that they show signs of being peaceable and that he believed by exercising proper precaution and giving them proper attention, they could be induced to settle down and lead a domestic life.

Realizing the gravity of the situation, Major Neighbors made the following suggestions as necessary steps to put in effect the treaty of 1846. Firstly, that a treaty should be made with the several tribes, establishing definite boundaries to such territory they could rightfully call their own. Secondly, that a sufficiency of territory should be acquired from the state of Texas for a permanent location of the Indians, and this suggestion led to the establishment of the two Indian reserves in Young and Throckmorton Counties in 1854. Thirdly, that the Government extend its intercourse law over the Indians of Texas for better regulating the trade with the several tribes. Fourthly, that the government make a suitable provision for the establishment of a government agency, with at least three sub-agents and interpreters to reside with the Indians. Fifthly, the establishment of necessary military posts to protect and put in force the treaty of 1846. He also pointed out that the Indians badly needed blacksmiths, carpenters, mechanics, and a large appropriation so they could buy cattle, farming equipment, etc. According to his report, some of the most civilized tribes were already in favor of educating their children, and that this should demand the early attention of the government. It will be readily seen that these suggestions made in 1849, for the purpose of perpetuating the treaty of 1846, and for the further purpose of establishing the Indians on a permanent basis and winning their good will, were the first steps leading toward the establishment of the two Indian reserves four or five years later.

In 1849, Col. M. P. Johnson, who then lived in Tarrant County, and for whom Johnson County was named, in a letter to the department at Washington, submitted in substance the following facts relative to the several tribes of Texas Indians. He stated that the Texas Indians were divided into two classes.

Firstly, Indians native to Texas; secondly, Indians who had immigrated to this section: the Comanches, Tonkaways, Lipans, Wacos, Cowacanies, and about fifty Kiankaways who live among the Mexican settlements on the Rio Grande, and about seventy-five or one hundred Bedies, near Houston, were the only aboriginal tribes of Texas. He further stated that the Lipans were brave, had many guns among them, and often did much mischief under the disguise of wild tribes. The second division included those that migrated to Texas, such as the Wichitas, Keechis, Caddos, Ionis, Anadarkos, etc. And at that time the Wichitas, Towash, Keechis, etc., who numbered about six hundred, lived upon the Brazos, Trinity, and Big Wichita, and that the Wichitas themselves often resided North of Red River near the mountains by the same name. The Caddos, Anadarkos, and Ionis, altho each have their chief, or head man and live in separate villages, are associated together and under one principal chief. At that time their villages were upon the Brazos, and were principally located in Hood, Palo Pinto, and Young Counties. Colonel Johnson further related that the Anadarkos, who lived on the Brazos, spent most of their time within one hundred miles of the settlements, between the Brazos and Trinity, where they had been permitted to go at their pleasure in violation of the laws of the State and treaties with the several tribes and against the will of the people. He further reported that within the last year several times conflicts were only narrowly averted, and if their activities are not stopped they will ultimately lead to war. In his report, Colonel Johnson declared that certain tribes were constantly depredating in Texas, and the statement that whites were encroaching on Indian territory, was a farce. According to his statement, the Kickapoos, at that time, belonged, and had been assigned to a home, elsewhere, but were constantly depredating in Texas. Attention was further called to the fact that Colonel Bell ordered all Indians to procure a passport before they passed into the settlements; but that Colonel Neighbors objected to this order. The citizens had hopes, according to his statement, that the establishment of military posts in 1849, and the arrival of Federal soldiers would give them the long-needed relief, but in this, they were much disappointed; and that he would not be surprised at war with these tribes at any time. He further stated that although the law prohibits the selling of war materials; nevertheless, the traders had furnished them with many wagon loads.

**239. Movement and Activities of Federal Military Forces in 1849.** - It is, of course, impossible to detail every movement of Federal soldiers; but in 1849, as we have already seen, a chain of military posts were established from the Red River to the Rio Grande, as a safeguard against the invasions of hostile Indians, and to protect the early pioneer. Altho the citizens often charged that the soldiers failed to discharge their duties as they should; nevertheless they saw no little amount of activities and were often pursuing and fighting various bands of hostile Indians.

The year of 1849 presented more Indian activities which were gross violations of their several treaties than had been experienced in many years. Many people were killed and carried into captivity, particularly in the vicinity of the present city of Corpus Christi. But little of this occurred in the territories covered by the present work. Nevertheless the soldiers at the several military posts were constantly on the alert; and in 1849 were several times called in action.

To better enable the reader to vividly see the movement of Federal military machinery in Texas at this time, and to understand local conditions as they then existed let us turn our attention to a few of the early reports. In a communication of General Geo. M. Brook, then in command of the department of Texas, addressed to Adjutant General R. Jones at Washington, D. C., dated July 14, 1849, among other things he stated:

"General, I have the honor to enclose a map of the State of Texas with a line of posts as at present established on the frontier. The location of some of them may be changed in some slight degree, but it is believed that this line is the true one. I saw, however, in a very short time the necessity of sending Lt. Whitting, of the Engineers to make a reconnoissance of the line, commencing at Eagle Pass on the Rio Grande, and terminating on the Red River. His instructions will embrace the general character of the country, the roads to be constructed between the posts, timbers for quarters, fuel and water, board and subsistence, which the country adjoining the post can supply, and noticing the amount of cultivation and population. He will also report on the military sites now established with the necessary work applicable to each position, the number of companies in each fort which might be proportioned to the strength of the Indian tribes in this neighborhood, with the passes which the Indians are in the habit of entering the settlements, and those particularized through which the largest bodies pass. He then advises the department that the frontier is insufficiently garrisoned, and therefore not properly protected."

General George M. Brook further stated,

"I trust that the next Congress may increase the strength of the companies to one hundred, or at least to seventy-five. On this frontier or in New Mexico, it is unfair to presume how near we are to a state of war, and should be at all times prepared to enforce the views of our government. The immense body of Indians over whom we are forced to exercise a sovereignty, induced by the annexation of large states and extensive territory, and the treaty with Mexico - situated from time immemorial to plunder and depredation - are under our control. You will perceive at once the importance of the matter and the difficulties and troubles which may be readily anticipated."

These reports enable us to see Gen. Brook gradually putting the gigantic Federal military machine into action.

Along about the same time, the following petition was presented to General Harney, then commanding the post at Austin:

"Your petitioners, citizens of Williamson and Milam Counties, respectively, represent that there is now a large number of Indians hovering around Georgetown, and on the waters of the San Gabriel and Lampasas Rivers, stealing horses and killing stock. They commenced stealing horses, etc., early last spring; they now are plundering corn fields and refuse to leave at the request of the owner until they supply themselves with corn; they killed thirty head of hogs belonging to one man; they went to the house of Mr. Roberts a few days ago, when he was absent from home; Mrs. Roberts had a bridle on a horse and was standing in the door when they came up and ordered her to give up the horse. She refused. One of them caught hold of the bridle and took it away from her. She caught hold of the bridle again and the Indian struck her in the face. She remarked, 'Yonder comes the white men, you had better leave.' The Indian let go of the horse to look for the men. Then she mounted the horse and rode away, leaving the Indians in possession of the premises."

The petition prayed for Federal military protection and was signed by George Glasscock, and one hundred and twenty of the leading citizens of that section. A part of the Indians doing the depredating were Caddos from the upper Brazos.

September 22, 1849, Wm. Steele, writing from Fort Martin Scott, near Fredericksburg, forwarded the following communication to headquarters at San Antonio, Texas, and it is given at this time, inasmuch as it throws additional light and enables us to better understand the conditions of the Indian affairs in Texas at that time:

"Camp near Fredericksburg, Texas,  
September 22, 1849.

MAJOR: I have the honor to report that I have today received a visit from two Comanche chiefs, Pro-Pro-Whop, or Buffalo-Hump, and Rey-Turn-See, who are direct from the camp on the Clear Fork of the Brazos, for the purpose of communicating the result of a council lately held by the whole Comanche nation, to elect a successor to Mo-per-cho-co, late head chief, who having died since our last intelligence from the camp on the Brazos.

"The election resulted in the choice of Buffalo-Hump, who, upon assuming the dignity, called upon all the chiefs and warriors to speak their minds freely with regard to their relations with the whites.

"The council lasted ten days, when it was finally determined that they would be great fools to war with the United States. They had been to war with Texas when Texas was weak, and they had gained nothing by it; and now that Texas was joined to the United States, a war would lead to the destruction of their nation.

"Buffalo-Hump says, that although he may not be able to stop at once small thieving parties, he is determined to preserve peace, and he hopes that these small parties will not be considered by the whites as a cause of war.

"He also wished to say, that in event of a council it is the wish of the Indians that it be held on the Llano, or at this place.

"I have the honor to be, with the highest respect, your obedient servant,

Brevet, Captain, Commanding: at Fredericksburg.

TO: Major Geo. Deas,

Assistant Adjutant General, San Antonio, Texas."

Let us again reiterate that it is impossible to give a detailed account of all the movements of soldiers on the early Texas frontiers, but their activities were disclosed by hundreds of such letters and reports, which were forwarded to Washington. These reports disclosed that the Indians were ever harassing, not only the settlements, but the soldiers around the military posts. Occasionally, when a soldier was caught away from his comrades, he was killed. Facts pertaining to these early massacres were similar to the loss of Lt. Harrison, October 7, 1849, when Col. Marcy was returning through Western Texas from Santa Fe. It was this continual harassing of the settlements that lead to the massacre of reserve Indians, about six miles north of Palo Pinto, in 1858, and the storming of the reservations in 1859.

**240. Indians Attack the Mail Coach Near Devil's River in 1849.** - After traveling hard since twelve o'clock at night, the mail arrived on Devil's River. A temporary halt was made to permit both men and animals to recuperate, and all were alert for Indians, for several signs had been seen during the day. Indian smoke signals had been rising from distant points, and Big Foot Wallace, who was in charge of the mail coach, stated that for some unknown reason, he could not restrain from feeling somewhat dispondent. While some of the crew were napping, Big Foot took his gun and stationed himself as a sentinel on a small hill about fifty yards from the camp. Shortly afterwards, he noticed one of the horses raising his head and looking for some time in a single direction. Soon a deer which

showed signs of having been disturbed, came running by. So Wallace feeling that the critical time had almost come, returned to the camp and quietly awakened Ben Wade. The two then led in the horses, and staked them to a small chapparal, without waking the other boys. After securely fastening the horses, Ben lay down again to finish his nap, but almost immediately he was again on his feet, and told Wallace he could hear the horses feet chattering on the rocky ground. Within a few seconds, twenty-three Comanche warriors came riding towards the camp, and were soon throwing their "Wooden pegs." Big Foot Wallace was assisted by about eight veteran Indian fighters, and at the opportune time, they fired and four Comanches came tumbling to the ground. The remaining Indians carried away their fallen and retreated behind the hill. Several of the men thought the fight was over, but Wallace informed them to be in readiness, for they would no doubt soon return; and before the whites could hardly reload their rifles, the screaming savages again appeared and a hot fight followed. The Indians again retreated a second time and again some of Wallace's associates thought the Indians had gone, but the veteran old frontiersman told them to be in readiness for another attack. Wallace then ordered his men to take their guns and lie down under the coach and keep very quiet; this they did for some time and some were beginning to be impatient. Later, however, an Indian cautiously poked his head out of the chapperal about seventy yards from the mail coach. He looked for a long time, and seeing no sign of life, ventured out and straightened up to have a better view. Wallace ordered his men not to fire, for he was of the opinion others would soon appear, and they did. It was not long until five appeared on the scene. No doubt, they were wondering what had become of the whitemen. Wallace then ordered the boys to fire, and four Indians fell. No Indian signs were seen for about twenty minutes, and then a motioning arm appeared from the timber. The Indians had roped one of the dead warriors, and drug him into a thicket. Others were removed the same way.

The Texans now considered it safe to travel. While some of the men were harnessing the horses, Wallace took his rifle and walked away for the purpose of reconnoitering the surrounding country. He soon counted forty warriors coming down the canyon, not more than four hundred yards away. This, no doubt, was a fresh band of Indians coming to reinforce the others. When they were within one hundred yards, Wallace rose up from his concealment and was asked by the Comanche chief in Spanish, why he was there. Wallace's experience in fighting Indians had taught him to always present a brave appearance. Consequently, he replied to the above question that the whites had been fighting Comanches, and had given them a good whipping. "Yes," the chief replied, "you are a set of smoking coyotes, and are afraid to come out of the brush; you are afraid to travel the road; you are all squaws; and you don't dare to poke your nose out of the chaparral. If you will wait until we eat

dinner," Wallace replied, "I'll show you whether we are afraid to travel the road." We shall camp at the California Springs tonight, in spite of the whole Comanche nation," and after making these remarks Wallace turned and walked back to the coach, as if he didn't think they were worth bothering. This strategic move on the part of Captain Wallace had the desired effect for the Indians rushed on to the California Springs, thinking they would ambush the Texans. Three Indian spies, however, were left to watch the Texans. After giving the Indians sufficient time to reach the springs, the Texans left their location on Devil's River and rode as rapidly as possible, toward Fort Clark. Two of the spies were seen riding toward their companions to report the movement of the whites. The third one followed for several miles.

Although somewhat alarmed, the Texans reached Fort Clark in safety; and a detachment of about twelve soldiers escorted the mail coach on to San Antonio.

**241. David F. Torrey.** - The Torrey brothers played a prominent part in the early affairs of Texas. David K. Torrey, who established Torrey's Trading House near Waco, came to Texas in 1839. December 25, 1849, while acting as Indian agent, was killed by the Mescaleros, near Presido Del Norte.

**242. Activities of Indian Agents in 1850.** - Don H. Rollings, special Indian Agent for the United States, in his report of Sept. 30, 1850, reported in substance, that since the Comanches failed to meet them in council as promised, he was on his way to the Clear Fork of the Brazos to seek them. At Fort Graham and Fort Gates, Agent Rollings obtained an escort of twenty men, together with eleven Delawares for his protection and guides. The 5th day from Fort Graham he found Katumpsy and Little Wolf, chiefs of the Comanches. When the Indians were assured their mission was peaceable, they were hospitably received.

These Indians were told their depredating and murdering and absence from councils, had caused them to abandon their treaty of 1846; and that unless they returned the stolen property, etc., and released the men who committed the murders, and be fully prepared to treat in relations to the many Mexican prisoners among them, troops would be immediately sent into every part of the Indian country.

Buffalo-Hump, the war chief of the Comanches, replied that the talk was very good, was very plain, and not such as they had been accustomed to hear. Yet it is not offensive, and believed it to be true and warranted by the circumstances. He was then told that many violations of the treaties had been made on both sides, and that it was either better to renew and abide by the treaty, or disregard it altogether. The Comanches' attention was then called to the fact that some of their warriors, over the protest of the agent, had been on the Rio Grande, and with

other tribes made war against the whites, and some of their number had been killed, which was hoped would be a lesson to the remainder.

**243. Indian Depredations During 1850.** - During 1850, there was much blood shed, and many depredating excursions made by the Comanches and other Indians; but such excursions were very largely confined to South Texas, and in the territory around Corpus Christi, Brownsville, Laredo, and at other points not included in the present work. The soldiers at different camps were frequently called upon to chastise the Indians, many of whom professed to be friendly.

John S. Ford, Captain of the Texas Mounted Volunteers,

\*\*\* THERE IS NO MISSING A LINE OF TEXT HERE \*\*\*

ing the fighting, captured a young warrior, who was about seventeen years of age. In his report concerning this captive, Captain Ford said:

"From the captive, I learned the following particulars, which if true, are of some moment. Roque places reliance upon the statement; he is well acquainted with the Indian character. I give it to you as I received it. Buffalo-Hump and four principal chiefs, at the head of seven hundred and seventy warriors, and some families, are at this time, are at some point on the Rio Frio. Buffalo-Hump and some other chief are going to San Antonio to deceive General Brook, by friendly protestations and by pretending that he wishes to proceed below for the purpose of running ponies, while the real object is to make a raid upon the frontier.

"One party is to move upon Corpus Christi and the adjacent country by way of the valley of Nueces. Another is to cross the Nueces River above the San Antonio road and make a foray upon Laredo and the ranches on the Rio Grande. The third is to cross the Nueces below the San Antonio road and is headed for the Davis Ranch and Brownsville."

**244. Activities and Reports of Indian Agents in 1851.** - According to the report of the Commissioner of Indian affairs in 1851, the thing that seemed to be uppermost in the minds of the Indian agents, was the establishment of a definite boundary for an Indian Reservation, and to establish a more permanent peace.

John H. Rollings in his reports dated March 25, 1851, among other things reported to the general government; firstly, that it was the policy of the government to avoid war with the Indians; secondly, that a war was absolutely necessary under the present state of affairs, but prompt action by the government might avert it; thirdly, no action except a radical one would be

effective and that nothing short of a country for the Indians, over which the United States had jurisdiction, together with a temporary support of the Indians, could be adopted as a permanent policy; fourthly, that the first thing to be done was to obtain a country for the Indians; fifthly, that it would be far less expensive to purchase a country and support them until they had made some advance in agriculture than it would be to try to drive them away from a country they rightly thought was theirs. He then suggested that the frontier was insufficiently garrisoned with soldiers, and that those already there stayed around drinking houses and were a poor protection for the frontier. In his report he further stated that he felt sure that the State of Texas would gladly set apart territory for Indian reservations.

Jesse Stem, who was appointed as Special Agent in 1850, and killed by the Indians in Young County in 1854, in substance reported as follows:

"John H. Rollings and Jesse Stem left San Antonio May 7, 1851, for the Indian country. They were joined at Fort Martin Scott by Col. Hardee and two hundred dragoons. Runners were sent to Buffalo-Hump Katumpsy, and Yellow Wolf, and others, to the effect that as soon as possible a council would be held upon the Llano. Buffalo-Hump has reported sick, Yellow Wolf showed an unwillingness to attend, and stated that the Colorado was up and that he could not come. So a conference was held with Katumpsy and the Lipans. A demand was made for the Comanches to deliver up the Mexican prisoners and this they agreed to do. May 29th, the party determined to proceed to the headwaters of the Brazos, for the purpose if possible, of getting into communication with the Northern Comanches. For nearly thirteen days they traveled, and after failing to find these particular Indians, the agents then turned toward the settlements. As they returned, they visited several Indian tribes on the upper Brazos, and a conversation was held with Jose Maria, who said, that now there was a line below which Indians were not allowed to go, but the whites came above it, surveyed lands, marked trees on their hunting grounds, and near the village lands, which was not just."

In 1851, Acoquash was the principal chief of the Wacos, Keechis, and other tribes, many of whom at this time lived on the Brazos, not a great distance from the present line of Palo Pinto and Young County; and Tawash and Jose Maria were chiefs of the Caddos, Ionis, Anadarkos, etc., whose villages were then located near the mouth of Big Caddo, and in Village Bend, in the present Palo Pinto County.

In a report made by Jesse Stem, November 1, 1851, he stated that he had runners to inform the Comanches and other tribes that the presents for them had arrived, and were at Fort Graham, which was then, of course, on the extreme western

frontier. He also stated that the Caddos and Ionis, Anadarkos, etc., had made a creditable showing in agriculture and were remaining peaceable.

**245. Expedition of S. Cooper, Assistant Adjutant General.**

- Gen. Cooper, in company with Major Sibley, of the Second Dragoons, and a small escort of soldiers, left Fort Graham, June 5, 1851, for the Indian country to the northwest, to obtain, if possible, information which would be interesting to the authorities in Washington. The first thirty-two miles of their journey carried them up the Brazos to Barnard's Trading House, which was on the left, or east bank of the Brazos, and near the present Fort Spunky, in Hood County. Here they crossed the river and continued in a northwesterly course, ten miles to Comanche Peak. Then they took an irregular course up the Brazos for approximately fifty miles, and reached the Indian village of the Ioni. The surrounding country was described as being exceedingly rough. These Indians at that time, were living in Village Bend, in Palo Pinto County, and had been there for several years. According to the several government reports, these Indians and their allied tribes had homes both in Village and De Vaughan Bends. Their wigwams were made of straw and the remains of their old village could be seen for many years after these Indians were placed on the reservation, in 1855. These tribes were of a more peaceable and less roving band of Indians than the Comanches. In their small fields, they grew corn, pumpkins, beans, potatoes, and a few other varieties of farm products. These two villages on the opposite sides of the river, were joined by an Indian trail that was traveled almost constantly.

The party again crossed the Brazos at this point, and took a northwest course for eight miles over a rolling country, described as being mostly prairie, with some mequite timber, and the country became more mountainous and rugged for a few miles to the border of the same river, which was again crossed by fording. No doubt, this expedition crossed the river at Village Bend, passed very near or through the valley in which is situated the present town of Palo Pinto, and again crossed the river somewhere near the mouth of Eagle or Dark Valley. According to the reports, the country then became more rugged and mountainous and presented a large number of beautiful views with high mountain peaks in the distance. The expedition then proceeded several miles and Gen. Cooper described a lone peak which lay to his right. This peak, he named Bald-Head, because of it's being barren on top. Evidently this same peak today is known as McAdams Peak. They then visited the Keechi and Caddo villages at the mouth of the Caddo. The party proceeded farther, but the reports do not disclose just what was the terminus of their journey. When the party returned, however, they again visited the Caddo village near the mouth of Big Caddo at a place now known as the Boydston Ranch. General Cooper and his men, from this point, took a southeast

course, the first thirteen miles of which was described as being through mountain gorges and valleys. The General's report stated that shortly after they left the village of the Caddos, they crossed a creek known as High Bluff, or Styx, the borders of which were precipitous, presenting a gorgeous rock cliff, about one hundred feet high; then they crossed a prairie covered with loose limestone; this was, of course, the Belding Prairie, now very largely owned by Will H. Belding, a son of Henry Belding, who settled here before the war. General Cooper stated that after passing the prairie they descended about four hundred feet over almost impassable rock, to a beautiful valley. This was the valley of the Ioni, in the Watson Ranch; thirteen miles farther on, they again reached the villages of the Ioni and Anadarkos, in Village Bend. It was here that Jose Maria, chief of the Anadarkos, was living at that time. The Ioni village at this time, was located in Village Bend, and the Anadarko Village was on the opposite or west side of the Brazos, perhaps in the upper edge of the Lone Camp Community. General Cooper stated that after they left this point, they struck their first post oak. Then they descended through the gorges still more rugged than before, until they reached the Palo Pinto, which was reported to be nine miles from the village of Jose Maria. They then proceeded on their journey and passed between the Comanche Peak and the Brazos until they reached a point opposite Barnard's Trading House, which was on the east side of the river. The Brazos was forded at this point and in due time Gen. Cooper, Major Sibley and their escorts arrived at old Fort Graham. Concerning this expedition. General Cooper said:

"During the excursion. I visited four out of the six of the Indian villages located upon the Brazos within the section of country over which I passed, to-wit: the Ioni, Keechi, Caddo and Anadarkos. Two other tribes, the Wacos and Tawacones, who have their villages upon the Brazos about six miles beyond the Keechi village, are connected with those tribes and have the same general character but being beyond the limit which I had prescribed to myself, I did not visit them. These six tribes are united in two separate bands, and each band is governed by a head chief, each tribe having its own particular chief, who is subordinate to the head chief of the band. Thus, Jose Maria, is chief of his own particular tribe, and Anadarkos, Towash of the Ioni tribe, and Haddebar of the Caddo tribe; and those three tribes are united under Jose Maria as head chief. So also, Acoquosh is the chief of his own particular tribe, the Wacos, Chackeruck of the Keechi tribe, and Ocherash of the Tawacone tribe, and these three again form a separate band under the head Chief Acquash. These several tribes number in all about two hundred and forty warriors; and, including their women and children, they amount in the aggregate to about one thousand.

"I found these people perfectly peaceable, and every way disposed to cultivate friendly relations with the whites; they were tilling the earth, raising corn and vegetables extensively,

and their crops appeared in a fine state of forwardness and well cared for; but with all their labor and exertion they find it difficult to rub along on account of the sparseness of game in the country, which is their chief reliance; at times they are in a starving condition. They appear to want the fostering hand of government to aid and encourage them, and they yet indulge the hope that assistance will be given to them, agreeably to the terms of a treaty which they represent to have been made with them in 1846, when their chiefs visited Washington. According to their statement, the stipulations of that treaty have not been complied with by our government. They expressed a desire to be provided with some few farming implements, in order that they might cultivate their crops to better advantage and to greater extent. At present they have only a few hoes which are mostly worn out, and which they originally obtained by barter. They also wish that some few cows and hogs may be furnished to each tribe to enable them to raise their own stock, and thus supply the want of game, which is very sparse throughout this whole section of country; and, finally, that a blacksmith may be allowed them to keep their implements of husbandry in order. A little encouragement, of this kind, and which would involve but a trifling expenditure of money, would greatly contribute to their comfort and might, through this influence, effect a salutary change in the temper and feelings of other tribes along this border who are now disposed to be hostile.

"A few miles from the Keechi village we crossed a broad trail leading to the northwest. I was told by Acoquash that this was the great Comanche trail, which, passing by the Caddo and Keechi villages, led directly across the Red River to the Washita settlements, and was used by the Comanches in driving their stolen horses and mules to those settlements, where they were disposed of to traders; and that within the last three months, two parties had passed by their village with a large amount of this stolen property for barter. The establishment of a military post near the Caddo village, in Palo Pinto County at the mouth of Big Caddo, where this trail passes, would have the effect to check this traffic, and by that means lessen the inducements of this species of theft. A healthy site for a military post could be selected near the Caddo village, where good water and timber abound, and here also should be permanently located the agent for those several tribes.

"I also found upon the left bank of the Brazos, and about two miles below Barnard's Trading House, a small band of Delawares and Shawnees, in all about forty warriors with their families. They had recently moved to this place from the neighborhood of Fort Graham, on account of recent department orders, which required that Indians found within the line of military posts shall be put to death. They are cultivating corn, and are peaceable and well disposed. Some of them are occasionally used as interpreters, guides and hunters.

"In respect to the Comanches who occupy the country within the boundary of this State. I am unable to give any certain intelligence; but from the best information I have been able to obtain, I am satisfied that their numbers do not exceed two thousand warriors in all, and that they cannot concentrate at any one time for hostile purposes one-fourth of that number, on account of the difficulty of subsisting so large a body. For this reason they are generally separated into small parties; the largest number that has been known to visit any of our military posts at one time, has not exceeded seventy warriors. They are all under the control of two principal chiefs, Buffalo Hump and Yellow Wolf, the last the most active and energetic of the two. They occasionally visit some of the parties upon this line, and always profess friendly dispositions, but no reliance can be placed in their professions

"I enclose a sketch of the route recently passed over to the Indian villages, which are prepared by Major Sibley.

"I leave here tomorrow for Fort Worth, and thence to Washita. My report of this department will be rendered soon after completing the inspection of Fort Worth.

"I have the honor to be, very respectfully, your obedient servant,  
Brevet, Col. Asst. Adjt. General and Acting Inspector  
S. COOPER,  
Major General Roger Jones,  
Adjutant General, U. S. Army, Washington, D. C."

**246. Henry E. McCulloch on the San Saba in 1851.** - Early in August of the above year, scouts of Capt. McCulloch reported fresh Indian signs and a fresh Indian trail west of their camp, which was on the north branch of the Llano. Capt. McCulloch and twenty-one men followed in immediate pursuit, and when they reached the south bank of the San Saba, it became evident that the Indians were near. The Comanches' camp was soon discovered in a deep ravine. No doubt, these Indians felt secure so many miles from the settlements, and permitted their horses to graze away for a considerable distance.

After learning the Indians were near the command cautiously proceeded toward their encampment. Capt. McCulloch and his men at the critical moment made a decisive charge and separated the horses from the Indians, who took refuge in a nearby ravine. The rangers crowded them as closely as possible and it was reported the squaws fought with bows and arrows like they were men. The Indians were finally routed from their position and retreated down the branch until they found refuge in the brush below.

After the smoke of battle had cleared away, eight warriors lay dead on the ground. The rangers recovered their horses and

camp equipment and it was evident the Indian raiders had been robbing the Mexicans on the Rio Grande. Two captured squaws were also among the spoils and Capt. McCulloch gave them horses and necessary supplies and told them to convey the word to Katumpsy, chief of the Comanches, that if they would bring in such prisoners they had and report at Fort Martin Scott, their horses would be restored. In response Katumpsy contended that he had been warring against the Mexicans only and that it was not right for the Texans to interfere.

**247. Government Reports and Indian Activities and Legislation in 1852-53.** - During these years all eyes were focused upon Indian reservations to be established somewhere in Northern Texas. An Act was approved February 16, 1852, which provided that Texas was ready to negotiate with the Federal Government relative to the establishment of Indian Reservations. This information was conveyed to Washington by some of the special agents in charge of Texas tribes and was no doubt forwarded directly from Austin.

In a report dated October 8, 1852, Jesse Stem stated that the Indians had been stealing horses at both Fort Belknap and Fort Phantom Hill. He also stated that after Jose Maria had ended his winter hunt, he located between Fort Belknap and Fort Phantom Hill at a point on the Clear Fork, because his former home in Palo Pinto County across the river from Village Bend, had been surveyed in his absence, and he therefore refused to return.

In 1853, as well as during the following year, the agents met Buffalo Hump, Katumpsy, Senaco, Yellow Wolf and other Indians in councils which were held at Fort Chadbourne. These reports again stated that the Comanches were continually raiding into Old Mexico, and invariably murdered and stole much property on these long forays.

The Indians showed a willingness to settle down, provided a reservation would be set apart for them.

Reference is also made to the fact that unlicensed traders were continually selling intoxicating liquors to the Indians.

**248. The Fight of Joseph Conrad and Others in 1852.** -

During the above year, Joseph Conrad, Bob Harper, Tom Malone, W. White, W. Adams, Henry Adams, and two of the Boone boys went out on a hunting expedition between the Hondo and Burdy Creeks. The sleet was falling and they discovered an Indian trail which led towards the Peach Tree water-hole. The Indians were found while eating supper, and they did not discover the whites until after being fired upon.

The savages then scattered into the brush and the citizens took charge of their camp equipage. Shortly afterward they heard groans in the cedar brush nearby and upon investigation, found

a wounded Indian, who was attempting to murder himself by piercing his heart with an arrow. Shortly afterwards he died and was scalped. Other dead Indians were also later found in the same vicinity.

**249. Murder of Washburn About 1853.** - Washburn was alone on the old Fort Belknap and Preston Road near the Cotton Wood Springs on Little Salt Creek, when he was massacred by the Indians. No doubt, the killing of Washburn was the first white blood taken by Indians after the establishment of old Fort Belknap. The famous Salt Creek fight of 1869, was fought only a few hundred yards from the place where the Indians killed Washburn.

NOTE: Author personally interviewed F. M. Peveler, who moved to Young County in 1858, and whose brothers, Will and John, were meat contractors at old Fort Belknap when the Indians killed Washburn; others were also interviewed.

Ref.: Same as preceding chapter and Repts. of Secy. of War and Com. of Ind. affair. 1845-54.

## **PART V INDIANS OF WESTERN TEXAS**

### **CHAPTER VI RELATIONS WITH INDIANS FROM 1854-1859**

**250. Indian Reservations of Western Texas.** - February 6, 1854, the Legislature passed an act setting apart not to exceed twelve leagues of land, to be selected by the federal government at some point or points not exceeding three different places; to be used as Indian reservations.

The federal authorities soon began to search for some suitable person or persons to select a necessary site for such reservations. Very wisely they selected Capt. R. B. Marcy and Major S. Neighbors, both of whom had already seen extensive service on the frontier and were familiar with frontier affairs.

Col. Marcy, having received a communication from Washington, dated April 27, 1854, proceeded to Fort Smith, Arkansas, where orders had been previously sent to the quartermaster's department, to supply Col. Marcy and his command with necessary provisions. Col. Marcy left Fort Smith June 1, 1854, and when he reached Fort Washita, was joined by Lt. N. B. Pierce and Lt. G. Chaping, with an escort of forty men of the Seventh Infantry. From this point the command proceeded to Fort Belknap by way of the Old California Trail or Marcy's return route, which he himself established in 1849. Col. Marcy and his men reached Fort Belknap July 12, 1854, and were joined at this point by Maj. Neighbors who had been waiting for several days to join the expedition. Major Neighbors had with him

Delaware guides, interpreters and hunters, and during the several days he had been waiting at old Fort Belknap, he capitalized his time by conferring with the chiefs of the Caddos, Ionis, Anadarkos, and other tribes, then camped near the mouth of Big Caddo in Palo Pinto County in Village Bend, southeast of Palo Pinto and at other points.

After the arrival of Col. Marcy and his command, a council was again called and the chiefs and representatives of local tribes were invited to attend. The Caddos, Ionis, Anadarkos and other tribes told Col. Marcy and Major Neighbors, that since they had from time to time been moved from place to place by the white men, they were exceedingly well pleased to be permitted to be permanently established; that they would prefer a location where they now lived, but if that could not be granted, they were willing to go where the whites suggested, at any other point below Fort Belknap, but they further stated that they could not consent to go farther west, as they would then be at the mercy of the wild tribes, who from time to time would take all their cattle and crops and probably kill them in event of their making a resistance. At that time most of the territory west of Fort Belknap was under the undisputed control of the Comanches. Consequently, the Caddos, Ionis, Anadarkos, Shawnees, and other tribes who were less roving, were unwilling to be placed in the Comanches' territory. These friendly tribes said that if removed to that section, there would be but one alternative - to remain where they are in disobedience to the orders of the United States government, or go into a country where they would be plundered of all of their possessions and left to die a lingering death from starvation; and that they preferred remaining where they were, and die with the whites rather than die within the hands of the Comanches, and again and again these peaceable tribes of Indians strongly emphasized their desire of being located somewhere on the Brazos below old Fort Belknap. These Indians called the attention of Captain Marcy and Major Neighbors, to the fact that before Fort Belknap was established, the Comanches frequently made raids down the Brazos to their villages and demanded of them all their corn, food and other property and left them empty-handed. Jose Maria, the chief of the Anadarkos and Ionis stated that he was perfectly conscious of the fact that their great Father, the President, had in his power to send them wherever he desired, but that they preferred to remain below Fort Belknap, and that as soon as a location was made, he and his people were ready to move to their new home. Tinier, the young chief of the Caddos, who were at that time located on the present Boydston ranch in Palo Pinto County, concurred in the views of Jose Maria.

The party left Fort Belknap July 15th, three days after Captain Marcy arrived, and went eastward about fourteen miles to the Cotton Wood Spring, where Washburn was killed during the preceding year. The party camped here for the night, and early

the next morning started across the prairie toward the Little Wichita, which they reached on the 19th. At this point Marcy and Neighbors, in company with three Delewares and two others, left the main command and ascended this stream for a considerable distance, and until they reached a tributary upon which there were several pecan trees. This tributary they called the Pecan Fork. The expedition struck the Big Wichita twenty-five miles above its mouth during the morning of the 23rd of July, 1854. The party crossed the river and followed a large tributary upon which were observed many beaver signs; consequently, they named this stream Beaver Creek. July 28th, the party camped about ten miles south of the Big Wichita on a small tributary of the Brazos.

Major Neighbors at once recognized the place, for he stated that on a former occasion he had remained at this point for several weeks as a guest of Chief Mokachope of the Comanches, and that while here a party of northern Comanches came by from one of their forays into Old Mexico, and had had one of their number killed by the whites in Texas. Learning of his presence, these Indians demanded the several Comanches to deliver him up, but this they refused to do.

The expedition proceeded on its journey and shortly afterwards when the mountains in Stonewall County came into sight they were immediately recognized by Captain Marcy and his guide and interpreter, Black Beaver, a Delaware, as being the same mountains they had seen in 1849. The command ascended the double mountains and found a plain or platte, which resembled the Llano Estacado. It has been reported that the Double Mountains are four feet higher than the plains, and at night, the lights of Lubbock, one hundred and fifty miles away, can be seen from the summit of these high hills. After leaving this point, the party came upon a deserted camp of the Kickapoos; and their lodges, sixty-five in number, were still standing. Judging from the number of deer hides and bones nearby, they must have had a successful hunt.

August 7th Katumpsy and two of his wives visited the command. At that time Fort Chadbourne was a favorite headquarters of the Comanches and Katumpsy presented to Marcy and Neighbors a letter from the commanding officer at that post, stating Captain Van Buren died July 20, 1854, from wounds received in action; and it was believed that some of Katumpsy's men committed the murder. When questioned, Katumpsy said that the northern tribes did it, but he was of the opinion that some of his own number had been induced to join them on this hostile expedition, and that they did so against his will and advice. August 12th, about ten o'clock in the morning, the command struck the California Trail, and encamped between Fort Belknap and Fort Phantom Hill at a point ten miles east of the crossing of the Clear Fork. In due time Major Neighbors and Colonel Marcy reached the Clear Fork, and were much joyed to find evidence of

civilization in this far western Indian country.

At this point they struck the far-out frontier home of Col. Jesse Stem, who only a short time before had been murdered by the Indians, and who since 1850, had spent most of his time as one of the United States Indian agents.

Captain Marcy then passed his usual compliment upon this section of the country.

The expedition camped on the bank of the Clear Fork about one-half mile below Jesse Stem's ranch and farm. Here a large spring of delicious water was found. During the morning of the following day, Major Neighbors and Marcy ascended the Clear Fork about eight miles to the mouth of a tributary called by the Comanches Quaquahono, and by the whites Paint Creek, the name by which the stream is generally known today. They then ascended this stream to where it was crossed by the California Trail and here they camped for the night. Captain Marcy made his bed under the same tree where he had camped in 1849, and it was here he met Senaco's band of Comanches, during the above year. As the party then returned to the main command, they met two Indians of Senaco's band on this occasion. These Indians presented Marcy and Neighbors with a letter which stated that Senaco had not authorized Katumpsy to talk for him. Katumpsy himself made his appearance on the 20th.

The Indians upon learning that Captain Marcy had just arrived from Washington, were exceedingly anxious to receive news concerning the great Father, the President who resided there. The Comanches were then told that it was the wish of the great Father to establish them on a reservation where they could raise their own stock and grow their own corn, grains and vegetables. The Comanches then stated that they did not understand why it was the great Father desired them to do these things, when their forefathers for countless ages back had never been known to plant a single grain, and that they had been at liberty to move about from place to place whenever they so desired; but if it were the great Father's wishes, they were willing to give it a trial and were anxious that such a reservation be located at some nearby point on the Clear Fork.

During the morning of the following day Major Neighbors and Captain Marcy left their command for Fort Belknap, for the purpose of examining the country below the post.

The maps indicated a vacant tract of land below the mouth of the Clear Fork, and since it seemed to be the only suitable location, they turned their attention to this particular locality which lay in the southeastern portion of the present county of Young. The party went as far down as the mouth of Big Caddo, and visited young Chief Tinier, and his tribe, who were living there at that time. The Caddos, at this point, had one hundred

and fifty lodges, which were constructed by having a frame work of poles placed in a circle, bound together at the top and covered with grass and straw. These lodges were about twenty-five feet in diameter at the base and about twenty feet high, and from a distance resembled hay-stacks.

Upon examination, it was found that the strip of country in the southeastern part of Young County contained as much as eight leagues and was equally divided by the Brazos and since a network of small streams found their way to the Brazos in this section, and springs were abundant, Major Neighbors and Colonel Marcy were much pleased with the location.

After due deliberation, Major Neighbors and Colonel Marcy advised that two reservations be set apart for the Indians. They recommended that four leagues of land on the Clear Fork be set apart for the Comanches. This reservation, within the present county of Throckmorton, was known as the Comanche, or Upper Reservation. Marcy and Neighbors also recommended that a lower reservation for the remaining Texas tribes be established in accordance with their wishes, below old Fort Belknap, in the southeastern part of Young County. Eight leagues of land were surveyed for this reservation and their decision was approved by the authorities in Washington. This reservation became known as the Lower Reservation, or Brazos Agency.

#### **251. Indians Eligible to Settle Upon the Reservations. -**

In 1854, there were approximately eleven hundred Comanches in what was called the southern band, under the leadership of their principal chiefs, Katumpsy and Senaco. After the establishment of Fort Chadbourne in 1852, these chiefs, together with many of their tribes, spent much of their time near this post.

There were about thirty-five hundred Indians belonging to the middle Comanches who also spent much of their time in Texas. As we have several times mentioned, these Comanches were habitually making long forays into Old Mexico to murder, steal, and rob. Since the United States, in the treaty of Guadalupe-Hidalgo, had agreed to stop such incursions into Old Mexico, if possible, they were obligated to do everything in their power to eliminate these long forays. Colonel Marcy stated that the Comanches were sometimes absent for a year or more on such invasions.

Let us now turn our attention to the Indians to be settled on the Lower Reservation. The Ionis and Anadarkos speak the same language, often intermarry, have a common chief and occupy the same villages. According to the reports of Major Neighbors and Colonel Marcy, and others, these Indians at that time, were living on the Brazos, about forty-five miles below Fort Belknap, in the De Vaughan and Village Bends; and in the upper edge of the Lone Camp community, just across the river, west of Village

Bend. This bend of the Brazos is generally known today as Village Bend, because of this former Indian village; and arrow-points and other Indian implements can still be found near this former location of the Ionis and Anadarkos. Colonel Marcy said that in 1854 these Indians planted corn, beans, peas, and melons. Their lodges were also constructed of poles and straw, similar to that of the Caddos, previously described; and as previously stated, Jose Maria was their principal chief. The Wacos and allied tribes, according to Colonel Marcy's report, at that time, were living in Oklahoma. But a few years before, they had been living near the Caddo village, at the mouth of Big Caddo. The Tonkawas, whose village for a long time was in the vicinity of the present city of Meridian and Valley Mills, scattered portions of the Shawnees, Delewares, etc., were also in readiness, to settle on the Lower Reservation, or Brazos Agency.

**252. Robert S. Neighbor's Report for 1854.** - The condition of Indian affairs on the frontier during 1854, was portrayed in the report of Major Robert S. Neighbors. Concerning the Texas Indians at that time, Major Neighbors said:

"San Antonio, Texas. September 16, 1854.

"Since the date of my last annual report, there have been no serious changes in the condition of our Indian relations. The tribes, then friendly, are still so, although there have been more or less difficulties with individual members of each tribe during the year, which have been regularly reported to the department.

"I very much regret that it has been impossible to complete the surveys of the reservations and remove the Indians on to the lands in time to furnish the bureau with a correct list of those that will settle down at once. There were with us at the time the lands were selected, the Principal chiefs of the Ionis, Anadarkos, and southern Comanches; and from the favor that the measure meets with by all, I feel assured that the number of settlers will equal, if not exceed the number estimated for; and Special Agent Howard represents the Indians of his agency on the western frontier as equally friendly to that measure, and I feel assured that the result will equal our expectations, and afford permanent relief to our frontier. I find that the measure meets with the approbation of and will be sustained by our frontier settlers; at the same time this will relieve us on our immediate borders. I would respectfully urge upon the General Government some more definite action in regard to the large bodies of northern Comanches, Kiowas, and the Indians residing east of the Red River, heretofore referred to, as they cannot possibly be embraced in the contemplated settlement. And I would most respectfully refer you to Colonel R. B. Marcy, United States Army, who this summer, has had an opportunity of making himself familiar with the exact condition of our Indian

affairs, for suggestions in regard to them, and would commend his suggestions, as he will visit Washington in person, to your most favorable consideration."

**253. Jesse Stem.** - By virtue of an order from the office of Indian Affairs, dated November 25, 1850, Jesse Stem, of Piffin, Ohio, was appointed special Indian Agent for the Department of Texas. In this capacity he served for several years and many of the early reports made during the early fifties were made by Jesse Stem. Since his duties were largely confined to the Upper Brazos, and since he was much pleased with this section of the State, sometime prior to this death he established a ranch on the Clear Fork not far from the Comanche Indian Reservation, and near old Camp Cooper.

Early in 1854 Ed Terrell, father of J. B. Terrell, lived at Fort Worth, and was hauling about six or seven wagons of corn, oats, flour, etc., to Fort Belknap; these wagons were pulled by oxen, and when they reached a point somewhere between the present cities of Weatherford and Jacksboro, they were joined by Jesse Stem, who had retired as an Indian agent and a Mr. Lepperman, one of his personal friends from Ohio. Major Stem and Lepperman stayed with Mr. Terrell's train of wagons until they reached a point within about eight or ten miles east of old Fort Belknap and near Salt Creek, when the two decided to proceed in advance of the wagons, which were heavily loaded and moving along slowly. At this point on Salt Creek, Mr. Terrell decided to stop for dinner, but since Jesse Stem and Mr. Lepperman were anxious to reach their destination, they could not be induced to remain, for dinner, but hurried on toward old Fort Belknap. When they reached a point about four miles east of the post, near the present Stem's Gap, the two were ambushed and killed by Indians. Stem's Gap derived its name from the murder of Jesse Stem near this point. There seems to be a slight difference of opinion concerning who first found Jesse Stem and his friend Mr. Lepperman. John Peveler, who was a meat contractor at the post, had a cattle pen not a great distance from where Stem was killed on the Fort Worth and Fort Belknap Road. It is certain that when Mr. Terrell and his associates reached the point, they found the bodies of the two men murdered by the Indians. It seems that John Peveler was also an early arrival on the scene, but which of the two reached them first, we are unable to state.

This dastardly deed was traced to the door of the Kickapoos, who were at the time, camped in Oklahoma.

The bodies of Major Stem and his companion were buried near old Fort Belknap, and about 1910, the remains of Major Stem were removed from old Fort Belknap to Washington, D. C. where they were buried with honors.

Ref.: Before writing this section, the author personally

interviewed J. B. Terrell, an aged son of Ed. Terrell; F. M. Peveler, a brother of John Peveler, a meat contractor at Fort Belknap when Major Stem was massacred. Detailed accounts of these killings were also made by Major Robert S. Neighbors and Captain R. B. Marcy. See page 159, Rep't. Com. of Indian Affairs, 1854; U. S. Sen. Ex-Doc, Vol. 12, No. 60, 35th Con., 1st and 2nd Ses., 1855-56.

**254. Mr. Ferg and Tom Neil, Sr.** - During the early days of Gillespie County, Mr. Ferg lived on South Grape Creek, about ten miles south of Fredericksburg. Tom Neil lived on the Pedernales. One morning in 1854, Mr. Ferg was out a short distance from his home, perhaps in search of his stock. At the unexpected moment, he was brutally murdered by the Indians. Tom Neil, who was also alone and out deer-hunting, was massacred by the Indians in the evening of the same day, on Neil's Branch, which derived its name from this particular occasion.

Ref. The author personally interviewed Mr. and Mrs. F. C. Streigler, who were living in Gillespie County at the time or shortly afterwards.

**255. Fate of the Wilson Family.** - Early in 1854 Mr. and Mrs. Wilson, a newly married couple, Mr. Wilson's two brothers, about ten and twelve years of age, in company with others, were making the overland journey to El Paso. The reports concerning the fate of the Wilson family and their associates, are somewhat meager and indistinct. It seems, however, they camped near the Delaware Spring, and during the night their horses were stolen. The following day the several white men in a party took the Indian trail, and all were killed except one or two who lived to tell of the sad fate of their comrades. They found their way back to the camp, and reported to Mrs. Wilson the sad news of the death of her husband. Before the remaining citizens safely reached the settlements they were attacked by Indians. Practically all were killed. Mrs. Wilson and her young brother-in-law, were carried away into captivity. Finally she escaped and was at the point of starvation when rescued by a band of friendly Pueblos who took her to New Mexico. February 5, 1854, the legislature of the State of Texas, appropriated five thousand dollars to be used as a reward for the rescue of Mrs. Wilson and other captives. But before the price was paid by the State of Texas for her return, the Governor of New Mexico, it seems had already rewarded her rescuers.

W. B. Parker, who accompanied Major Neighbors and Captain R. B. Marcy in 1854, when they located the Comanches and Brazos River Indian Agencies stated that during that same year, one of the Wilson boys who was left for dead by the Comanches, finally found his way into Fort Belknap, and related the horrible crime that had been committed by the hordes of the plains. Concerning this and other massacres, he said that if some of the

howlers in Congress and in the East could be out here at the post and see what the soldiers endure, they would not only hush, but would regret what had already been said.

Ref. - See notes taken during expedition commanded by R. B. Marcy U. S. A., through unexplored Texas in 1854, by W. P. Parker (1856); Memoirs of Robert E. Lee, by A. L. Long (1886); Seventy years in Texas by J. M. Franks; page 1491, Vol. III, Laws of Texas by H. P. N. Gammel.

### **256. Activities Around the Indian Reservations in 1855. -**

Although they were located and surveyed in 1854, the two Indian agencies or reservations were not opened for colonization until 1855. The Lower Reservation or Brazos Agency was first settled by Indians about the 1st of March, and the Upper Reservation or Comanche Agency, several weeks later.

The opening of these reservations was vividly described in the report of Major Robert S. Neighbors dated September 10, 1855. Among other things Major Neighbors said:

"Under your instructions of February 2, (as soon as I could possibly make the necessary arrangements), I commenced the new policy of colonizing the Texas Indians on the lands set apart for them. But it was the first of March before it was possible to commence, which was so late in the season that it was impossible to expect any considerable success in farming this year.

"As soon as the reservations were opened for settlement all the Indians immediately in the neighborhood assembled and selected their lands for farming purposes; and, although late, I instructed the special agent in charge to have some land prepared, and to assist such of the Indians as were willing to work in planting corn; the result was that there were about 400 acres of land planted, but owing to the extremely dry season experienced in this section, the yield has not been commensurate with the exertions made by the Indians to make their own bread. The Caddoes, Anadarkos, Wacos, and Tahwaccorros are the tribes who have been most forward in farming, and there is no doubt but they will, after the next crop, be able to make their own bread."

There are now settled on this reservation, as you will perceive by reference to the census rolls herewith enclosed, 794 Indians of the following tribes, to-wit: 205 Anadarkos and Ionis, 188 Caddoes, 136 Tahwaclorros, 94 Wacos, and 171 Tonkawas. They embrace a majority of the above tribes, and it is confidently expected that before the end of the present fiscal year, the whole of them will be settled down permanently. As regards the Indians already settled down on this reservation, I must say that, for good behavior, morality and industry they

have far exceeded my most sanguine expectations; there has not been, within my knowledge a single case of drunkenness, and not a gallon of spirits sold on the reservation; this is simply the result of the wishes of the Indians themselves, as there has been no police, and there has been but one deprecation committed, as far as known, upon any of the white settlers in the neighborhood; when application was made to the chief, the offender was immediately given up and reparation made. I must say, that a more peaceful and quiet settlement does not exist in any portion of Texas than is now found on this reservation, and all that visit it are astonished at the progress made by the Indians in the arts of civilized life. So far as the tribes above named are concerned, the policy now pursued can no longer be called an experiment.

"There are now settled on the reservation on the Clear Fork of the Brazos, 277 Comanches. The season was so far advanced before they could be located that it was impossible to commence farming operation this season, but from the disposition evidenced by them, and the willingness with which they have submitted to all the requisitions of the agents, and from their anxiety to remain as permanent settlers, I have no doubt of success in their settlement, and that in a short time the whole southern band will settle down. You will perceive, by the census roll, that their numbers are gradually increasing. It has been very difficult to do away with the mistrust engendered by the military movements last winter; and it will require time and great care to make them understand the advantages of the present policy. I do not consider our exertions, so far, a test of what may be done to settle them down as they were only removed to their lands about the first of June, and the changes in the Indian agents have rendered it impossible to give them a resident agent on the reservation; consequently, their settlement has not, as yet, assumed that degree of permanency which is apparent on the Lower Reservation. Having to devote my whole time to the duties that should be properly discharged by the resident agents, I have had no opportunity of negotiating with any of the bands who are now absent. I confidently expect, during the present fall, a large increase to the Comanche settlements; I have been for about two months in correspondence with the chief, Senaco, who went off last winter; he has promised to come in this fall. In accordance with your instructions, to establish temporary rules for the government of the reservations, I, in concert with Special Agent Hill, have done so; the Indians acknowledging the treaty of 1846 as still binding, I deemed it most proper to base our action on that treaty, and to place the additional articles, deemed necessary for the government of the Indians settled down, as a supplement to that treaty."

**257. Elijah Skidmore.** - Elijah Skidmore was one of the first settlers to locate in the vicinity of old Fort Belknap. Mr. Skidmore, at that time, lived about one mile north of the

present town of Eliasville, and September 14, 1855, was out about one-half mile, cutting poles to floor a crib. Prior to his departure from home, he ordered his negro to bring the ox-team and ox-wagon. But Mr. Skidmore was alone, unarmed, and attacked by the Indians before the negro arrived. The Indians stripped off all of Mr. Skidmore's clothes but his shoes, wounded his body about seventeen times and took his scalp. Almost invariably the Indians left a sock or shoe on one or both feet. Soon after the occurrence, the negro came slowly driving the oxen, and it is believed that the cracking of his long ox-whip frightened the Indians away.

Ref. - Prior to writing this section, the author personally interviewed F. M. Peveler, whose brothers, Will and John, were beef contractors at Fort Belknap at the time. Further Ref.: Rep'ts. of Comm. of Indian Affairs 1855; Sec. of War, 1858; corresponded with a granddaughter of M. Skidmore.

**258. Early Fight in the Llano Section.** - About 1855, the first settlers of Llano County that moved into the vicinity of the present county seat, congregated together and washed their clothes. Shortly afterwards when such garments were drying, the Indians came along and carried them away. Frank Holden, Jack Holden, Pleas Oatman, M. Barber, and about two others, followed the Indians to the northwest portion of the county where they found the Indians in camp. In the fight that followed, several Indians were reported killed, and the clothes recovered.

Ref. - Prior to writing this article, the author personally interviewed Uncle Ike Maxwell, of Bluffton, who was living in the county at that time.

**259. Progress of Indian Reservations During 1856.** - September 18, 1856, on the Lower Reservation, or Brazos Agency, there were 948 resident Indians, or an increase of 154 over the preceding year. On the Upper Reservation, or Comanche Agency, reports show 557 settlers, or an increase of 280 over the preceding year.

In 1856, 540 acres of land were under cultivation at the Brazos Agency, and 200 on the Upper Reservation.

These Indians on the Lower Reservation were, of course, segregated; the village of the Ionis and Anadarkos at one place, the Tonkaways at another, etc. Concerning these several Indian villages Mr. S. P. Ross in his report dated September 30, 1856, among other things said:

"The Indians at the several villages have neat cottages with good gardens and fields adjacent, and the many conveniences to be seen on every hand gave me abundant evidence of the progress made by the Indians since their settlement. The Caddos and the Anadarkos show a desire of the adoption of the

customs of the white men. They have always held themselves ready and willing to assist in rescuing any property stolen from the citizens on this frontier by the roving bands of hostile Indians. I also noticed that these Indians are conquering to a great extent their old disposition for roving."

In 1855, John R. Baylor was appointed Special Indian Agent over the Upper or Comanche Reservation. Concerning these Indians during 1856, among other things Colonel Baylor said:

"In entering upon the discharge of my duties as Indian Agent, at this place one year ago, I found two hundred and seventy-seven Indians. They were wild, restless and discontented, and it was with difficulty they could be induced to remain on the reservation. At that time I had no means of enforcing my authority and was compelled to use conciliatory measures altogether. I had, it is true, a detachment of infantry from Fort Belknap that gave protection to myself, and the government employees, but was of no use in controlling the Indians, who being well mounted could come and go at pleasure. The arrival of the calvary about the 1st of January, had a very beneficial effect indeed, and since that time I have had little trouble in controlling the Indians. Their numbers have greatly increased and they began to feel they are safe and will be protected in all their rights, as well as from the attack of hostile Indians and from imposition from the whites. They soon planted their crops consisting of melons, corn, beans, peas, pumpkins, etc., which they cultivated remarkably well, and but for the extreme draught, would have made an abundance to answer their wants."

Robert S. Neighbors in his report of 1856 said:

"Early last spring our whole frontier was thrown into great alarm by the frequent depredations committed by Indians, and several murders were committed, and a large number of horses were stolen from the vicinity of San Antonio and our western settlements. In order to check these depredations and to ascertain to what tribes they belonged, it became necessary to confine the Indians (actually settlers) by a concerted action between the Agent and the Military to the reserves and to declare all Indians outside of the reserves, hostile. By a strict adherence to this policy, the hostile bands have been checked and some thirty or forty killed and our frontier has for the last three months enjoyed quiet never heretofore known. This state of things is mainly attributed to the energetic action of the second calvary under the command of Col. Albert Sidney Johnson, who arrived on this frontier about the 1st of January last."

Major Neighbors further said:

"There is still maintained on the Comanche Reserve, a Military Post (Camp Cooper) of two companies of second calvary, and two companies of infantry. The influence exercised by them and the protection given to the Indians, has been very advantageous in giving a permanency to our Indian settlements."

It will be recalled that Camp Cooper was established under the command of General Robert E. Lee, and at various times from 1856 to 1860, he was stationed at this post, to assist in the management of the Indian Reserves, and protection of the frontier.

In 1856, an urgent need was felt for an Indian Reservation at some point west of the Pecos, for the Lipans and other Indians in that section. Consequently, February 4, 1856, the legislature set apart five additional leagues to be located at some suitable point in this territory. This reservation, however, was never established.

**260. Jesse Lawhon.** - During the month of July, 1855, Jesse Lawhon was working for Judge Jones and living on his ranch, which was about seventeen miles northeast of Boerne, in Kendall County. One morning Jesse Lawhon, in company with Cleburne Jones, a negro, was out in search of stock, when they were suddenly charged by five Indian warriors. They were unarmed. One of the Indians took after the negro boy and the other four after Mr. Lawhon. The negro boy became so excited, when he reached the creek, he decided to quit his horse so he could make more speed. Jesse Lawhon was chased for a considerable distance, his horse plunged down a bluff thirty feet high and he was finally killed.

Ref. - Author interviewed F. C. Kaiser and others who were living in Kendall County when this tragedy occurred. Also reviewed Wilbarger's Indian Depredations; A. J. Sowell's, Texas Indian Fighters.

**261. A. J. Dixon and Others Experience on the Plains in 1856.** - During July of the above year, A. J. Nixon, Wiley Joy, John Joy, Gundy Ake, and a train of emigrants numbering about fifty or sixty, were traveling through West Texas over the Old California Trail, toward the Golden Gate. When they reached a point not a great distance from the present Colorado City, the Indians stole about twenty head of cattle belonging to Mr. Nixon, and stock belonging to others. The trail of these Indians was followed by soldiers and about two days later, a running fight followed. Several Indians were killed and at least one captured. This captured Indian could speak English and he told the army officers the Indians had followed the above emigrant train for several days, and that it had been their plans and intentions to murder as many of the emigrants as possible, when they reached the Horsehead Crossing of the Pecos.

This train of emigrants proceeded until they reached the Big Spring. Since water was scarce and they were threatened by Indians, the homeseekers decided to change their course. Some went to Old Mexico, and others settled in the western Part of Gillespie County. This number included the Wileys, Joys, Nixons and others, who suffered so severely in the hands of the savages.

Ref. - Before writing this story, the author personally interviewed W. Nixon, who was one of the members of the above emigrant train.

**262. Indian Affairs on the Frontier in 1857.** - As cautiously as the early cowmen handled wild cattle in a corral, the United States Indian agents on the reserves were exercising greater caution to civilize the wild savages of the plains. But to humanize the hostile tribes, was indeed a Herculean task. In a letter, dated April 12, 1856, Robert E. Lee, writing to his family from Camp Cooper, said:

"We are on the Comanche Reserve with the Indians camped below us on the river, bellowing to Katumpsy's band, whom the government is endeavoring to humanize. It will be uphill work, I fear."

**263. Massacre of Creath Renfro, and Son, Francis Renfro.** - Creath Renfro was born in Iowa, December 2, 1806. He married Susan McMahan, and in 1849, together with his family, moved to Texas. During 1857, the Renfros moved to a point about three miles southwest of Cranfill Gap, and established a stock farm in the corners of the present Bosque, Coryell, and Hamilton Counties. Francis had improved a place. He and his father went early one morning to find the stock, for they were going back to their former home, six miles from Lancaster, where Francis was to be married. David Conway was also sent out in search of the same stock, but he went one direction, and Mr. Renfro and his son another. Conway found the horses, drove them home and put them in the corral. He then hitched up an ox team and started toward Lancaster, thinking that Mr. Renfro and his son would soon overtake him. Later during the same morning, the horse Francis had been riding ran home, and was smeared with blood. A searching party was soon sent out, and his body was found in a short time where Francis had been massacred by the Indians. Mr. Renfro, however, could not be found. For three or four days the settlers of that section searched in vain. Mrs. Renfro afterwards stated that for three years she never heard the dogs bark unless she thought perhaps it were her lost husband returning home. About three years later, some cowmen found the body of Mr. Renfro where he had died on Neil's Creek about three or four miles southwest of Cranfill's Gap. After being mortally wounded he rode his horse into a thicket at this point, unsaddled his horse, and made

a bed out of his saddle and overcoat, on which he lay, nobody knows how long, mortally wounded and finally died. He was identified by the initials on his saddle and his pocket knife. Where he was found was an extremely brushy place, and if some thirsty stockmen had not come to this point for water, no doubt, it would have been considerably later before his remains were discovered.

David Conway reached Lancaster before he learned of the misfortune of Mr. Renfro and his son. The news of their death had a shocking effect on the entire Texas frontier, for their massacre marked the beginning of a long and bitter conflict waged with West Texas Indians.

An investigation of this tragedy was made among the Indians of the several government agencies, and according to early reports, it was done by the Kickapoos, who were ever known to be treacherous; but still professed to be a friendly tribe. Some of the early frontiersmen were of the opinion that Indians of the Texas Reservation, played an important part in the killing of Mr. Renfro and his son.

Ref. - Before writing this section, the author conversed and corresponded with Mrs. M. S. Murphy, a granddaughter of Creath Renfro, O. M. Braunsted, J. M. Robertson, Frank Gholson, Mrs. Swenson, Jacob Olston, and several others who were living in Bosque, Coryell, Hamilton and other adjoining counties at the time, or shortly afterwards. The author drove several hundred miles to gather the facts for this single story.

**264. The Fight of F. M. Kell, Robert Renfro and Others.** - Because the Indians were almost constantly stealing horses on the frontier, and because of the death of Mr. Renfro and his son, the citizens were now in arms ready to attack any invading enemy. During the latter part of 1857, or early in 1858, S. M. Kell, Robert Renfro, a son of Creath Renfro, Abe Kell, Jim Babbs, Anderson and Rusk Cranfill, were out near the Lookout Mountain, in search of Indians. From the summit of this hill, Mr. Kell discovered a band of five warriors leaving the settlements with a drove of stolen horses. The six citizens immediately charged, and a running fight followed.

S. M. Kell singled out the Indian leader who was armed with a Spanish steel lance and whose body was protected by a bright steel. A bitter conflict followed, but the Indian, who managed his horse, steel, and spear with the greatest of dexterity, finally made his escape. One by one, the other Indians were killed. The fourth and last that was shot down, rose again and leaned against a tree, ready to fight again with his bow and arrows. But to avenge the death of his father and brother, Robert Renfro was permitted to end this Indian's career. Robert, Sylvester and Geo. Renfro, sons of Creath Renfro, hung three Indian scalps in their father's smoke house to avenge the death of their beloved

father and brother.

Ref. - The author interviewed, Don Holland, Mrs. M. F. Murphy, and others who were living on the frontier at the time, or shortly after this fight occurred. We are also indebted to H. J. and C. M. Cureton for information furnished in their sketch of the early history of Bosque County. (1904).

**265. William Lewis.** - About the time, or shortly after the killing of Creath and Francis Renfro, the Indians also massacred William Lewis, in Brown County. John H. Chrisman and William Lewis, who were warm friends, moved from Arkansas to Coryell County in 1854. Shortly afterwards, Mr. Lewis moved over into Lampasas, and during the year of 1857, moved on out into Brown County. In a short time he was massacred by Indians, and about one hundred and fifty head of his horses driven away. When his faithful friend, John Christman, head of the tragedy, he saddled his horse and rode about eighty miles to look after the interest of Mr. Lewis' family.

Ref. - The author interviewed with: Mrs. R. J. Logan, a daughter of H. Christman, who remembers the occurrence; Harve Adams, who reference: 70 Years in Texas, by J. M. Franks.

**266. William Holden.** - During 1857, or early in 1858, William Holden was staying with his brother Frank, who then lived on the Clear Fork, nearly twenty miles north of Breckenridge. The father of William and Frank was old Uncle (Dicky) Holden, who at the time, lived about three or four miles east of Springtown.

William went out from home in search of some stock, and was killed by Indians. The crime was traced to the Comanches living on the Upper Reservation. A demand was made for the guilty Indian and he was produced by Katumpsy, and the other Indians. William Holden's pistol was also recovered, and unmistakably identified. He had previously written the number of his gun in a note book and the number, No. 14271, on the pistol corresponded exactly with the number in the notebook. The pistol was identified in other ways. This was the first bloodshed in Stephens County after the arrival of the first settlers.

Ref. -The author interviewed Geo. Tackett, of Springtown, A. C. Tackett, of Gerard, L. L. Tackett, of Leedy, Oklahoma. Also interviewed James Clark and others who were living in Young and adjoining counties at the time, and shortly afterwards.

**267. Salt Mountain Fight of 1857.** - During the above year, Don Cox, Tom Deaton, Bailey Marshall, and three or four others followed Indians from Comanche County to Salt Mountain, about twelve miles northeast of Brownwood. At this point the savages were located and a short fight followed. Don Cox killed a warrior who had a chain of Mexican coins fastened to the back

of his head, and so long, the coins almost dragged on the ground.

Ref. - Author interviewed Joel Nabors, Dave and Dick Cunningham, and others who were living in Comanche County when this fight occurred.

**268. Spencer Goss and Others Fight With Indians in Kerr County in 1857.** - During the above year, after making a raid in the vicinity of Kerrville, the Indians retreated up the river and secreted themselves in the Guadalupe Mountains. Spencer Goss, William Kelso, Jack Herridge, Tom Wherry, Tom McAdams, Dan Murff and Newt Price, pursued the Indians for about twenty-five miles. They then stopped to cut a bee tree, and later evidences indicated their presence was already known to the savages. Night was now approaching and the weather was cold. The Texans, still unaware that their presence was known to the Indians, encamped in a ticket and built a huge bonfire to drive away the shivering chills of the crispy night. About the break of day, Tom Wherry and Dan Murff arose, rekindled the fire and went in search of a deer. Shortly afterwards the others were also warming around the fire. All of their guns were propped against a tree about twenty yards away. Several Indians slipped up and after taking possession of the guns and at the unexpected moment, charged the men standing around the fire. So sudden and severe was the attack, the citizens who were now only armed with sixshooters, became completely demoralized. But Kelso shot an Indian who fell near the fire, Murff and Wherry, who were out hunting a deer, heard the firing and returned immediately to the assistance of their comrades. Murff ran almost among the Indians, and unfortunately had to fire. It is generally believed he was shot down by one of his own men and died almost instantly. Wherry was wounded in the breast with an arrow, and forced to retreat into the thick timber. When the Indians charged, Spencer Goss was sitting near the fire, and the discharge of an Indian's gun broke his right limb below the knee. Kelso was severely wounded with an arrow, but was able to remove the weapon and retreat into the timber. Tom McAdams was pierced with an arrow through his wind pipe, but also made his escape. Newt Price who was standing with his back to the Indians, received a discharge of buckshot in his shoulder. Jack Herridge was forced to flee without his shoes, and was the only one to escape uninjured, and when he reached the settlement his feet were so badly bruised, they were solid sores. The horses of Murff and Wherry had been released to graze when they started for deer, and when the firing started, their ponies became so excited they ran away and safely reached Kerrville. All the other horses fell into the hands of the Indians. After the fight, Kelso, Wherry and McAdams managed to get together, and wounded as they were, started towards Kerrville. Goss and Price escaped into the same mott of timber, but at first, their presence was unknown to each other. When Goss regained consciousness, he called for his companions and

was answered by Price. The two, in their wounded condition, then went about a mile and secreted themselves in a cave. Price, who was able to walk the following morning, proposed to go to Kerrville and send aid, but when he went about ten miles he died. But Goss' whereabouts still remained a mystery, for searching parties were unable to find him. He remained in the cave eighteen days, hoping every hour that Price, whose death was unknown to Goss, would send someone to his assistance. During this time he lived on grapes and haws. He finally decided, however, he would make an effort to use a forked stick and hobble homeward. And in this way for several days he traveled.

But Goss became so fatigued, he sat down and leaned against a large tree. Judge Patton, a friend, who was out on a bear hunt, accidentally found him in this position, and assisted him to a camp eight miles above Kerrville. In the meantime, however, searching parties had found his trail and would have located Mr. Goss shortly afterwards. The bones of Price were found by a hunter two years later. When Kelso extracted an arrow from his body, he did not realize the spike remained in the wound, which did not heal for twenty years, or longer, so Kelso had a surgeon to operate and remove an iron arrow point from his side. Kelso then soon recovered.

Note: The author interviewed Mrs. Spencer Goss, the wife of the man who remained in the cave for eighteen days, Mr. Wharton, Mrs. Moore, Steven McElroy, and others who were living in Kerr County at the time, or shortly afterwards. Further reference Texas Indian Fighters by A. J. Sorrell.

**269. Fight of B. F. Gholson and Others in 1857.** - During the month of May of the above year, B. F. Gholson and William Burton left the old Blue Water Hole Ranch owned by Albert Gholson, to ride the range for cattle. When the two rode upon a divide overlooking the Colorado River, they saw other cowmen working with their stock in the valley below, and it was soon discovered they were Aaron Burlison, James Van Winkle, and Wm. Sneed Sr. The five cowmen then took a northeast course, and when they had gone about one mile, from their position on the hill, discovered about thirteen Indians driving horses in the valley. These Indians were about a mile away, and at first thought to be cowmen. When Mr. Gholson and his companions were within five hundred yards of the copper colored horse thieves, the Indians halted and began to hideously paint their faces for war. One of their number was sent ahead to stop the herd of stock. The citizens dismounted and staked their horses in a nearby ravine on the side of the mountain. Hideously painted and screaming like demons, the twelve Indians then made a dash toward the Texans. But when the whites failed to fire the warriors circled and rode back to their original position. Another charge was made and this time the citizens shot one of the Indians from his horse. The wounded savage was carried away by his companions, who soon halted and again began to

put on more paint for war. A third charge was made and this time, two Indians were shot from their horses, and while being recovered by others, a third was shot. The three warriors were then carried back to the starting point. The Indians then held a "pow-wow" for about forty-five minutes; and no doubt, decided they had better leave the whites alone, for they rode away. The frontiersmen made their charge and the retreating Indians were followed to the summit of the mountain. The stolen horses were recovered, but the Indians successfully carried their wounded away. This fight, which occurred about three miles west of the ranch of B. F. Gholson's father, exemplified how the whites could almost invariably whip an overwhelming number of Indians, if they would only stand their ground. But their hideous appearance after being painted for war, and their hysterical screams, were often too much for the nerves of some of the early citizens.

Ref. - Author interviewed B. F. Gholson, mentioned above. No doubt this was this veteran old frontiersman's initial experience in Indian warfare.

**270. John Pruett Beene and Negro.** - John Pruett Beene and his negro, Dan Beene, early in the morning of December 30, 1857, left Mr. Beene's home on Resley's Creek, in Comanche County, where Mr. Beene had lived for about one year. Previously he had lived near the present Coryell City, in Coryell County. The Beene home on Resley's Creek, was about two and a half miles east of the present town of Lampkin. Mr. Beene, accompanied by his negro, had started to his former home in Coryell County, and the two were riding in a wagon pulled by two yoke of oxen. This wagon contained only a few empty sacks and nothing more. A gray saddled pony was led behind. When Mr. Beene and his negro reached a point about fourteen miles east and were near the present town of Fairy, in Hamilton County, both were attacked by the Indians and killed. Mr. Beene's negro Dan, had always said that in event he should be with his master when the Indians charged, he would never desert him. Reports differ concerning how long they lay before they were found. But it was perhaps sometime during the succeeding day. Mr. Beene's gun had been fired at the Indians, and after he had been mortally wounded, the same weapon was broken over his head. The body of the negro lay nearby. The Indians took the wagon sheet and empty sacks, but they never molested the oxen. When Mr. Beene was discovered, his wagon was hung up to a tree and the yoke of oxen which were still fastened to the wagon, were nearly starved. The murder of Mr. Beene occurred the day before the killing of Peter Johnson, related in the succeeding section; but the death of Mr. Johnson became known first, and scouts who trailed the Indians from the point from where Mr. Johnson had been killed, soon found the body of Mr. Beene and his negro. Mr. Beene was buried near his home on Resley's Creek, and after his massacre, a gap nearby became known as Beene's Gap.

Ref. - Before writing this section, the author interviewed C. B. (Curt) Beene, and Mrs. J. A. Oglesby of Cottonwood in Callahan County. Each of them are the aged children of Mr. Beene. Also interviewed Geo. Crawford, Mr. Beene's son-in-law, Geo. White, and J. M. Robertson of Hamilton and Meridian, respectively. Also interviewed several others. Further reference: Wiibargers Indian Depredations in Texas, and Indian Fights on the Texas Frontier, by E. L. Deaton. The author rode several hundred miles to gather the facts for this and the succeeding story.

**271. Peter Johnson Sr., and Son, Peter Johnson Jr.** - Peter Cartwright Johnson and son, Peter Jr., who was ten years of age, had been to Meridian to the mill and for supplies, and were returning to their home, which was also in Comanche County. When they reached a point near Johnson's Peak in Hamilton County, which was about seven miles from the place where Mr. Beene and the negro had been killed during the preceding day, they were attacked by Indians, Mr. Johnson killed and the boy carried into captivity. He was also driving oxen, and after his death, the Indians ripped open the sacks, poured the grain on the ground, and took the sacks away.

The Indians, as usual, after this massacre, took a northwesterly course, and when they reached a point about fifty or sixty miles distant, perhaps, somewhere in the present Callahan County, Peter Johnson Jr., the boy ten years of age, was stripped of a part of his clothing and turned loose to starve. His mother had always told him that in event he became lost, to follow the cows and they would pilot him home, and fortunately, to this point the Indians had also driven a number of cattle, one of which had been killed for beef. Among the cattle was an old gentle belled cow that the boy singled out as his temporary godmother. When the cows would stop and rest, so would Peter Jr., and when the cows traveled, he traveled. For nine days he wandered in the wilds of West Texas. Those early settlers the author interviewed concerning this affair differed about the details of Peter Jr.'s food while he was lost. One of the very best of authorities told the author that he had heard Peter Johnson Jr., himself say he suckled the old milk cow, and also milked milk in his mouth, and that this was all that kept him alive. But this is denied by other good authorities, who claimed that he subsisted on herbs while he followed the milk cows home. As to the correctness of these contrasting stories, we do not know. But the former seems exceedingly plausible, and is perhaps the first thing the boy would think to do.

After he had been lost for nine days, Dave Roberts and other cowmen accidentally came across Peter Johnson Jr., wandering through the woods at a point about six miles west of the present city of Dublin. When found he was so weak he was hardly able to walk, but he soon recovered and lived up until recent years, a valued citizen of Comanche County.

Ref. - Dave and R. T. Cunningham, D. P. (Pat) Lester, Joel Nabers, Mr. and Mrs. W. R. Johnson, all of Comanche County. Also interviewed several others. Further reference: Willbarger's Indian Depredations in Texas; Early Days in Central Texas, by F. M. Cross; Indian Fights on the Texas Frontier, by E. L. Deaton; Seventy Years in Texas, by J. M. Franks, etc. The author drove several hundred miles to gather the facts for this and the preceding story.

**272. Relations With Indians on the Reserves and Elsewhere in 1858.** - During this year there were three hundred and seventy-two Comanches on the Upper Reserve, to compare with four hundred and twenty-four, during the preceeding year, and June 30, 1858, there were one thousand one hundred and twelve Indians on the Lower Reserve to contrast with one thousand and fourteen during the preceding year. Since the Comanches were beginning to show considerable hostility perhaps that had a tendency to show their decrease in population.

On the Comanche Agency or Upper Reservation, a public school for the Indians was being taught by Richard Sloan, and about forty Indian children attended. During the same time, Z. Combes conducted the school on the Brazos Agency and had sixty scholars under his supervision. Forty-seven of these were Indian boys, and the remainder, Indian girls.

Altho the Indians had shown some considerable progress, the efforts of the Government to civilize the several hostile tribes were beginning to look somewhat gloomy. For the Comanches, and other tribes were evidently preparing to wage another war against the West Texas settlements. Since many of the Comanches and other Indians lived on the headwaters of the Texas streams, in the Texas Panhandle, Oklahoma, and elsewhere, it was but natural the news of their hostile attitude was received at Fort Arbuckle, in Oklahoma. Concerning their hostility, Capt. W. E. Prince addressed the following communication to the Department of Texas:

"Headquarters, Port Arbuckle, C. N.  
August 9, 1858.

"Sir: I have the honor to state that the Wichita chiefs report that large bands of Comanches, Apaches, Cheyennes, and other wild tribes of Indians are collected on the Canadian, near Antelope Hills, and the raids recently been made upon the settlements of this nation are for the purpose of procuring horses to make an incursion upon the frontier of Texas.

"As these declarations are supported by the concurrent opinion of all the friendly Indians of this region, and generally entertained by others, I deem it important information for the Commanding General of the Department of Texas.

"Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

W. E. PRINCE, Captain 1st Infantry, Commanding.

To: Assistant Adjutant General,

Department of Texas, San Antonio, Texas."

This communication was duly received by Brevet Major General David E. Twiggs, then in command of the Department of Texas. He in turn forwarded the same to military headquarters in New York, and among other things in his own report dated September 17, 1858, General Twiggs had the following to say concerning Texas Indians:

"Indications along the frontier as well in Texas as outside, auger a general war with the Comanches, Kickapoos and such other hostile tribes of Indians as they can induce to join them, and that they will operate united against the frontier of Texas. It is said a council of the different tribes has been held this summer and such was the determination. From the Rio Grande reports are numerous of depredations and murders in Mexico; the river is, of course, no barrier to their crossing on this side, as the Rio Grande can be forded at this season of the year anywhere."

This feeling of hostility, even invaded the Comanche Reservation. August 31, 1858, most of the Comanche Indians, including many of the women, rose in arms and openly rebelled against the Indian agents and soldiers. For a time it appeared there would be much bloodshed, but conditions soon partly adjusted themselves.

During 1858 the Indians had begun to depredate along the northern and western Texas frontier, on an extensive scale. Many people were massacred and hundreds of heads of horses were carried into captivity.

**273. Cameron and Mason Massacre.** - William Cameron and Tom Mason were among the first settlers in the Los Valley country westward of Jacksboro. About the 17th of April, A. D., 1858, four white men, one of whom was redheaded, and approximately twenty Indians came upon William Cameron and his two sons who were plowing in a nearby field. Mrs. Cameron and the remaining three children, at the time, were in the house. Mr. Cameron and one son was almost immediately massacred in the field, and the second son killed just over the fence on the outside. They then charged the home which was only a short distance away. Mrs. Cameron and the three children in the house were made prisoners and carried to a point about one-half mile northwest of the house on top of a hill, and here far out on the frontier she was fiendishly assaulted and massacred in a manner known only to savages and pioneer

settlers. She was brutally murdered in the presence of the children, two of whom were unmolested. But the third child called "Tom", who was eight years of age, was tied to a wild mule and carried by the Indians into captivity. The remaining two children after experiencing these horrible scenes, returned back to the home and barred the doors with chairs. Who knows how much these little children suffered ?

Near the Cameron home also lived Tom Mason and his family, at whose log cabin home the bloody hand prints of the renegade whites and barbarians of the plains also related a horrible story. It is not definitely known whether the Indians visited the Cameron or Mason home first. But since they were close together, it is not unlikely the two were charged simultaneously. Mrs. Mason was a daughter of Isaac Lynn, who lived several miles away. The day following these horrible scenes, he decided to ride over to the home of his daughter, Mrs. Mason. But when he rode in sight of the house, Mr. Lynn was astounded to see the bodies of his daughter and her husband lying dead on the ground - about one hundred yards from their home. Neither was that all. He was almost paralyzed when he saw his six or seven months old grandchild crawling over its mother's broken body, and bathing in her blood. This infant was almost starved. It seems Mr. Mason had been unable to get his gun to fire, so a box of caps found near the body of Mrs. Mason, would indicate that she was trying to reach her husband. Mr. Lynn then went to the house where he found Tobe Mason, age 3, fast asleep; he then hurried over to the Cameron home and there only the two children who barred the doors with chairs, remained to relate the sad story. After committing these cruel murders, it is thought the Indians rode away in a northwesterly direction, but the four white men went south.

In due time, the settlers gathered in, and Mary Cameron related as best she could the awful crimes committed by the blood thirsty savages and their four white companions. She stated that one of the white men was redheaded, and that it was he who went in her father's trunk and took out more than a thousand dollars in money. The mysteriousness of this massacre was soon solved by the citizens. Mr. Cameron had some cash on hand and had been waiting to buy some cattle. It is generally supposed that these renegade whites visited the Comanches and conspired to commit this dastardly deed.

To let them go unmolested was too much for the early pioneers. W. L. Lasater, William Kutch, Oliver Loving, J. C. Loving, John Taylor, Bryant Herrington, and Ryan Herrington took the trail of the four whites and followed it south. It was their intention to follow them into Old Mexico if necessary. The trail went southward through the Salt Hill Community and then into Palo Pinto County; it passed near the present towns of Graford and Mineral Wells. Near the last named city, the criminals stopped at the home of one of the early settlers where the pursuing party

obtained their first description of the four men they were following. From here the trail was followed through Comanche County, and district court was in session at the time. The pursuing party was personally acquainted with the district judge and district attorney, and to them they related their story. District Attorney Norris soon located a man that had seen these four men only a short time before, and knew their places of residence, and before the breaking of the following day, Mr. Norris had recruited about forty men to assist the pursuing party in capturing the criminals.

In due time they succeeded in arresting the supposed criminals in Lampasas or Coryell County.

The men were then brought before little Mary Cameron. The redheaded man who had a sandy beard, and who met the description she previously gave, was brought before her. Little Mary exclaimed, "This is the man who killed Ma and took Pa's money from the trunk, but the Indians killed all the rest." But for some unknown reason, these men were released; perhaps it was because the public was unwilling to murder them on the uncorroborated evidence of the child. But we have been informed that this redheaded man and one of his companions were later hanged at or near the City of Austin, and at the time the redheaded man made a confession of the killing of both the Cameron and Mason families. It is said that he stated in his confession the whites took the money and the Indians other property.

A third man, reported to have been one of the guilty parties, seems to have met his fate in Erath County about 1868 or 1867. According to reports he stole horses in the vicinity of Duffau, and later tied them in a thicket about three miles south of Stephenville. If reports be true he then stole horses from Hesikiah Ballomy and others in that neighborhood and to the west of Stephenville. That morning he was seen wearing a redblanket, and thought to have been an Indian. A portion of the stolen horses were carried to the head of Barton's Creek, where they were dropped, and the horse thief was supposed to have returned for the horses in the thicket three miles south of Stephenville. From here he went towards Belton and Austin. Between Belton and Meridian, a citizen traded for a large gray horse that was later recognized in Meridian. According to reports the citizen then struck the trail of the thief and caught him in the Chalk Mountain Community; and if reports be true, he was tried in Judge Lynch's Court and hanged to a nearby tree. So it seems the fate of at least three of the four men was generally known and understood by a large number of the early citizens. The massacre of the Cameron and Mason families was about the first bloodshed in Jack, Palo Pinto, Parker, Wise, Montague, and other North Texas counties; but a few citizens had been previously massacred in Young, Stephens, and elsewhere.

Ref. - The author personally interviewed Mrs. H. G. Taylor, Mrs. Huse Severs, Mrs. M. J. Hart, E. K. Taylor, A. M. Lasater, Joseph Fowler, James Wood, B. L. Ham, W. C. McGough, Ike Roberts, W. A. Ribble, and others who live in Jack, Palo Pinto, Young, Erath and adjoining counties at the time this massacre occurred.

**274. The Battle of Antelope Hills.** - At a very early date the Texas Rangers realized that the most effective way to fight the Indians was to carry the conflict into their own camp. With this in view, Col. John S. Ford, during the spring of 1858, led an extended expedition against the northern Comanches, who were known to reside somewhere on the head waters of the Canadian. When he reached the Brazos Agency in the southeastern part of Young County, he was joined by Capt. Shaply P. Ross, then Indian Agent. Captain Ross took with him one hundred and eleven Tonkaway Indians under the leadership of their principal chief, Placido.

May 11, the Indian spies reported that the command was approaching an Indian village, which was on the South Canadian near the Antelope Hills. The Indians were moving to and fro, and apparently little did they expect to be charged in their own camp. Colonel Ford, with his field glasses, could see the Indians in the valley chasing buffalo. During the night their camp was reconnoitered and early next morning, the Rangers and Indians were ready to charge. Placido and his Indian warriors requested that they be allowed to make the first charge, for the purpose of taking vengeance against the Comanches who had been their enemy from time immemorial. In the fight that followed, the Comanches were annihilated, and it has been said that not a one escaped to relate the story. The women and children were made prisoners. After the smoke of battle had cleared away, a lone Comanche was seen to be riding toward the village which had been destroyed, and was evidently unaware of the presence of Colonel Ford and his command. As unerring as the wild bee follows its viewless course, when he discovered the presence of the rangers, he hastily retreated to his own village across the Canadian and at the same time disclosed to Colonel Ford where the boggy Canadian could be forded safely.

As they advanced upon this second Indian village, Colonel Ford placed Placido and his Indians on the right and advanced them in the lead, for the purpose of making the Indians think they were being charged by another tribe alone; and to be unaware of the presence of the whites. The rangers were now rapidly approaching the large village of the famous Chief Pohibit Quasho or Iron Jacket, so named because he wore an Iron Jacket, which the Indians had perhaps captured from the Spanish ages before. When the rangers reached this second Indian village, they were confronted by Chief Iron Jacket and his

men, who showed a tendency to take the offensive during the fighting. The chief with his armoured guard displayed unusual bravery, but after several attempts was shot down by Jim Pockmark. The fighting was so intense and the charge that followed so severe, the Indians were forced to retreat. Colonel Ford and his two hundred and twenty-one men had successfully defeated four hundred Comanche warriors.

But during the tumult of the firing, the famous Indian chief, Peta-na-cona, whose village was ten miles away was now seen to be approaching the battle ground with five hundred additional Comanche warriors, who were fresh and ready to fight, and who were painted and decorated with feathers.

Colonel Ford was well aware of the Indian's intrigue, so for some time he held his men at a distance to avoid their strategic movements. In due time, however, Colonel Ford ordered Placido to lead his Indians in a charge in such a way as to draw the Indians of Peta-na-cona from the hill into the valley, where they could be successfully charged by the rangers. The charge of Placido had the desired effect, and when the rangers crushed down on the Comanches, the brave fighting of Colonel Ford and his men was so severe, the large number of Indian warriors under Peta-na-cona soon became completely demoralized, and in a short time were retreating, and due to the strenuous fighting which had lasted during the entire day, Colonel Ford and his command were completely exhausted. But Placido and his Indian warriors were so anxious to crush their hereditary enemy, even at this late hour were unwilling to give up the fight.

During these three major engagements, no less than seventy-five Comanche warriors were slain, and the rangers lost two killed and six wounded. They also recovered the metal garb of Chief Iron Jacket, which was placed in the capitol at Austin. Col. Ford and his men also captured much other Indian property. These Indians from time immemorial had been hostile toward the Texans and Spanish, and had never ceased their depredating; and for a time this crushing defeat had a tendency to check their invasions.

Ref. - Frontier Times, August 26: Reports of Indian Commissioner and Secretary of War for 1858; DeShields' Cynthia Ann Parker; Wilbarger's Indian Depredations in Texas; also interviewed several early frontiersmen, who were familiar with this fight.

**275. D. S. and Marion Hagler.** - D. S. and Marion Hagler were camped under a large post oak tree about one mile north of Forrestburg in Montague County, early in June, 1858. They had thirty-five horses staked in the flats nearby; two saddles hanging over their heads in a tree, and D. S. Hagler, his wife and daughter, Marion Hagler and Mrs. Morris, were sleeping near the saddles. They felt secure because of their two vicious

dogs; but during the night, the Indians not only stole the horses, but also took the saddles, without alarming either the dogs or these early pioneers. They also took a fine favorite horse staked nearby, making thirty-six in all. John Braden, Wm. Fanning, Joab Faulkner, and one other man, making four, were out on Belknap Creek, at a point about fifteen miles west of Montague; they saw two Indians driving these stolen horses, and rode around for the purpose of making an investigation. It was now about ten o'clock in the morning. Shortly afterwards, the two Indians charged the settlers, but when they saw they could not be frightened, the savages dismounted and fortified themselves behind a tree. Mr. Braden's horse was shot by one of these Indians, and this caused the animal to throw it's rider within ten feet of the savage, who painfully plowed an arrow across the forehead of Mr. Braden. For a time, the blow of the arrow stunned him, and the Indians jumped from behind the tree to give him a final shot, but Mr. Braden now regained consciousness, and let this warrior have the full force of his gun. The other Indian had never dismounted, but was riding Marion Hagler's horse in a circle around the whites, and letting his "Wooden pegs" fly thick and fast. But when his companion was killed, this Indian ran away, and the four men took the horses toward home. When the four reached Old Barrel Springs, on the old California Trail, they met a number of settlers following the trail of these two savages. The two parties threw together and went back to see the dead warrior.

Ref. - W. A. (Bud) Morris, a nephew of D. S. Hagler.

**277. Defeat Gap Fight.** - During 1858, Maliki Cox, Don Cox, Simm Welsh, Jack White, Baz Cox, and possibly one or two others, were out about thirteen miles west of Comanche to hunt with dogs. When they reached a point near Defeat Gap, the dogs discovered the presence of Indians, who soon charged the whites. In the fight that followed. Maliki Cox was pinned to his saddle with an arrow. This forced the few whites to retreat, and because of this fight, a gap nearby, has since been known as the Defeat Gap.

Ref. - Joel Nabers, Dave and Dick Cunningham, and others.

**277. Killing of Dick Robbins.** - About 1858, Dick and Aaron Robbins, and John Jones, were out hunting deer about three miles east of Regency, in Hanna Valley, on the Colorado. This territory is now in Mills, but was then a part of Brown County. They discovered and followed an Indian trail to a point about seven miles north and a little west of Regency, where they ran on three warriors. In the fight that followed, Dick Robbins was killed almost instantly, and John Jones wounded in the breast with an arrow. This forced Aaron Robbins and John Jones to retreat, leaving the dead body of Dick Robbins on the ground. The Indians took his buckskin breeches and then later killed a work-steer of Ichabod Adams, who lived near the present

location of the city of Brownwood. After eating a part of this animal, they left the buckskin breeches of Dick Robbins and then departed for the wild northwest. Mr. Robbins was buried where he was killed, and John Jones recovered.

Ref. - Author interviewed Harve Adams, and others who were living in Brown County about this time, or shortly afterwards.

**278. Holland Nichols.** - In 1858, Mr. Nichols lived about five miles west of Kerrville, on the beautiful Guadalupe River. While he was out turkey-hunting with Jim Hampton, and a friend named Hurt, Mr. Nichols told his companions he was going into the river bottom to a turkey roost, which was about one-half mile east of the present town of Ingram. His two associates soon heard shots, and only thought he was killing turkeys. Shortly, however, they heard Mr. Nichols hollow, "Oh, boys, oh boys." And when the boys reached him, Mr. Nichols had already been killed. Previously, Mr. Nichols had carried his pistol along, but on this particular occasion, he told his family he never had occasion to use it only on rattlesnakes; so the very time he needed it most, his pistol was at home.

Ref. - The author conferred with Lafayette Nichols, a son of Roland Nichols, and others who were living in Kerr County at the time this tragedy occurred.

**279. John Leaky and Others Fight in 1858.** - During the above year, Wilson O'Bryant drove his family over to visit his son-in-law, George Thompson, who then lived about four miles above the present city of Utopia. During the night they were disturbed by running horses, and when an investigation was made, they discovered these animals in a nearby field, and one of them had an Indian arrow sticking in his side. The horses were then penned, but the oxen were left on the outside. The next morning it was discovered that both steers had been killed. John Leaky, for whom the town of Leaky was named, Gideon Thompson, Sebe Barmore, Henry Robinson, and Silius Webster, followed the Indians afoot and came upon them about four miles west and near the head of Bear Creek, where they were cooking a part of the oxen. In the fight that followed, the five men were confronted by twenty Indians. John Leaky was soon wounded three or four times; Steve Barmore was shot in the side; Gideon Thompson's hat was shot from his head; and so deadly was the aim of the Indians, the whites were forced to flee. As soon as they could get together, John Davenport, John Bowles, both of whom were killed by Indians during the following year; Newman and Geo. Patterson, John Findley Charley Burgman, Geideon Thompson, Richard Ware, J. M. McCormick, Henry Robertson, R. P. Kelly, J. C. Ware, W. W. Black, and perhaps others, took up the Indian trail where they barbecued the oxen. The trail led across the main Frio, then across to the dry Frio, then to the top of a high mountain overlooking the San Antonio and El Paso Road. At this point the

Indians seemed to have remained for sometime. Perhaps they were waiting for an opportunity to murder some lonely passing traveler. From here they went below Fort Inge, and crossed the Leona; they then took down the divide between this stream and the Nueces for some distance, and finally crossed again to the former river; the Indians only had one mule and two ponies, and it seems the whites were still undiscovered. John Findley, Gideon Thompson, and W. W. Black were detailed to remain with the horses. This command was under the leadership of Capt. Henry Robinson, who was also later killed by the Indians. But before the Indians had reached this point, they had divided and there were only about eight in this particular group. Robinson and Newman seemed to have been the first to shoot, and one of the Indians they wounded later proved to be a squaw. J. C. Ware was about the next to fire and shot an Indian sitting beside this squaw. This Indian jumped up, wheeled and ran about ten steps. It was later discovered that J. C. Ware, during the shooting, shot the Indian about the heart. One of this warrior's arrows passed through Mr. Ware's toes. A general charge was then made and seven of the eight Indians killed; only one escaped.

J. C. Ware, then only a young man, was given the Indian's bow, quiver of arrows, and shield. The spoils of the battle were brought to Uvalde where they were sold to the highest bidder.

Ref. - The author interviewed Capt. J. C. Ware, who was in the fight; also interviewed others.

**280. Isom Hicks.** - During the summer of 1858, Joseph Hicks lived near Newburg, in the southern part of Comanche County. His slave, Isom Hicks, was a carpenter and was building a house for Capt. T. C. Frost in Comanche. Each Saturday the negro would return home and then go back to his work early Monday morning. During the summer of 1858, he was returning to his work after spending the week-end at home and was riding a small black mule. When Isom reached a point about three miles south of Comanche, he was charged by Indians, who ran him about two miles and then killed the negro, within one mile of town.

Ref. - The author interviewed Joel Neighbors and others who then lived in that section.

**281. Indians Kill Cattlemen Near the Leon Water Hole on the El Paso Road in 1858.** - August 9th, of the above year, a party of fifteen Comanche Indians attacked some California cattle-drivers at the Leon Water Hole, on the El Paso Road about seventy-five miles east of Fort Davis; M. W. Hufford, and another American, and two Mexicans were killed. This early massacre occurred far out in the wilds of Western Texas, and the news was brought to San Antonio by a Mr. Rome, who had charge of the San Diego mail.

Ref. - 262 Report of Secretary of War for 1858.

**282. Killing of Daniel Wainscott and Jack Kilgore.** - John Willingham and Bob Wainscott were building new homes on Denton Creek, about ten miles south of Montague, and had already moved their families into this new territory. September 5, 1858, which was Sunday, Daniel Wainscott and Bob Wainscott and family, and Jack Kilgore and family and a total crowd of about 37 men, women, and children, decided to go over to the new homes of John Willingham and Bob Wainscott. Most of them rode in an ox-wagon, but some walked; and Daniel Wainscott and Jack Kilgore were walking considerably in the lead. When the crowd was within a quarter of a mile of the new homes, seven demons of the forest dashed upon them. The two men in advance rushed back toward the wagon, and they were slain shortly afterward. This, no doubt, was the first real bloodshed in Montague County, and since the Indians had theretofore been comparatively peaceable, the killing of Daniel Wainscott and Jack Kilgore, of course, caused much consternation among the remaining crowd. Cash McDonald was wounded in the arm, but the little child he was carrying was uninjured. It seems that Bob Wainscott was also wounded, and his wife, thinking her husband was killed, made her retreat into the timber.

The Indians, on this occasion, provoked the difficulty and fired the first shot, almost before the settlers were aware of their presence. Daniel Wainscott took a chair from the wagon and knocked an Indian from his horse before he himself was killed. Mrs. Bob Wainscott was found the second or third day after this difficulty wandering through the woods.

Messrs. Wainscott and Kilgore were buried on the bank of Denton Creek near where they were killed.

Ref. - Before writing this article, the author interviewed W. A. (Bud) Morris, J. Bryant, and others who were living in Montague County at the time or shortly afterwards. History of Montague County by Mrs. W. R. Potter. Reports conflict but we have given what we believe to be the correct version.

**283. Major Earl Van Dorn's Fight in Oklahoma in 1858.** - Before writing this section, the author interviewed several of the surviving old settlers, who were personally familiar with this particular campaign, and various accounts of this expedition have also been given on numerous occasions; but our most authentic report comes from Major Van Dorn himself, and an account of this difficulty was found in the reports of the Secretary of War for the year of 1858. Concerning this particular fight, Major Earl Van Dorn said:

"Captain: I have the honor to make the following report of the operations of my command since the 25th ultimo, the date of my last report. The stockade work, in progress of construction at that date, was completed on the 29th, and preparations were being made to move towards the Canadian river the following morning when two of my Indian spies came in and reported a large Comanche camp near the Wichita village, about ninety miles due east of the depot. Upon receipt of this information, I had all the stores, draught mules, and extra horses moved at once into the defensive enclosure, and marched for this point with the four companies of cavalry and Indian allies. After making a forced march of ninety odd miles in thirty-eight hours during the last part of which we were continuously in the saddle, for sixteen and a half hours, including the charge and pursuit; we arrived at this camp on the morning of the 1st instant.

"I had been in hopes of reaching a point in close proximity to the enemy before daylight, and had made dispositions for an attack, based on information received from the spies, but daybreak came upon us some three or four miles off, and as I found them very inaccurate in their information, I moved the companies up in column, with intervals of a hundred yards, and moving in the direction in which the camp was said to be, sending instructions to the captains to deploy and charge whenever it was seen over the crest of the hills in advance of us. After marching with this formation, about two miles at an increased gait, the sound of the charge came from towards the left, and in a moment the whole command poured down into the enemies' camp, in the most gallant style, and we soon found ourselves engaged on a warmly defended battle-field. There being many ravines in and about the camp that obstructed the easy operation of cavalry, and gave good shelter to Indians, it was more than an hour and a half before they were entirely beaten out or destroyed, during which time there were many hand to hand engagements, both on the part of the officers and men. The friendly Indians I ordered in approaching the camp, to stampede the animals and get them out of the way. This order they effectually carried out. The Delawares and Caddos also entered into the fight with the troops, and did effective service, especially in the skirmishing in the neighboring hills and ravines. We have gained a complete and decisive victory over the enemy. Fifty-six warriors are left dead on the field, and it is presumed that many more are lying in the vicinity, as many were doubtless mortally wounded, but enabled to escape on their horses from the battle-field. How many were wounded is not known. Over three hundred animals were captured; about one hundred and twenty lodges were burned. Their supply of ammunition, cooking utensils, clothing, dressed skins, corn, and subsistence stores were all destroyed or appropriated to the use of the command. Those who escaped did so with the scanty clothing they had on and their arms, and nothing was left to make the site of their camp but the ashes and the dead. I regret that I have to report that two Indian women were accidentally killed in the battle; their manner of

dress did not indicate their sex. Two Wichita Indians were also accidentally killed. The number of Indians has been variously estimated from three to five hundred. I think there were over four hundred.

"This victory has not been achieved without loss on our side. Lieut. Cornelius Van Camp, one of the most promising and gallant young officers of our regiment, or of the service at large, fell pierced through the heart by an arrow whilst charging the enemy's camp, and died as the brave alone should die. In his loss we feel our victory to be a dear fought one."

Approximately forty Indians from the Lower Reservation, under the immediate command of Capt. L. S. Ross, were with Major Van Dorn in this expedition, and the latter's entire command consisted of two hundred and twenty-five men. Both Ross and Van Dorn and others were severely wounded. Major Van Dorn at this time was stationed at old Camp Cooper.

**284. Dave Roberts and Alex Pickett Surprise Indians. -**

T. M. Shackley and his sister, Margaret, had been up to the ranch about one and one-half miles northeast of Mr. Shockley's home. As they returned, they saw an Indian on a high peak, spying over the surrounding country. This was early in the day. Dave Roberts and Alex Pickett took a bucket and pretended to be going for water. When they reached a ravine and disappeared out of the Indian's view, the two then slipped up the mountain, and at an opportune time each fired and the Indian fell dead on the ground; a second Indian jumped up and the two also shot at him. It has been supposed they also gave him a mortal wound, for the body of a second Indian was later found not far distant from this point. Five or six other Indians under the hill soon appeared on the scene and charged Dave Roberts and Alex Pickett. After considerable fighting the two whites made an orderly retreat back to their ranch quarters. This episode occurred about 1858 in the Resley's Creek Community, about four miles northeast of the present town of Lampkin, in Comanche County.

Ref. - Before writing this section, the author interviewed Geo. W. White of Hamilton, who lived in the Resley's Creek Community about this time or shortly afterwards.

**285. Mr. Cassady's Negro. -** During the fall or early winter of 1858, Mr. Cassady had a camp on Hubbard Creek, while he was building a log cabin. Late one evening he and his men were out after logs, when they heard a gun fire. When they reached their camp which was approximately fifteen miles north and west of the present city of Breckenridge in Stephens County, they found the negro lying dead on the ground. Circumstantial evidence seemed to indicate that an Indian slipped up from the bank of the creek and fired at the negro, who was unaware of his presence, and who was in a stooping position. Afterwards, the

Indian trail was followed and it led to a camp of Caddos or other Indians, who belonged to the Lower Reservation.

Ref. - The author personally interviewed W. S. Baylor and Wm. Harrell, who were living in Stephens County at the time, or shortly afterwards; also interviewed others. Further Ref - Report of Com. of Ind. Affairs, 1859.

**286. Mose Jackson and Family.** - Mose Jackson numbered among the earliest settlers of Brown County. But the territory in which he lived is now a part of Mills. Mr. Jackson's home was about twelve miles west of Goldthwaite, on the west side of Pecan Bayou, and on the Goldthwaite-Regency road.

Mr. Jackson and some of his neighbors had previously selected some fine pecan trees to be cut and used for board timber. Since these trees were luxuriantly covered with pecans, it was agreed that each of the men return October 26, 1858, with their families, so the women and children could gather the pecans, while the men worked the board timber. Some of the early citizens, with their lunches, arrived early on the scene, but Mr. and Mrs. Jackson and their children did not appear. The pecan timber being cut was about six miles north and a little west of the Jackson home, which was not far distant from the mouth of the Bayou. The place of meeting was farther up the same stream. Big, young, and old, were anxiously inquiring and wondering why Mr. Jackson and family had not arrived. They were further perplexed by the report of guns in a southern direction toward the Jackson home.

Mr. Jackson had a large family, and one of his sons, John, lived at Lampasas, and had previously protested against his father's moving as far out as Brown County. The morning of the picnic, Jesse, a son, was sick, so Jason, an older son, agreed to stay at home with him. Early in the morning Mr. Jackson hitched two horses to a hack, and started out with the remaining part of his family, to the pioneer gathering, about six miles up the Bayou. With him were his wife, seventeen-year-old daughter, twelve-year-old son named Tobe, nine-year-old daughter named Rebecca, and a small son, seven years of age. As there were no roads, Mr. and Mrs. Jackson and their four children traveled along an old buffalo hunter's trail. After they had gone only about one and one-half miles, several men were seen on a distant hill, but the Jacksons supposed it were others going to the social gathering so Mr. and Mrs. Jackson and children joyfully continued their journey. They had only gone about one-half mile, however, and were traveling on the east side of a small stream, which emptied into the Bayou, when twenty-six hostile Indians appeared on the scene and dashed up the bank and out of the nearby timber. They shot and killed Mr. Jackson instantly, and he fell to the ground from his hack. The team became frightened and started to run, but the twelve-year-old boy grabbed the lines and endeavored to stop them. The lines,

however, were entangled, so the team circled out into the timber and soon hung up against a tree. About this time the seventeen-year-old daughter was also severely injured. An arrow pinned an arm to her side. After the horses stopped, the Indians jerked this wounded daughter out of the hack, and the commotion extracted the arrow from her body. She in turn, pulled the same implement out of her arm. The seven-year-old son stayed in the vehicle and watched every movement. Mrs. Jackson dropped on her knees and began to cry and pray. Finally she took a seat near a tree about twenty or twenty-five feet from the hack. The Indians took the seventeen-year-old daughter to a place under a bank about forty steps to the east, where she was assaulted and abused in a manner known only to savages. They scalped her alive, and her beautiful hair was thrown in the mother's face. The daughter was then killed. A lady's scalp of beautiful auburn hair was recovered by John R. Baylor and men in 1860 and it was supposed to have belonged to this daughter.

What about the seven-year-old son in the hack? A bloodthirsty Indian about this time, walked up and shot this innocent child in the eye with an arrow. When he fell over, the Indian pulled his head over the end gate and cut the poor little fellow's throat. Rebecca, the nine-year-old daughter, was now sitting beside the mother, and witnessing these horrible scenes. Tobe, the, twelve-year-old son, was now walking to and fro not far distant from the mother. Poor woman! I wonder if we can imagine the magnitude of her grief, sorrow, and suffering. Her husband was the first to fall; and her seventeen-year-old daughter and seven-year-old son now lay dead before her eyes. With an unflinching heart, she was wondering what would follow, when at this moment a bloodthirsty Indian took an axe belonging to Mr. Jackson out of the hack, and was in the act of killing Mrs. Jackson, when he was prevented by an Indian squaw. We are pleased to note this squaw had the slightest vestige of human sympathy, although the savage warriors had none.

The Indians now divided into two divisions of eight and eighteen, respectively. The eight Indians, including the old squaw that saved the life of Mother Jackson, left the horrible scene afoot with the two remaining children, Tobe and Rebecca, on Mr. Jackson's horse, which had been harnessed to the hack. The mother was left alive and alone in the hands of the remaining eighteen Indians. When the eight savages had gone about twelve miles, they picked up a gentle mare and her colt, and the children were removed to the colt's mother. The Indians then went eight miles farther to Lookout Mountain, which was named by Albert G. Gholson, because it was a place frequently visited by Indian spies. The old squaw that saved the life of Mrs. Jackson, a younger squaw, and an old buck, were left here in charge of Tobe and Rebecca. The five remaining warriors went into Lampasas, Coryell, and as low as Burnet County on a horse stealing raid. For nine days and ten nights, the three Indians

and two children remained on Lookout Mountain. The old buck would slip out during the dark hours of night, and bring water in a buffalo pouch. The colt was killed and barbecued. The little boy soon adopted himself to the surroundings, but Rebecca could not and was slowly dwindling away. The five Indians finally returned in charge of a herd of stolen horses. They arrived on Lookout Mountain during the night and left the same way. The two children were placed on the same old mare, which was driven by the Indians in the herd with other horses, and the savages with their spoils started toward the wild and unsettled west.

When this tragedy occurred, Capt. John Williams and his company of Texas Rangers were camped near the north line of San Saba County, in the Bowser Bend of the Colorado. Some of the scouts struck an Indian trail about two days old. This was followed and the rangers soon reached a point where they found the remains of Mr. Jackson and other members of his family. The news of this horrible massacre now became known to the outside world. The two sons left at the Jackson home had previously thought their parents, brothers and sisters had stopped to stay two or three days with neighbors.

The rangers reached the horrible scene just at sundown, but during the night they went to distant ranches for assistance, digging implements, etc. When the news was broadcasted through the settlements, the male citizens one by one during all hours of the night, began to arrive on the scene, and by daylight approximately thirty rangers and forty-five citizens had arrived.

As soon as possible the rangers took up the savages trail. Instead of following the eight Indians who had the children, however, they followed the trail of the eighteen. This trail led in a southerly direction. From time to time the local citizens joined the ranging force. Since the Indians had three days in the lead, a council was held. The rangers and citizens decided it would be useless to try to overtake them, but it was agreed a patrol duty would be established between the Colorado and Leon Rivers, for the purpose of picking up the Indian trail, when the savages came back out of the settlements with stolen horses. The rangers left the place where Mr. Jackson and members of his family were murdered October the 29th. During the morning of November the 7th following, Lieutenant Gideon Cowan and several other scouts picked up a fresh trail where the Indians had camped the night before, and when the trail was discovered a scout was sent in each direction. But two of the rangers never returned. Rhome Vaughn and two others joined Lieutenant Cowan's command about 4 o'clock in the evening. During the day six men from Lampasas and Burnet County also joined the command. These men had been following the Indians' trail to recover their stolen horses.

And it was soon discovered that the citizens and rangers were not following the trail of the original eighteen Indians, but had evidently picked up the trail of the eight others that had the children. This was shown by strips of the little girl's clothing, occasionally found hanging on the brush where the old mare would run under a tree. When the command passed Salt Creek in Brown County, they found conclusive evidence showing that they were following the eight Indians with the children, for they saw the little girl's track in the mud, where she had gotten down for water. When night was approaching, Lieutenant Cowan said:

"Boys, we have got to do all possible to rescue those children."

He further said:

"The Indians are going toward a certain star, so we will follow that by night and follow the trail by day."

When morning came they assumed a V formation to again pick up the trail, and it was soon found a little over a mile to the north. In this manner of following the trail by day and the western stars by night, it was soon discovered they were rapidly gaining on the Indians. After the passing of the second night and early the next morning, to the joy of the rangers, it was discovered they were directly on the trail. Just at daylight, they also discovered an Indian spy on a distant mountain. This Indian soon galloped away. Frank Gholson, who was in the lead motioned for Lieutenant Cowan, and told him what he had seen. Lieutenant Cowan then ordered his men to ride rapidly along the trail, and after riding about one and a half miles farther, the rangers saw the Indians in the lead. The Indians soon began to round up the horses, and about this time two footmen left the band of savages and started out in a southerly direction. Lieutenant Cowan told the sergeant to take a part of the men and cut these Indians off at the point of the mountain, and said that he would cut the Indians off from the herd of horses. When close to the savages, the Texans discovered the native had released the two children and horses, for they, no doubt, thought that would satisfy the rangers and citizens. The Indians then mounted fast animals and rode rapidly away. Eight rangers endeavored to overtake them, but failed.

The rangers now rode up to the two children, who had been Indian captives for nearly two weeks. Tears were already in the eyes of all. Just before they reached Tobe and Rebecca, the little boy rose up three different times from a stooping posture, and said: "They are, whitemen; they are whitemen; they are whitemen, I see their hats and stirrups." He then dropped down again. The rangers and six citizens then surrounded the children. Several of the men jumped down and shook hands with the boy. The first question that was asked, "Are you the Jackson children?" "Yes," the boy said. The boy then asked, "Did the

Indians kill mother?" With tearful eyes, the rangers answered "Yes."

For a moment let us now turn our attention to this splendid lady. After the eight Indians rode away, she was left in the hands of the remaining eighteen. When Captain Williams and his men reached the scene of this horrible catastrophe, they found Mrs. Jackson dead with her throat lacerated.

Let us now again turn to the two children. Surrounded by rangers, many miles from the nearest settlement, and perhaps somewhere in the present Nolan County, and in the vicinity of Sweetwater, Rhome Vaughan stepped up to the little girl, whose elbows were on her knees and her hands helping to support her heavy head. He said:

"Sissy, stand up if you are able; you are safe now. You are in the hands of your friends."

At this moment, A. J. (Jack) Brown began to shout, and said:

"Praise God, that he had inspired Lieutenant Cowan with such skill and ability to effect such an achievement."

About that time, Gabe Choate said:

"Jack, are we going to have a revival in the wilderness?"

Jack replied:

"Yes, the good Lord deserves praise in the wilderness for such wonderful wisdom as this; as well as in the church house."

The children were brought back one and one-half miles on the trail to the first water, where the command remained until 1 p. m. of the next day to permit the girl, Rebecca, to partly recuperate. She was placed in charge of Lieutenant Cowan and Gabe Choate, the two oldest men in the command.

The poor little girl's appetite was completely gone. She was offered different things to eat, but refused. Finally however, the rangers and citizens were successful in getting Rebecca to eat some roasted bacon. To add to her comfort, a blanket was folded so as to make Rebecca a little bed many miles from the nearest settlements. When the rangers resumed their journey, they had gone only about four miles when Rebecca began to complain again. The command again stopped and after she had rested they went about four miles farther and camped for the night. From this point, it took six days to reach Camp Colorado. The Christian mothers at this post made clothes for the little girl, and the army surgeon administered her aid. The command remained at the Post two nights and one day, and then left for their camp in the Bowser Bend. By this time Rebecca had

greatly recuperated. Mrs. Williams, who happened to be at the camp, took temporary charge of the girl. When time came to leave the little boy said he preferred staying in the camp, and wanted to join the rangers. The six citizens who lived in Lampasas and Burnet Counties, however, were instructed to tell John Jackson that Tobe and Rebecca had been recaptured, and the girl was in the immediate charge of Mrs. Williams. At another time she was under the care of Mrs. Thomas Priddy. When John Jackson came to the camp for his little brother and sister, a guard was furnished to protect him and them through the dangerous parts of the country.

It has been said the shock of this terrible tragedy drove Tobe Jackson crazy, and that he afterwards died in the asylum. At one time he visited the scene of the difficulty, and it is said he had to be led away. Rebecca later married Jack Stroud, and at last account was living in New Mexico.

Seventy-eight horses were recovered from the Indians and B. F. (Frank) Gholson said the children and horses were recovered without the firing of a gun, and that any statements to the contrary are not true. The children were rescued on the 9th of November, 1858, on the headwaters of Bitter Creek, perhaps in the present Nolan County, not many miles from Sweetwater.

We find today the lonely grave of Mr. Jackson and the members of his family on the bank of Jackson Branch, at the point where they were killed. Mrs. Jackson and her two children were buried in the same grave. Mr. Jackson was buried about three hundred yards away, at the point where he fell.

Let us immortalize the names of those who recaptured the children. They were: Rangers Lieut. Gideon P. Cowan; Sergt. Rhome Vaughan, Gabe Choate, A. J. (Jack) Brown, Rid Hoy, G. Wash Freezell, Tom Potts, and B. F. (Frank) Gholson. The citizens were: Dan Spencer, Bill Webb, and brother, and about three others, making fourteen.

Ref. - The author on two or more occasions personally interviewed B. F. (Frank) Gholson, mentioned above; Harve Adams, of Brooksmith, and others who were familiar with the circumstances. While compiling data for the present work, the author was repeatedly told by the citizens of several surrounding counties to be sure to see B. F. (Frank) Gholson. We did, and soon discovered that he had one of the most wonderful memories of the hundreds of old settlers interviewed all the way from the Red River to the Rio Grande, and elsewhere. And it is to him the author is indebted for the major portion of this story, which we believe to be one of the most accurate accounts of this massacre that has ever been written. Further reference: Wilbarger's Indian Depredations in Texas, and Government Records in Washintgon, D. C.

**287. Charlie Elam.** - Charlie Elam and his five children lived near his father-in-law, William Moorehead, on Henson Creek southwest of Gatesville. Early one morning he and his son, W. J., went out to find the oxen. After searching nearly all day, Mr. Elam told his son he could return home, but that he himself would come in later. That evening, however, he was massacred by the Indians, and it is generally supposed that a part of the original Indians who massacred the Jackson family, did the deed. Mr. Elam was massacred near the headwaters of Henson Creek, about nine miles southwest of Gatesville.

Ref. - Before writing this article, the author conferred with B. F. Gholson, and others who were familiar with the circumstances. Seventy years in Texas, by J. M. Franks.

**288. Capt. John Williams' Men Encounter Indians Near Richland Springs.** - During November of 1858, John Burns was hauling supplies to Capt. John Williams' company of rangers, who were camped in Bowers Bend on the Colorado in the northern part of San Saba County. The supplies were hauled in three wagons, and about eight oxen were hitched to each vehicle. About ten rangers were sent to San Saba to escort John Burns and his men. During the night all camped near Richland Springs. The Duncan brothers prior to that time had had a ranch at this point, which was known as Fort Duncan. Beyond this point there were no roads, so James Brown and Will Cathey were detailed to select a suitable route for the wagons, and find a suitable crossing of a branch for the party. The two were not a great distance ahead, when twelve Indians suddenly charged and chased the rangers back to the wagon. The Indians seemed somewhat surprised, however, when they ran into others. At the request of John Burns, two of the rangers remained with the wagons. The others pursued the Indians, and a running fight followed, with the Indians in the lead. As many as four Indians were killed and wounded, and a number of stolen horses and Indian provisions recovered. Jim Brown was in command and the other rangers were Will Cathey, Henry Farrar, N. A. Taylor, S. S. Gholson, John Meyers, Carter Williams, B. F. Gholson, Stephen Kemp and Riley Petit. This fight occurred in the northwestern part of San Saba County.

Note - The author conferred with B. F. Gholson, who was in the fight.

**289. Willis Mills.** - During the year 1856, Willis Mills and Ansell Russell established Palo Pinto County's first store on the old Fort Worth and Belknap road, about one and one-half miles west of the present town of Graford. About 1858, Mr. Mills started over to the ranch of Marcus Dalton, to buy some wheat, and mysteriously disappeared. For a long time his fate was unknown, but many moons later, some employees of Capt. Jowell McKee, while cutting poles, found his skeleton where he had been hidden in the cedars. Mr. Mills was identified by remnants of his

clothing. For several days prior to his death, a Cherokee Indian had been hanging around the store. This Indian, no doubt, knew that Mr. Mills was carrying considerable money when he went to the ranch of Mr. Dalton, so it has been supposed Mr. Mills was killed by this particular Cherokee; but this dastardly deed may have been planned and perpetrated by some renegade ruffian of our own race. This was one of the several occasions that settlers were unable to determine, whether the murder was committed by Indians or whites.

In a biography of C. C. Mills, a son, it has been reported that Willis Mills was murdered in 1856, but we are inclined to believe this crime was committed at a later date, for the county records of Palo Pinto seemed to indicate that Mr. Mills was living as late as 1858.

Ansell Russell later sold the store to a Mr. Whatley. Russell, himself, afterwards mysteriously disappeared. Relatives came into Palo Pinto County years later, trying to locate his whereabouts, but in so far as we have been able to ascertain, he was never found.

Ref. - 481 and 588, Cattle Industry of Texas; surviving old settlers whose names are several times mentioned herein; 30 Years of Army Life on the Border, by E. B. Marcy; Acts of the Legislature creating the reserves, and found in the Laws of Texas, compiled by H. P. N. Grammel; Report of R. B. Marcy, in U. S. Sen. Ex. Doc., vol. 12, No. 60, 34th Cong., 1st and 2nd Ses. 1855-56; Reports of Com. of Ind. Affairs and Sec. of War, 1854-59; information obtained from old files in the office of Com. of Ind. Affairs, Washington, D. C.

## **PART V INDIANS OF WESTERN TEXAS**

### **CHAPTER VII. BITTER RELATIONS WITH THE INDIANS ON THE BRAZOS RESERVE AND ELSEWHERE**

**290. Relations With Reserve Indians.** - For several years, as we have already seen, prior to the placing of the so-called friendly tribes of Indians on the Reservations, the Caddos and other tribes, who were considered peaceable, were accused of stealing horses, hogs, and other stock, which belonged to settlers. But when the Indians were located upon the reservations it was sincerely believed by many, the big problem had been solved.

But late in 1856, the Comanches from the Upper Reserve, stole horses belonging to Fred Gentry, who lived in Comanche county. Early in 1857, horses were also stolen in Coryell and other Central Texas Counties. And on different occasions these crimes were traced to the reservation Indians, which of course, caused

the people to become considerably exasperated. Later during the same year, several people were massacred by the Indians, and in several instances, circumstantial evidence pointed toward the peaceable Indians on the reserves.

During the same year, Sam Houston, a young Comanche Indian, who had been captured when a child in a fight between the rangers and Indians, and who spoke the English language well, in company with about ten other Comanche warriors, was returning to the reservation with a herd of stolen horses, and in a fight with the rangers on the Rio Grande, Sam Houston and nearly all of his associates were killed.

During 1858, when the Mason and Cameron families of Jack County were massacred, again the reservation Indians were strongly suspicioned, and during the same year massacres and depredations in Montague and other Texas counties, were charged to the so-called peaceable Indians on the reserves.

And along about this time, Tobe Palmer, Luke Choate, and two or three others were out hunting hogs about ten miles south and a little west of Jacksboro. When they were on a mountain, bordering on the beautiful Keechi Valley, they found where the Indians had been feathering arrows and Perhaps spying on the valley below.

Since so many stolen horses were often in the possession of the Indians on the reserves, in many sections, the citizens were suspicioning the reserve Indians. But in each and every case, these Indians denied stealing such animals, and stated they had been stolen by the wild tribes of the plains, and traded for by the reserve Indians, so they could be returned to their rightful owner. Each time however, the frontiersmen were required to pay several dollars reward before they would recover their stolen ponies. This, of course, only intensified the already bitter feeling, for during the year of 1858, the settlers were looking for positive proof that it were the reservation Indians doing a great per cent of the depredations. Consequently, it occurred to Mr. Palmer, Luke Choate, and their associates that this perhaps, would be an opportune time to obtain such positive proof. So, they staked a horse in an open flat about one mile from the place where the Indians had been feathering their arrows, and in a position that could be plainly visible to the Indians. When night came, these citizens secreted themselves in the nearby timber, and within firing distance of the horse. Just a little before dark, Tobe Palmer, Luke Choate, and one or two others, who were hidden in the nearby brush, saw seven Indians come within thirty yards of the horse, and hold a consultation. According to reports, shortly afterwards, one Indian left the remaining six and started toward the staked pony. He would advance a few feet and then stop, and look in all directions. After making several of such advancements and stops, he reached the horse, untied the rope, and started to lead the

animal away. When he did, Tobe Palmer fired, and the Indian, who was wounded, ran about forty yards to his comrades and fell. About this time Luke Choate and the other man also fired, and the following morning, about the break of day, these same Indians reached the lower reservation. One was dead, and at least one more seriously wounded.

During 1858, Jose Maria and about one hundred of his Indians were camped six miles up the Bosque, above Stephenville. One of his Indian bucks came to town, and in violation of law, was sold whiskey at a local saloon. Stephenville, at that time, was one of the several log cabin villages scattered over the West Texas frontier. This Indian soon became intoxicated, and shortly afterwards went to the home of W. W. McNeill, who lived only a short distance from the courthouse square. The drunk Indian was offered food and kindly treated, but he could not be induced to leave. Arch McNeill, then a young man, came to the rescue of Mrs. McNeill, and told her he would take his pistol and frighten the Indian away. But still the Indian refused to leave. Young McNeill then snapped an empty chamber at the Indian, thinking perhaps that would cause him to ride away; but instead, the warrior drew his bowie knife, and charged toward McNeill, who fired and mortally wounded the warrior. When he did, the Indian mounted his horse and started west. The following day the savage was found about one mile west of Stephenville. The killing of this Indian, of course, caused Jose Maria and his men to become greatly infuriated; and for mutual protection, the local citizens of Stephenville "Forted up." But when the affair was explained to Jose Maria and his men, they became at least partly reconciled.

Late during 1858, and about the time of the difficulty mentioned in the preceding section, some reservation Indians were camped on Eagle Creek, about two miles west of Palo Pinto, and about where the A. D. Lewis place is now located. These Indians professed to be friendly; so no one felt unusually alarmed. In fact, the Indians from the Lower Reservation repeatedly left the agency to come down into Palo Pinto County to hunt bear, deer, and other game, and to travel over their old hunting grounds. No doubt the many places in Palo Pinto County appeared to be their homes for it was here many of them lived for many years before they were assigned in 1855 to the Lower Reservation.

One morning some of these Indians encamped on the present Lewis place, came to the home of Calvin Hazzlewood, who lived at Lover's Retreat, or the Hazzlewood Spring above Lover's Retreat. Calvin Hazzlewood was away. Mrs. Hazzlewood and Charlie, who was then a baby, and their only child, were at home alone. Mrs. Hazzlewood was working in the kitchen and Charlie lying on the bed. Something attracted her attention and looking around she saw an Indian buck was drawing Charlie's little form into quarters with a tomahawk. But up until the time Mrs. Hazzlewood first saw the Indian, he had not really touched

her baby. He only pretended he were going to chop him up into quarters. Mrs. Hazzlewood continued with her work, as if nothing had happened. She conducted herself wisely for an Indian always admired bravery. And when she apparently was not frightened, the "rusty" old warrior said, "Heap brave squaw." He then told Mrs. Hazzlewood the Indians were planning to war against the whites, and Mr. Hazzlewood had better move his family to town. He also told Mrs. Hazzlewood to have her husband come to his camp for honey when he came back home. He did and the Indian told Cal Hazzlewood the same story concerning the Indians' plans for war, and advised Uncle Cal to move to town. This same news was not only conveyed to Mr. Hazzlewood and to the army officers at Fort Arbuckle, but was received from several other sources.

Such Indian troubles as previously related, according to reports, were being constantly committed by the Indians who belonged on the agencies. So the citizens who had become greatly exasperated, notified both the Indians and the Indian Agents they would not permit the reservation tribes to enter their territory, unless accompanied by a responsible white guide. And many citizens had begun to think that the ages old conflict had been intensified and not abolished, as expected by the establishment of the two Texas reservations.

**291. Peter Garland and Men Charge a Camp of Reservation Indians, Six Miles North of Palo Pinto. -**

During 1858, Choctaw Tom and several other Indians, who belonged on the Brazos Agency, camped on Sunday Creek southeast of the present town of Santo. On one occasion, two members of the Lavender family were out cow hunting between Buck and Sunday Creek, and near a point of a hill where two of Choctaw Tom's Indians were stationed. As the Lavenders rode by they were fired upon by these Indians, but fortunately the shot went astray. Capt. John W. Middleton, was notified and he immediately recruited a company of seventeen men. Early the next morning the men took the trail of the two Indians and followed it to Choctaw Tom's camp, which they surrounded. Choctaw Tom appeared and stated that he and his men were peaceable and desired to do no one any harm, but were in that community for the purpose of hunting. Choctaw Tom was then told by Capt. Middleton that much horse stealing was being perpetrated and that the reserve Indians were accused of a large percentage of such crimes. Choctaw Tom replied that such horse stealing was being done by the wild tribes. Captain Middleton answered that the settlers did not know wild Indians from tame ones, that they were hunting the Indians who were doing the mischief and that the trail of two Indians who fired on the Lavenders on the preceding day, had been traced to Choctaw Tom's camp. According to the statements of Mr. Middleton, a laughing Indian stepped forward, and said that he had shot at a deer and not at them. Choctaw Tom then promised to take the Indians back to the reservation.

But Choctaw Tom and his men a few days later camped in Palo Pinto on Town Branch, due north of the northeast corner of the courthouse square. Here the Indians were kindly received, and we have no record of their causing any trouble to any one. Choctaw Tom and his band remained at this point for several days, and the Indians and white children played together, but due to the solicitation of some of the local settlers, Choctaw Tom and his Indians moved their camp to the Indian Hole on Elm Creek about six miles north and a little east of Palo Pinto, and it was from these Indians this famous fishing hole derived its name.

Twenty men, mostly from Erath County, reached Palo Pinto December 26, 1858. These men were commanded by Capt. Peter Garland, and the following representative citizens composed his command: Daniel Thornton, J. Hightower, E. Fireash, T. Willie, W. E. Mothreal, Dr. W. W. McNeill, Robert Duval, J. P. Harris, W. Fitzgerald, A. L. Braw, R. Dupuy, W. J. F. Lowder, W. Wood, Samuel W. Stephens, J. Barnes, H. Highsaw, J. R. Waller, --- Dalton and George Harden, according to reports. These men would not disclose their mission, and to avoid suspicion, stated they were returning to Stephenville, but that night camped near the home of Bill Ramsey.

The next morning just after the break of day, they charged the camp of Choctaw Tom, which was near the Indian Hole, of Elm Creek north of Palo Pinto. The tepees, or small tents of these Indians were located on both sides of a roadway or trail. So Capt. Garland and his men made a surprise attack on the camp, and charged down this roadway between the tepees, and as they did, fired in both directions. Eight men, eight women, and eleven children - making a total of twenty-seven, were in the camp at the time. When the charge was first made, at least a part of the Indians were asleep. But almost immediately the bucks were on their feet and fought in self-defense the best they could. Seven of their number were killed, and eight severely wounded. Four men and three women were killed, and three men, two women, and three children wounded. Two of the seven dead were Caddos, and the remaining five were Anadarkos. Choctaw Tom's wife numbered among the dead, and his daughter had a thumb shot from one of her hands. According to reports, one of the members of Capt. Garland's party held his gun against her bosom and was in the act of firing, when she took the gun and pushed it away only in time to receive the discharge of the rifle through her thumb.

This was indeed a disastrous blow to the entire frontier. Capt. Garland and his men passed through Palo Pinto shortly after the assault and told the people, "We have opened the ball, and others can dance to the music."

Samuel W. Stephens, then seventeen years of age, was killed during the fighting. Since he was shot in the head from behind, it has often been supposed that he was accidentally killed during the firing by one of his companions. J. Barnes was wounded in the side, brought to Palo Pinto and for several days doctored by Dr. S. S. Taylor. He lived for some time, but finally died from the effects of his wound. The good citizens of Palo Pinto brought the body of young Samuel W. Stephens to town, made him a coffin and after his father, John M. Stephens, for whom Stephenville was named, and eleven others from Erath County arrived, he was buried near the present Bankhead Highway, and near the foot of the hill and dipping vat and about one-half mile west of the Palo Pinto Courthouse. Neither the lower or upper graveyard had been started at that time. About two or three months later, the body of young Stephens was removed to the present cemetery on the west side of Stephenville; and today, not far distant from the central portion of the graveyard, a monument shows that Samuel W. Stephens was killed December 27, 1858.

That the citizens were suffering because of the constant depredations of Indians, who belonged on the reservations, cannot be questioned. But the punishment inflicted has often been considered too severe. The invading party reported, however, that it was not their intention to kill or wound any women or children.

This conflict had a far-reaching effect on the frontier, and helped to bring to a critical climax the friction that had been brewing between the settlers and both wild Indians and wards on the reserves. As we have already seen, the wild tribes had never ceased their depredating, and a large percentage of the Indian troubles were traced to the Texas reservations. And prior to this conflict, the Indians in council had declared they were going to wage war on the Texas settlements. Consequently this fight on Elm about six miles north and a little east of Palo Pinto, was considered by many of the early frontiersmen, as the real beginning of the West Texas Indian war, on an extensive scale.

As we have previously pointed out, public opinion was somewhat divided concerning the Indian question. Many people, particularly those that lived near the reservation, were sympathetic toward the Indian. Others who had been greatly aggravated by their dastardly deeds, were greatly embittered towards both the Indians of the reserves and the wild tribes of the west.

Because of the importance of this particular conflict, and the reservation fight that followed, for the benefit of the reader, we shall give several of the reports made at the time, and shortly afterwards by Indian agents, on the one hand and citizens' commissions, etc., on the other.

**292. Report of J. J. Sturm.** - At the time the above conflict occurred, both Special Agents Robert S. Neighbors and S. P. Ross were away. As a consequence, the duty of making an investigation devolved upon J. J. Sturm, who was a farmer for the Lower Reservation. In his report, Mr. Sturm said:

"On the morning of the 28th of December last, Tinah, chief of the Caddos, with Jose Maria, chief of the Anadarko Indians, came up to the agency and reported that a camp of their people had been attacked, and a number of them killed and wounded, by a party of white men, on the morning of the 27th of December, about daylight, while their people were asleep. I immediately sent an express to you, with what information I could gather from the Indians about the murder of their people. After starting the express, I, with four other white men, started in company with about thirty Indians, for the camp of their murdered people. We arrived at the camp about an hour before sundown. It was situated on the margin of a small creek, in a bend of the Brazos, fifteen or eighteen miles below the lower lines of this reserve. There were five camps in all. These camps were occupied by the relatives of Choctaw Tom, an old Indian, long and favorably known as a faithful friend and ally of the whites.

"Tom and his people had been for some time encamped above Golconda, the county seat of Palo Pinto County; but, at the solicitation of a number of citizens, he was induced to move his camp to the place where the murders were committed, for the purpose of hunting bear with the men who had induced him to come to that place. About eight days previous to the murder of his people, he purchased an ox-wagon and a yoke of oxen from some citizen living near his camp, and returned with the same to the reserve, leaving his wife and daughter, his son and son-in-law, with the rest of the party, with instructions to return to the village, with their horses and camp equipage, by a near way; but they were induced by the citizens living near them to stay a few days longer than they intended, for the purpose of killing some bear, the sign of which the white people had discovered some distance below their camp. These people (Indians) numbered, including men, women, and children, twenty-seven, to-wit: eight men, eight women, and eleven children. On reaching the camp of these Indians, I found, in two of the camps, a man and a woman in each camp dead, and one person dead in each of the other three camps. They all, from their appearance and positions, were killed while asleep, with the exception one man, who was found lying at the mouth of the tent, having reached that position after he was shot in his bed. There were seven killed, in all, four men and three women, and eight wounded severely - three men, two women, and three children.

"The Indians had no means of digging graves, and deposited most of the dead bodies in a drift, covering them with brush and

stones. While they were performing this sad duty for the dead, I took a hasty view of the encampment, and, in company with an Indian, found where a portion of those who had committed the murder had lain near the camp, waiting, I have no doubt, for sufficient light (and while the Indians were asleep) to accomplish their fiendish purpose. Immediately after their bodies were interred, or put away, we started on our way to the reserve, and encamped about five miles from Golconda. We had not yet learned who had committed the murders, but on the next morning we were informed, by some citizens who came to our camp, that the murders were committed by some persons living mostly in Erath County. They stated that, on the evening of the 26th of December last, a party of twenty men came to Golconda, and said that they had been on the trail of some white men and Indians, but that they intended to encamp in the vicinity of the town and return home next morning, and did camp; but sometime after dark, they broke up their encampment, and were heard going in the direction of the above-mentioned camp. Nothing more was heard of them until eight or nine o'clock next morning, when an express arrived in town from these men, saying that they had had a fight with the Indians and wanted reinforcements, but they got no help. About eleven o'clock the party came to Golconda, with the exception of one, whom they left dead on the ground where the murder was committed, killed, it is believed, by their own party. After hearing the statements of these men, the Indians, being assured by me that the men who committed the murders should be brought to justice, returned quietly with me to their homes.

"It may be proper here to mention, that the men who killed the Indians, in passing through Golconda, told the citizens that they had opened the ball and the people there should dance to the music."

**292. The Report of the People of Palo Pinto Made During the Day of the Difficulty.** - The people of Palo Pinto were afraid that the killing of the Indians on Elm would be charged to them. As a consequence, for three or four nights they "Forted up" at the store of Capt. J. H. Dillahunty, in the old courthouse which stood where W. W. Fleming's store now stands, and perhaps in one or two other places. They also dispatched runners to the reserves, for the purpose of informing the Indians and agents that the people of Palo Pinto were in no way responsible for the charge. These runners or representatives carried the following communication addressed to Major Robert S. Neighbors and Capt. S. P. Ross, special agents for the Indians:

"Palo Pinto, December 27, 1858.

"Gentlemen: It is with feelings of deep sorrow we have to inform you that whereas the friendly Indians were among us, hunting, acting in a peaceable manner, by no means molesting

us; and whereas there came in among us a company of about twenty men, mostly from Erath County, and, unknown to us, killed some of the said Indians, and from which of said party the fight ensued or commenced we have no knowledge; and whereas the people here wish to inform the agents of these facts; and furthermore, the people do not approbate the cause of said party in the affair, and furthermore, the people of this county desire to live in peace and amity; and furthermore, the parties who acted in this affair have left us immediately, leaving us in an exposed situation; and whereas information has reached the people of this place and vicinity of certain men who had a difficulty with the said Indians, said citizens immediately called and appointed a committee of seven men to inform the agents of this affair, hoping said agents would take such action, for our defense and protection, as they might deem proper, and that the committee would request the agents to send an answer, by the bearer of this communication, of their feelings on this occasion.

"W. W. Cochran, B. F. Walker, Chairmen; J. Pollard, John Hitson, Jesse Hitson, Preston Witt, J. H. Dillahunty, C. T. Hazzlewood, Committee."

**293. Efforts to Arrest Captain Garland and His Men. -**

After Major Neighbors was informed of this affair, he made the necessary complaints against such persons, who at the time were known to have participated in the charge. Judge Battle afterwards issued bench warrants, but it seems such warrants were never served, for the reason that local sentiment in many instances was strongly in favor of Captain Garland and his men. To obtain a more effective prosecution, Major Neighbors employed Edward J. Gurley, an attorney of Waco, to assist in the prosecution. When Mr. Gurley had been unsuccessful in having the parties arrested by local peace officers, he then called on Col. John S. Ford, who at the time was commanding a company of Texas rangers, and camped on the Leon. Colonel Ford addressed a communication to Mr. Gurley, to the effect that he was without authority to act independent of the local peace officers, and was therefore submitting the matter to the authorities at Austin.

But at the time Captain Garland and his men were being severely criticised by both the press and public.

**294. The Report of Captain Garland and His Men. -**

Because of the several newspaper reports, and the criticism advanced, Captain Garland and his command came forward and made the following report, and affidavits:

"TO THE PEOPLE OF TEXAS.

"We, the undersigned, are the individuals who composed the company that attacked and killed a party of Indians (from the

lower reservation) in this county, on the morning of the 27th of December, and felt it due to ourselves to make known the causes that led to this act, and all the attending circumstances, in order that the public mind may be enabled to form a just opinion of our conduct, from a correct acknowledgment of the facts. We do this, not from any disposition to evade any responsibility that may attach to our acts, but a proper regard to an impartial public sentiment.

"Facts and circumstances, dating as far back as last winter, all connected, produced the opinion among ourselves and the community, that it was the reserve Indians, and them alone, that have committed the depredations in our section of country. These circumstances are too numerous to give them all, and yet they all form an important link in the chain. The fact that, prior to the commencement of these depredations, the Indians from the reservation were all through the country on hunting excursions, and soon after horses were stolen, and the manner in which they selected the horses, and the crossings of the mountains, and streams, all evidenced so thorough a knowledge of the country, and the situation of the horses, as to give rise and strong suspicions that the marauders were our near neighbors. These suspicions could not fail to be strengthened when several of our citizens learned that their horses were in possession of the reservation Indians, and, upon demand, received some of them, the Indians demanding ten dollars per head as salvage, claiming to have recovered them from the Comanches, who, they allege, with the Kickapoos, had stolen them.

"In several instances, there was a strong effort to conceal some of the horses known to be in their possession, for proof of which we refer to the evidence of Robert Martin, and J. Hightower, two reliable and unimpeachable citizens, whose depositions, properly authenticated, are herewith published.

Notwithstanding, these circumstances created strong suspicions, and caused many of our citizens to request the agent repeatedly not to allow the Indians to come down into the settlements again; still, many of our citizens, willing to make some allowances for irregularities among a people changing, or it would be more proper to say, which it is claimed are changing, from a savage to a civilized state, and we hoped our suspicions might prove groundless. Rangers were called out, and soon the Indians retired from their hunting excursions, and remained on the reservation. Immediately the depredations among us ceased. The reserve Indians went out with the rangers in the spring, in the expedition against the Comanches. We learn they fought gallantly, and, though some among us still had our doubts, a large majority of our people joined in the encomiums so copiously heaped upon them. Things remained through the summer, and we began to hope for peace and quiet, and our country began to settle up rapidly. This fall our red neighbors from the reservation began to come down among us in hunting

parties. We immediately had our apprehensions excited. Some of our number, Wm. E. Motheral, with two other gentlemen, citizens of Palo Pinto, Messrs. Lawder and Davidson, went to a party above Robert Martin's Esq., between the 5th and 10th of December, and firmly but kindly told them they must return to the reservation; that the people could not nor would not permit them to hunt through the settlements; that they claimed to be friends and good Indians, but that our people could not distinguish one tribe from another, and they did not intend for them to stay; that if they were good Indians, they would show it by returning to the reservation, and, if they did not do it, they would raise men and kill them. The Indians promised to go the next morning early, and also promised to go by and notify some other parties that were in the country. The next day, Judge Motheral, while horse hunting, met with two men of this same party near the same place. He again warned them of their danger, and they openly laughed in his face at the warning; and he replied to them that they might laugh, but if they did not heed it, they would find it but too true when, perhaps, it was too late. They then became more serious, and said they were then on their way to the reservation. These warnings were made intelligible to the Indians, and repeated till satisfied; and one who spoke the English language said he understood it. It is proper to remark here, that these Indians said they were Anadarkos, and showed a permit from S. P. Ross, for the bearer and eleven others to hunt for twenty-five days, and dated the 11th of October, 1857, and they were told it was worthless. Mr. Loyd, a citizen, also notified them that the citizens would kill them, if they remained in the settlements. Other parties were warned, all to no purpose. They would move their camps two or three miles, but would not leave the settlements.

"After these repeated warnings, and the failure of the Indians to obey, six horses were stolen from off the Palo Pinto, about the 16th of December; and on the 21st of the same month, a party of citizens from Palo Pinto and Erath Counties, numbering from forty to fifty, assembled on the waters of the Bosque near Jamison's Peak, to take into consideration the best course to rid ourselves of horse thieves, either red or white, or both, as we had reasons to believe that there were a few white men in collusion with Indians. A committee, composed of a large number, was appointed. They organized the company composed of the undersigned, and they were ordered by the committee, and it was sanctioned by the meeting unanimously, that we should kill any Indians found this side of Cedar Creek, and arrest certain white men, and warn others to leave the State. We failed to find the white men we were ordered to arrest, but notified the others to leave the State, which they promised to do. We then, in pursuance of our orders, went in pursuit of the Indians that had been encamped on the waters of the Palo Pinto, and who, we learned, were still in the county of Palo Pinto. In the meantime, we had learned from Mr. Joseph P. Brown, a reliable citizen, that one of the party of rangers from Hubbard's

Creek informed him that they had trailed an Indian trail from where a negro was killed, on Hubbard's Creek, (upon which trail some bloody garments were found,) to the camp on Palo Pinto, occupied by the reserve Indians, and that those reserve Indians told them that they had some of their horses stolen the night before the rangers reached their camp. The rangers then trailed this trail from this to another camp of the reserve Indians, (the one occupied by the party warned by Judge Motheral), which they had then deserted, and from which they could trail them no further; or, at least, the Indian guides, who were trailing for the rangers, processed to be unable to get the trail off.

"We pursued the trail made by the Indians, in pursuance to our orders, and with a conscientious feeling of duty to ourselves and our country, until we came on a camp, early on the morning of the 27th of December, when we charged the camp, and killed all the men we saw, and, unfortunately and unintentionally for it was positively against orders and our intention, to molest the women, still, from the situation of the men, being in the tents, it being early in the morning and raining, two women and one child were killed.

"It was unfortunate, as we know it will be made a frightful theme for denunciation against us by the sickly sentimentalists who are ready to plead the cause of the poor Indians. That it was not our intention, is sufficiently apparent, when we left all we saw unhurt, except those mixed in with the warriors, and there were several.

"We have testimony to prove that a warrior made the first effort to shoot; but candor and truth, and that spirit that dictates this narrative, require us to say, that our charging his camp was sufficient to atone and cause his resistance, and that it had no influence on our course. It is proper, also, that we should say, that the hostile demonstration made towards Mr. Vernay by Jose Maria, the principal chief on the lower reservation, and his son, was made known to us before we made the attack, and which is proven by Mr. Lemon's evidence; and, in conclusion, will only add, that we honestly believe that we only anticipated the Indians; that when we reflect that they were scattered over the country, from the lower reservation to Paluxy a distance of eighty miles, and the insulting manner with which they acted, and the depredations actually committed - many minor ones we have not detailed, such as killing cattle - and it leaves no doubt in our minds but that they, after making their hunt and spying out our horses, would have left a sufficient number to have driven off our stock, and killed many unfortunate citizens happening in their way, and it would, as usual, have been charged to the Comanches, and the reserve Indians ready in the spring to have led our troops to avenge themselves upon an enemy of theirs, but who, we do not honestly believe have done us any harm. That we have had wool pulled over our eyes in this way long enough, is about a unanimous opinion.

"We have no apology to offer for what we have done. We are sustained by hundreds of our fellow-citizens. We are well known in the country in which we live, and have ever been men obedient to the law.

"Peter Garland, captain; Daniel Thornton, J. Hightower, E. Fireash, T. Willie, W. E. Motheral, W. W. McNeal, Robert Duval, J. P. Harris, W. Fitzgerald, A. L. Braw, R. Dupuy, W. J. F. Lowder, W. Wood, J. Barnes, H. Highsaw, J. R. Waller, ---Dalton, Geo. Harden.

"P. S. - Loss: Killed, 1, Samuel Stephens; wounded, 1, John Barnes.

"On hearing that the Indians at the Brazos agency had horses in their possession, supposed to belong to the citizens I, having lost some horses some time in February, 1858, went to the agency to see if there were any of my horses there. I went to Captain S. P. Ross, in company with others, and made known our business. I told him that there was a horse there that had been described to me, and the description suited a horse that I had lost, and requested him to send some Indian with me to see the horse, which he agreed to. But, soon afterwards, he and Jim Shaw had a talk, and he then told me that it would be a good deal of trouble to hunt up the horse then, but that all horses the Indians had taken from the Comanches would be brought in on Saturday, when I could see if my horse was there, and see if any of my neighbors' horses were there. He assured me that every horse that the Indians had taken would be exhibited there on that day, in a certain lot. Some time afterwards, in speaking of the honesty of his Indians, he said that they were perfectly honest, and entirely under his control; but that, perhaps, some of the young men might pick up little things, such as a knife or pocket handkerchief, but, if they did, he could have it brought up in fifteen minutes; but recalled that, and said he could have it brought up in a day.

"Afterwards, Messrs. Hightower, Thornton, Cowden and myself concluded we would ride over the reservation, and see what we could see. During the time that we were out we saw Mr. Garland's mare, which we all knew. We agreed that we would say nothing about seeing the mare, but wait to see whether she would be brought up and exhibited on Saturday, that we might have proof whether or not the Indians were as honest as Captain Ross had represented them to be. On the morning of Saturday, (the day of exhibiting the horses), the Indians packed out beef on the mare, when we saw her again, and then we knew that there could be no excuse if she was not brought up, such as that she was missing, or could not be found. We said nothing about the mare until late in the evening, when the Indians said they had brought in all the horses they could find; then Captain Ross was told that there was one mare that we

knew was there, but she had not been brought up. Then Captain Ross asked how we knew it. We told him that we had seen her, and the Indians rode her in that morning, and packed beef out on her. He then said, 'Why in the hell didn't you take right hold of her?' We answered, that we wanted to test the honesty of his Indians; that he said they were honest, and we wanted to see whether they would bring in all the horses or not. Then we told him we wanted the mare brought in early next morning. He promised that she should be brought in next morning early. But she was not brought in until the second day, about noon.

"Soon after my horses were missing, a pony was found in the range from which they were taken, broken down and lame. I took up the pony and advertised it as an estray. When I went to the agency, I rode the pony. After I had been there a day or two, the pony was claimed by one of the Caddo Indians as the property of another Indian. I told him to tell the owner to come the next day to Captain Ross and describe the pony, and if it was his he should have it, that it was not mine; which he did, describing it minutely. I then told Captain Ross, if I got no horse up there to ride home, that I must have the pony to ride home; to which he consented, and made arrangement for the Indian to come home with me to get his pony, and I was to see him safe across the Brazos on his return to the agency. G. F. Cowden then asked whether or not the Indian would sell the pony. He said he would. He was asked what he would take for it. He said twenty-five dollars. Mr. Cowden said he would give it. Captain Ross then told Mr. Cowden not to pay the money to the Indian; that he was indebted to Mr. Barnard, and an arrangement would be made to have the money paid to Mr. Barnard.

"I staked the pony that night as usual, and the next morning he was gone. I went to Captain Ross, and told him that my horse was gone, and I believed some of the Indians had stolen him. He flew into a passion and said: 'By God that was always the way; men come up here on business, and half stake their horses, and they get away, and accuse the Indians of stealing them.' I afterwards told him that I was not mistaken; that the stake, rope and hobble were left hanging up in a tree, and told him I wished he would have the pony brought back. He turned on his heel and gave me no answer. On the next day after the pony was taken, I and Messrs. Cowden and Hightower saw the same Indian that first claimed the pony riding it. After that, I told Captain Ross that I had seen the Indian with the pony, and that I would like to have something done about it, and he turned off with contempt, without giving me an answer.

"During our stay at the agency, Captain Ross told us that it was the Kickapoo Indians that were doing all this mischief on the frontier, and not the Indians from either of the reservations; and after that, one night after supper, Messrs. Hightower, Cowden, Thornton, Buck Barry and myself were in Captain Ross' office, when we got into a conversation about the Indians at the

upper reserve, and Captain Ross stated that Tecumseh, the chief at the upper reserve, had a short time previous to that, been down to the lower reservation begging permission to remove himself and family down there; stating that he believed he was in danger of losing his life by the hands of his own Indians; and stating that he had already lost all his horses and that they had brought one of his own horses, and tied it in the middle of his village, in front of one of their tents, and sent him word if that was his horse, to come and claim it; and Captain Ross asked him if he went and claimed it. He said no; if he had, he would have been killed.

"Captain Ross then stated that he was satisfied that it was the Indians of the upper reserve that were doing all the stealing on the frontier, in connection with the wild Comanches. I told Captain Ross that the people did not know one Indian from another, and that the reserve Indians were now out of the settlements, and they were determined to keep them out; and if they came down into the settlement they would get killed. Captain Ross said that was just what he wanted; that the Indians had no right to leave that reserve without a pass from him; and that the pass always gave them their bounds and limited their stay; and that if they overstayed their time, or went out of their bounds, or were caught off the reserve without a pass, that the settlers would be justified in killing them. He then stated that it would be hard if the Indians were not allowed to come down into the settlements to hunt their horses, if they should stray off in that direction. I told him he could obviate that difficulty by sending a white man with them, and giving the white man a pass stating his business.

"ROBERT MARTIN.

"The foregoing statement was sworn to, and subscribed before me, this the 5th day of January, A. D. 1859.

"WILLIAM MINGUS, J. P.

"I have examined the foregoing statement made by Robert Martin. I was with him at the Brazos agency, in February, 1858. I know all the facts he has stated to be true, except the conversation between him and Captain Ross about the Indians coming down into the settlements, which is mentioned in the latter part of this statement. I was not present when it took place.

"J. HIGHTOWER.

"The foregoing statement was sworn to, and subscribed before me, this the 5th day of January, 1859.

"WILLIAM MINGUS, J. P.

"Palo Pinto County, Texas, January 2, 1859.

"On the 2nd day of December last, Johnson, the son of Jose Maria, came to my house on Ioni Creek, and penned a mule belonging to Mr. Vernoy, a neighbor of mine, and afterwards drove it off. He said he was going to take it to the Caddo village. I forbid it, and told him that it was Vernoy's mule. He replied, no; that he stopped there and asked the squaw and she said no, it did not belong there.

"On the 3rd day of December, Johnson, accompanied by his father, Jose Maria, returned to my house after a pony that he had sold to me, alleging that it belonged to his father, and he was dissatisfied with the trade. I delivered to him the pony, and sent for Vernoy to come to my house and see them about the mule. He came and told them that they had taken off his mule, and he must write to Mr. Ross about it, and have it brought back, which appeared to make them both very angry. Mr. Vernoy sat down and commenced writing. Jose Maria and his son left the house and returned with their bows and a bunch of arrows in their hands, and each selected an arrow, examining the points, and picking the sharpest, and drew their bows on Mr. Vernoy's back. He being busily engaged writing, was not conscious of their acts. I was unarmed, except a belt knife, Jose Maria and his son being between me and my gun. I watched them close, being afraid at that moment to let Vernoy know his situation, but intended, if they attacked him, to do what execution I could with my knife. They looked at Vernoy as vicious as they could, and I expected them every moment to shoot, but they got up and left the house; and when about leaving, I followed, and told them to wait and take that writing to Mr. Ross; they replied they would not. I talked with them, trying to reconcile them; told Jose Maria that I was his friend, and he must take the paper to Ross. They finally consented, and took the paper. Also, some two months previous to the taking of Vernoy's mule, I missed a mare and colt of my own, and, meeting with John (a Caddo Indian) I inquired about her. Describing her minutely. He, looking around, discovered my branding iron, pointed at it, and showed me that that brand was on her shoulder. He told me that she was at the Caddo village. I told him that if he would bring her to me I would pay him one dollar. At the time Jose Maria and his son were at my house, I informed him that Caddo John had told me of my mare and colt being at the village, and that I wished him to send them to me. He said he did not believe she was there; that John lied about it. The reserve Indians have hunted a great deal about me, are well acquainted with me and my stock, and I am well satisfied that they took my mare and colt, knowing them to be my property.

"GEORGE LEMON.

"This day personally appeared before me, George Lemon, and made oath, in due form of law, that the above statement was

correct and true, to the best of his knowledge and belief, this, the 2nd of January, 1859.

"WM. MINGUS, J. P.

"On the 2nd day of December last, an Indian came to my house, driving a mule belonging to Mr. Cornelius Vernoy, and asked me if it was my mule. I told him that it was, and to drive it up to the house, and not to let it follow his horses off. In reply, he nodded his head and grunted, but drove the mule off.

"BERSHABA BINGHAM.

"This day personally appeared before me, Bershaba Bingham, and made oath, in due form of law, that the above statement was correct and true, to the best of her knowledge and belief, this, the 1st day of January, 1859.

"WM. MINGUS, J. P."

#### **295. Further Activities Concerning the Reservation**

**Indians.** - Since many of the citizens expected a counter charge from the Indians; the sixth of January, 1859, approximately two hundred citizens of Coryell, Bosque, Comanche, Erath, and Palo Pinto Counties met and organized several companies for frontier protection. Such meeting was held at a place called Camp Palo Pinto, and some of their reports were made from the town of Palo Pinto. Geo. B. Erath, J. M. Norris, and Dickson Walker were appointed commissioners to repair to the agency and make known the attitude of the citizens, and demand that the Indians be kept on the reserves. They were also instructed to tell the Indians that the late murder of some of their members was caused from their failure to remain on the reservations, and that in the future they would be dealt with similarly, if found among the settlements. A treaty was entered into between the citizens on the one hand and the Indians on the other, whereby it was agreed that white men passing through the reserves would be unmolested, but the Indians would stay out of the settlements, etc.

#### **296. Evidences of Other Troubles With the Reservation**

**Tribes.** - The treaty mentioned in the preceding section seemed to have had little force and effect, for after the frontier affairs were calm for a few days, soon the war clouds again began to appear over the horizon. Writing from Russell's Store in Palo Pinto County - (the store at this time belonged to Whatley) - F. M. Harris addressed a communication to S. P. Ross, the agent in charge of the Lower Reservation. His communication was corroborated by C. L. Carter, of Palo Pinto County, and a Mr. Dillingham of Jack County, and follows, to-wit:

"Whatley's Store,

"Palo Pinto County, March 1, 1859.

"Dear Captain: This will inform you, that, on my arrival at this place, Mr. Whatley informed me that there was an express passed this place for Jacksboro, from Stephenville. His mission was to raise men to attack the reserve. They say that the treaty that was made by the peace commissioners has been futile, and they do not intend to stand it any longer. They are raising men to drive the Indians and whites off the reservations; the 20th instant is the time set to make the spread.,

You, I presume, know your business. If you intend to have any soldiers at the reserve, I think it would be to your interest to get them as early as practicable. You know best, I presume you will act accordingly. I am satisfied, from what I have heard, that the reserve will be attacked, and that soon. Respectfully yours,

"F. M. HARRIS.

"To: S. P. Ross, Esq.,  
Brazos Agency, Texas."

**297. Removal of the Reserves.** - The frontier affairs of Texas were so unsettled that in the spring of 1859, it was decided that the Indians be removed to Oklahoma.

**298. Attitude of Citizens Toward Indian Agents.** - May 5, 1859, Mr. S. P. Ross addressed the following communication to Major Robert S. Neighbors:

"Brazos Agency, Texas, May 5, 1859.

"Sir: On the morning of the 2nd instant, I was informed by Parson Tackett, who had left Golconda the day before, that Captain Baylor had left there with a party of armed men with the avowed intention of taking scalps of reserve Indians. On receipt of this information, coming as it did from a reliable source, I communicated the facts to Captain Plummer, who immediately dispatched an express to Camp Cooper for reinforcements. The chiefs of different tribes were also notified of the fact, and they immediately assembled their people near the agency buildings for protection.

"This move on the part of the citizens has entirely suspended the farming operations, and I am satisfied that the Indians will not again be willing to return to their farms.

"I learn from Lieutenant Burnett, who has arrived here with reinforcements from Camp Cooper, that Captain Baylor had made an attack on the upper reserve Indians, and that a portion of the cavalry were in pursuit of him and his party. Enclosed you will find an order from Baylor, Nelson and others, addressed to Neighbors and Ross, demanding their immediate resignation.

This thing was got up, I have been informed, during the sitting of court in Golconda, by Baylor, who, I hear, said he would deliver it to me in person. I received it by last mail. After giving this document all the consideration to which it was entitled, I, upon mature reflection, have concluded to not obey its mandate, but to wait until informed by the proper authority that my services are no longer needed as agent of this reserve.

"I had hoped that when it was made known that the government intended to remove the Indians from Texas as soon as practicable, that the agitators would become quiet; but they are now more clamorous than ever. It seems that ponies, and not protection, is the groundwork of this move. Some of these exasperated men have succeeded very well in the pony move. All of the above is most respectfully submitted.

"I am, sir, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

"S. P. ROSS.

"To: R. S. Neighbors, Esq.,  
"Sup. Agent Texas Indians. San Antonio, Texas."

The petition mentioned in the preceding article, was as follows, and signed by the following frontiersmen and citizens:

"April 25, 1859.

Gentlemen: Your course and conduct for the last eighteen months having utterly failed to give satisfaction to the citizens of the frontier of Texas, and for the reason that the opinion prevails generally in all the frontier counties that you have acted in bad faith to the Indians and white men, and having been disappointed in the long cherished hope that you would be removed from office, but, on the contrary, having learned that you have lately been reappointed, we take this our only method to make known to you our unqualified disapprobation of your course as agents, and to demand your immediate resignation.

Signed: F. W. Fautleroy, John Taylor, F. L. Denison, Lewis P. Strong, W. S. Carpenter, J. R. Waller, J. N. Stanley, J. F. Pollard, W. W. Cochran, Jno. R. Baylor, W. H. Cowden, J. P. Davidson, Wesley Nelson, F. B. Powers, Fuller Millsaps, Allen Brooks, J. W. Estes, Wm. G. Martin, Wm. Niel, A. F. Turnban, R. Y. Powers. Reuben Vaughan, J. D. Neel, James M. Bell, Charley Turnblain, Washington Hullum, E. F. Spencer, Hiram Barber, Riley Hubbard, M. Rolston, J. L. McCracken, A. J. Stephens, M. V. P. Easterwault, J. A. McLaren, E. H. Fireash, A. C. Bingham, John Foille, B. F. Harris, B. B. Meadows, J. W. F. Stow, Levi Ford, James Roberts, J. S. Whitmore, Joel Counts, C. Vernoy, James Jeffreys. W. W. McNeill, John Danisly, B. F. Mullins, A. Lane, J. W. Price, W. M. Peters, W. J. F. Lundy, A. Nelson, J. C. McClure, Benj. Harris, Wyatt Williams, J. G. Belile, Saml. Oxford, John

Funderburgh, J. C. Carpenter Jr., John Hittson, William R. McGlothlin, N. V. Hillinsgrann, Corneilius McGlothlin, T. J. Simons, J. Stephens, Smal F. Stone, Wm. McGlothlin, J. L. Davis, G. R. Jowell, John N. Ganney, Samuel Fruit, J. B. Harris, O. W. Neel, A. J. Steward, E. T. Jeffery, Levi Current, W. J. Councill, Robert Martin, J. W. Lynn, J. W. Burket, G. W. Greer, Squire Robson, P. S. Jones, J. C. Blair, W. L. Lasater, Oliver Loving, T. J. Lindsey, M. Maris, Wm. B. Eubank, J. B. Bradley, George Lemons, G. W. DeRossett, John Bloker, L. P. Bise, Joseph Smith, W. G. Roberts, L. J. Chamberlain, H. H. McLean, A. Russell, J. W. Pollard, N. M. Morris, G. T. Condon, P. M. Crouch, R. W. Pollard, J. P. Brown, J. J. Cureton, Wm. N. Blare, J. N. Walker. J. E. Harrington, S. Branan, G. P. Barber, G. W. Slaughter, M. B. Lock, G. Porter, Wm. S. Evans, R. S. Porter, L. B. T. Clayton, E. H. McRae, J. C. Carpenter, J. Wright, J. H. Baker, E. W. Coffelt, Samuel P. Woodward, Nathan Blackwell, James A. Pody, L. C. Barton.

To: Messrs. R. S. Neighbors, Supervising Agent Texas Indians; S. P. Ross, Special Agent, Brazos Agency, and -----Leper, Special Agent, Comanche Agency.

**299. The Reservation Fight.** - For some time the attention of the entire southwest had been focused on the Indian reserves. The Governor of Texas had issued his proclamation in an effort to establish peace. The officers in command of Fort Belknap and Camp Cooper had been on the alert for any emergency. The Commissioner of Indian Affairs at Washington, issued his several orders. But still the surging conflict between the citizens on the one hand, and the reservation Indians and agents on the other, continued to ebb and flow with an increasing momentum, and the exasperated citizens brought the question to a final climax, when men from Montague, Denton, Cooke, Collin, Wise, Parker, Jack, Palo Pinto, Erath, Bosque, Comanche, Coryell, and other counties rendezvoused near the lines of Young, Jack, and Palo Pinto Counties, for the purpose of attacking the reserves. The entire command was placed under John R. Baylor. For a short time these men were drilled on a branch, which has since been known as Filibuster Branch, because Col. John R. Baylor and his men were referred to as filibusters.

During the morning of May 23rd, 1859, Colonel Baylor and his command left their camp on Filibuster Branch, which was about four miles east of the Lower Reservation, and started toward the Brazos Agency. The movement of the citizens, however, was not unknown to the Indians, their agents, and the soldiers at Fort Belknap. In fact, for several days an attack had been expected. Ample fortifications and breastworks had been built, and soldiers from Fort Belknap under the command of Capt. J. B. Plummer, of the United States Army, were stationed on the reservation for any emergency. Colonel Baylor drew his command in a line of battle between the Waco village and

Agency buildings, and they were within six hundred yards of the latter point.

Captain Plummer dispatched Captain Gilbert with his company to meet Colonel Baylor and demand of him for what purpose he had entered upon the reservation with an armed body of men. Colonel Baylor replied that he had come to assault certain Indians of this reserve, but not to attack any whites. But should the troops or citizens fire upon his men, he intended to attack them also. After receiving this reply, Captain Plummer sent Lieutenant Burnet to Colonel Baylor with instructions to the effect that the soldiers were there to protect the Indians on the reserves from attacks of armed bands of citizens, that they would do so to the best of their ability, and that in the name of the Government of the United States, Captain Plummer warned Colonel Baylor to leave the reserve. Colonel Baylor then replied that this last message did not alter his determination to attack the Indians on the reserves, but that he would attend to this matter himself, and further that he regretted the necessity of coming in collision with the United States troops, but that he had determined to destroy the Indians on both reserves, if it cost the life of every man in his command.

About the first bloodshed that occurred, if reports be true, Colonel Baylor's men killed an elderly Indian man, who was away from his comrades and looking after a pony; and an elderly woman, working in her little garden. But since they were operating from a distance, they no doubt, did not know that the latter was a woman. This occurred on Salt Creek, near the crossing, and only a short distance from the Agency buildings, and it was here the fight began. Only a few Indians were engaged at first; a running fight occurred toward the home of Wm. Marlin, where a stand was made by the citizens. By this time, a large number of Indians were engaged in the fighting; but as a rule, the two factions were firing at each other from a considerable distance. The thickest of fighting occurred around the home of Wm. Marlin, and it began about four o'clock in the evening. At all times the soldiers were in readiness, but they never entered the conflict. Late in the evening, when the firing ceased, about one additional Indian was killed, and five others wounded.

A Mr. Washburn and possibly one or two of the Texans were also killed. Captain W. C. McAdams, and Dan Gage were wounded.

Along about this same time, some minor attacks were made upon the Comanche reservation, but the major fighting occurred on the evening of the 23rd of May, 1859, at the home of Wm. Marlin.

**300. Peace Commissioners.** - June 5, 1859, Governor H. K. Runnels appointed Geo. B. Erath, John Henry Brown, Richard Coke, Dan Smith, and Joe Steiner, as peace commissioners to

repair to the Brazos agency and other North Texas points for the purpose of settling the strife between the two belligerent factions.

The commission went from place to place, and from frontier village to village, for the express purpose of gathering authentic data, and quieting the hostile citizens, who had rebelled against the reservation Indians. After making an investigation, the commission reported as follows:

"About the time of leaving Waco vague rumors reached us that the armed citizens assembled in the vicinity of the reserve, were returning to their homes, and on reaching Weatherford we learned that a general disbandment had taken place; but also that extensive and formidable preparations for a renewal of the contest were on foot in that and several of the neighboring counties. A meeting of about one hundred and fifty persons assembled in Weatherford, at our request, to which was explained the power and objects of our mission, with an appeal to them to remain at their homes until we could investigate and act. Although much feeling existed, the people present voted unanimously to await our action.

"The feeling in Parker County was altogether one of sympathy for their sister counties who had suffered, no depredations having been committed in that county.

"We next proceeded to the Brazos reservation, where we met Messrs. Neighbors and Ross, the agents, and Captain Plummer, commander of the troops there stationed.

"We offered the agents an opportunity of meeting the various complaints and charges against them on the part of the people, for this purpose addressing a note to Major Neighbors, briefly advising of the alleged grievances, and asking replies to interrogations designed to afford him an opportunity of explanation and defense. A copy of our note to him, marked A, is herewith transmitted. Major Neighbors expressed much gratification at the opportunity thus given him, and answered our communication with some detail. His communication is herewith transmitted, marked B.

"From the reserve, we proceeded to Belknap, Jacksboro, Palo Pinto, Stephenville and Meridian, to this place, addressing meetings of the people at Jacksboro, Palo Pinto and Stephenville, and holding interviews with individuals at all the points named, and along the line of our travel.

"We also received testimony bearing upon the difficulties whenever it could be obtained, generally under oath of the deponent, but in some cases only written statements, in the absence of an officer authorized to administer oaths.

"At each of the meetings named, and elsewhere on the route, the citizens, with great unanimity, agreed to abide by our proposed action under the authority conferred upon us, and not again renew the contest pending the removal of the Indians out of the State, unless driven thereto by further depredations upon them. From a careful observation of the public feeling, and undoubted conviction of the guilt of the Indians, in connection with the steps in actual progress for another struggle, it became manifest to us that the only means of restoring tranquility and preventing a conflict to be deplored by all good citizens, was to exercise the power conferred, and at once call out a force to act as a police guard around the reserve, to see that the Indians should not leave its limits under any circumstances from which depredations could possibly arise.

"As the reply of Major Neighbors reflects upon the acts of Captain Nelson and Mr. Baylor in connection with the difficulties, we submitted the same to Captain Nelson, while at Meridian. His reply thereto is also herewith transmitted, marked C. We have not met Mr. Baylor, nor are we advised of his whereabouts; otherwise we should have pursued the same course towards him.

"In order to elucidate the subject, and render our investigation and conclusions as brief and intelligible as practicable, we submit a complete review of facts, as proved by positive or very strong circumstantial testimony.

"We procured no testimony inculcating either the Comanches or Brazos reserve Indians prior to the fall of 1856. Gentry's horses were then stolen and afterwards recovered, in part, at the Comanche reserve, under circumstances strongly pointing to those Indians as the thieves. From that time, horses were occasionally stolen and cattle killed, until about the close of 1857, when several murders were committed on the line of Coryell and Bosque Counties, and numerous horses stolen. Without direct testimony, yet in connection with other and subsequent events, it is not impossible that the reserve Indians were connected in those acts. About the same time, numerous robberies and some murders were committed in Llano, San Saba, Brown and Lampasas Counties; and from that period may be dated mainly the origin of the conviction, now almost universal along the frontier, that the depredators were mainly reserve Indians, though, until last fall, or winter, many believed those on the Brazos reserve were innocent, or, at farthest, that only a few lawless persons among them were guilty.

"The testimony, however, goes to show that those Indians had previously to that, killed cattle, and had horses at different times in their possession, under circumstances leaving no doubt of their guilt as horse thieves.

"As the people became more harrassed and alarmed, and consequently more in consultation one section with another, new facts were developed, sworn testimony adduced, and a general conviction fastened upon the minds of the people that the robberies and murders had been and were committed by Indians belonging to both reserves. Complaints were made, and in divers instances have been sworn to, that when citizens went to the reserves to look after their stolen horses, they were treated with incivility, and met with expressions of unbounded confidence in the honesty and fidelity of the Indians. These facts, coupled with the feeling incident to the frequent loss of their stock, and became co-workers in bringing about subsequent collisions.

"The agents were requested not to allow the Indians to leave the reservation, unless accompanied by responsible white men, but it is alleged no regard was paid to their wishes. On the 27th of December last, Garland and his party killed several of a small band encamped in Palo Pinto County, unaccompanied by a white protector. The facts relative to this matter need not be recapitulated; but the results growing out of it went far to exasperate the people. A large body of armed citizens assembled in Palo Pinto County to consult with the agents, but, they being absent, a verbal agreement was made with the chiefs that no Indian or Indians should leave the reserve unless in company with a responsible white man, and that the people would disband and go to their homes, which they did. Still later, after the federal government ordered the removal of the Indians, the people again met at Jamison's Peak, and resolved, if the agents would keep the Indians on the reserve, that they would remain quiet, and allow a reasonable time for their removal. Depredations, however, still continued, and most of the other counties organized minute ranging companies - those below for general protection against all Indians; some near the reserve, more particularly to guard against what they believed to be depredations of bands from the reserve.

"The Jack County company, while thus ranging, captured, and the same day killed, the Indian, Fox. Fox's party consisted of seven, with four led horses, returning from beyond Red River. On their way out, it is shown, that seven horses were stolen in Jack County, under circumstances throwing strong suspicion upon them. In their absence, the citizens believed they had stolen the horses, and this is assigned as the special reason for the attack. The killing, after capturing Fox, cannot be justified; but the grounds for the attack upon his party, viewed circumstantially, were strong. For several weeks previous to this event, and the almost contemporaneous killing of young Halden, near the Comanche reserve, comparative quiet had prevailed.

"But when the killing of Fox was followed by the immediate march of about eighty Indians, with an employe of the agency

and a lieutenant of the United States army and two soldiers to Jacksboro, the exasperation of the people along the whole frontier, and inside of it, became great, and hundreds flew to arms, primarily to prevent the threatened arrest of the Jack County rangers, but prepared, also, to resent the indignity in any manner that might offer.

"We are driven irresistibly, by all the facts ascertained, to the conclusion that this act of unprecedented usurpation, impending the homes and lives of a sleeping village, (unadvised of their approach or its cause), by the presence of eighty mounted Indian warriors, excited by the loss of one of their own band, was an outrage of the most dangerous and insuling character, unparalleled, perhaps, in our own or the history of any other State. It was the immediate cause of the assembling of the people under arms near the Brazos reserve, and all that sprung from that assemblage.

"It can only be mitigated by the fact that the Indians, with a white man, were sent out by the agent to ascertain what had become of Fox, and that Captain Plummer sent Lieutenant Burnet and two soldiers along to prevent a collision; neither the agent nor Captain Plummer, perhaps, having any idea of the party going farther than the scene of the skirmish. Be this as it may, the actual outrage upon the people of Jacksboro, and of the bearing and language of Lieutenant Burnet in this matter were extremely reprehensible. It is due to Captain Plummer to say, that he is placed in a most delicate and painful position as an officer of the United States; and that, while he is bound to meet force with force in a certain contingency, he expresses the greatest solicitude, past and present, to avoid any collision with the people in whose state he has been stationed eleven years, and for whom he manifests the highest regard.

"We deem it unnecessary to follow the events connected with the assemblage and skirmish at the reserve. We hope there will occur no occasion for its repetition; and, with the guard proposed to be thrown around the reserves, and their speedy removal, (which cannot be too strongly urged), there is every reason to believe tranquility will be restored.

"You will see also that the Mexican lately captured on the Clear Fork of the Brazos represented himself as belonging to the Kioways, and at the same time betrayed a knowledge of the reserve difficulties, which would only be obtained from Indians on them.

"In regard to the acts of the people, there can be no doubt some excesses have been committed; and it is perfectly true that some letter writers, and one or two presses, have given currency to very exaggerated, and false reports, and, by inflammatory appeals, sought to lead the people to intemperate extremes, in times when wise counsels were needed; and we

are impressed with the belief that the great mass of the people have acted under an honest conviction that self-preservation demanded action, and, considering the excitement and haste with which they have been, on several occasions, drawn together, that they have acted with much forbearance and propriety.

"The exceptions to this remark include that reckless few who are ever ready to enlist under a popular banner for sinister motives.

"We have made no mention of the desolation along the frontier, farms abandoned, families removed into the settlements for safety, and the general feeling of insecurity everywhere manifest. Your obedient servants,

"John Henry Brown, G. B. Erath, J. M. Steiner, J. M. Smith, Richard Coke.

"To: His Excellency, H. R. Runnels, Governor of the State of Texas.

**301. Report of Robert S. Neighbors.** - In order to be fair and considerate of both rival factions we also give the report of Major Robert S. Neighbors, Supt. of Indian Affairs in Texas:

"Gentlemen: I have received your letter of this date, in relation to the serious disturbances on the frontier, growing out of the recent demonstrations of armed citizens against the Indians on the Indian reservations. It affords me pleasure to meet you in your capacity as commissioners, and to consult with you freely on the subjects alluded to, and to place in your hands all the information in my reach, as, in all of our efforts heretofore, we, who are officers of the general government, have found, during our late troubles, no competent authority representing the state of Texas, with whom we could act. In reviewing this subject, and the causes which have led to the present state of affairs, I deem it improper to go further back than the 1st of December last, from the fact that, at that date, the whole subject of differences between the citizens of Texas, the United States Indian agents, and the Indians on the reservations, was fully and impartially investigated by Colonel Hawkins, a United States commissioner, and his official report was made to the honorable Secretary of the Interior, at Washington, about the 1st of January last; and were I to do more than to refer you to that report, I would have to draw upon memory, when there are recorded facts in the proper department of the general government. That report, as I am informed by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, was given to Hon. Guy M. Bryan, one of the Committee of Indian Affairs, for publication, who kept it until the adjournment of Congress. I have, consequently, never been able to obtain a copy. I can best inform you of the subjects of the investigation made by United States

Commissioner Hawkins, by submitting for your inspection the official copies of the charges of sundry citizens of Texas against the Indians on the reserves and the Indian agents. Colonel Hawkins held his court at Camp Cooper about four weeks, and at this agency about one week. All the parties were summoned to attend, and all parties interested were notified to attend by a general notice, published in the newspapers at Dallas, Waco, Austin, San Antonio and Weatherford, so that general notice was given in due time for their attendance, and Captain Allison Nelson was summoned with three several notices, one of which was served on him by Mr. Lazenby, at the town of Golconda, three weeks before the adjournment of the commissioners' court.

"That trial resulted in the acquittal and vindication of both Indians and agents fully; and the agents proved a negative to many of the charges. That investigation proved, by a number of our most respectable citizens, that there had been a conspiracy formed by a number of persons, viz: Allison, Nelson, John R. Baylor, late Indian agent, as the heads, with a number of other persons, whose names appear in the record, for the avowed purpose of displacing the Indian agents, and of murdering the Indians on the United States reservations, and robbing them of their property. This was to be brought about by numerous publications and reports, put in circulation on account of the depredations committed by the wild Comanches, and other lawless persons, and by charging the agents with complicity.

"After these measures were defeated by the investigation, we find a portion of the same parties engaged in the murder of the party of Caddoes, under Choctaw Tom, near Golconda; and the same system of falsehood and misrepresentation that led to the first investigation by Colonel Hawkins has been pursued with renewed force and vigor by the same parties, with increasing numbers, until the organization was finally made, under Baylor, who attacked the lower reserve on the 23rd of May. For the particulars of that affair I would respectfully refer you to the official report of Captain Plummer, United States army commander at this post, a copy of which accompanies this letter.

"In regard to the 'charges' that have been made against the Indians and agents referred to in the second paragraph of your letter, the same were disproven before the United States commissioner by a large number of the best citizens on this frontier. These charges are absolutely false in every particular. So far as the agents are concerned, we have treated them with contempt, from the fact that we have never believed it possible that the people of Texas could be so far misled by designing men, without clear antecedents, as to believe them for a moment, especially when it was taken into consideration by those who have known me, that I have been in Texas since 1836; served my country in responsible stations until 1842, and,

after two years' imprisonment in Mexico, entered the service again as Indian agent under the old republic and served to the end of Mr. Polk's administration in that capacity; then as a commissioner of the state of New Mexico; two years in the legislature as representative of Bexar County as the elector of the western district during Mr. Pierce's canvass; and for the last six years as the supervising Indian agent, without ever having a single charge brought against me, until they were placed in the present shape before the people by the parties heretofore alluded to. Captain S. P. Ross, the resident agent of this reserve, came to Texas at an early period, and served his country with equal honor and integrity up to the present day. We both have families, and all our interests are identified with Texas. If this is not a sufficient guarantee, with the confidence expressed by having our appointments renewed by the President of the United States this spring, and our nominations unanimously approved by the United States Senate, then I fear that we shall be unable to convince the people of Texas, unless they will grant us, what we have demanded from the first, 'an investigation by any legal tribunal, either in the state or out of it.'

"The charges are equally false against the Indians on the reserves, which is proven, firstly, by the promptness with which they have responded to every call for the defense of the frontier, both with Captain Ford, and more recently with Major Van Dorn, by which three very important victories have been gained over the Comanches. Their behavior was such as to meet a complimentary approval from General Twiggs. Second, good citizens always appeal to the laws. There is not on file any legal affidavit, or other testimony, to show that any Indian on either reserve has committed a single one of the many depredations charged to them, although the parties making these charges have been called on frequently to produce the evidence; and it must appear preposterous to attempt to impose such falsehoods upon the people of the frontier, 'as the agents shielding the Indians in crime,' when the parties making the charges are afraid to come before the courts of the country with even one single affidavit to 'make' the charge valid; and I assert, without fear of contradiction from any source whatever, that there has not been, within my knowledge, a single violation of the treaty between the Indians of the reserves and the United States. There are no provisions in that treaty by which those Indians are to be kept within the limits of the reserves; nor is there any law or rule that would compel the Indians to submit to it, as they all have the right to claim protection under the state laws should they choose to do so. It is consequently only a police regulation between the chiefs of the United States military, and the agents by which the Indians are confined as strictly to the reserves as possible, and for the last six or eight months they have not been permitted to go out, even to hunt their own stock, except in company with some responsible white man; and the United States troops have been equally vigilant, in order to protect the Indians from being shot down by some

lawless person or of bringing about a collision with citizens, which both agents and military officers have been determined to prevent ,if possible,

"In regard to the fourth paragraph of your letter, I can only give it as my opinion that the causes are, first, the unbounded ambition of Messrs. Nelson, Baylor, etc., to obtain the offices held by Captain Ross, Colonel Leeper and myself, and to get control of the money appropriated by the general government for the support of the Indians on the reserves, they having frequently said, in their publications, 'that they (the agents) have a good time of it;' and J. R. Baylor was considered, I have no doubt, a good judge, because he was dismissed from service by the general government for 'having a good time of it' during the eighteen months that he was in service. This his own accounts will show whenever anyone chooses to investigate.

"I have adopted the usual means as are usual for disbursing officers. I asked and obtained an investigation openly before a legal tribunal, and all the opposing parties had due notice to attend. The investigation acquitted the parties accused of all charges, which was certified to by our members of Congress, the executive of this state, and generally published in the newspapers of the day.

"In regard to the fifth paragraph, the determination of the general government to remove the reserve Indians out of Texas at the 'earliest practicable moment,' has been published in all the newspapers from San Antonio to Trinity, and, I believe, copied generally throughout the state. I have also furnished official copies to Governor Runnels. I have no further orders, although I have urged upon the government the immediate removal, and my preparations are forwarded, under my instructions, to move them whenever I am ordered to do so by the proper authorities.

"As to the disposition of the Indians, they assure me that they will not seek personal revenge, 'are willing to bury the past if let alone,' and will rely solely on the laws of our country for redress for past grievances. This is certainly more than their more civilized neighbors have done thus far, as Baylor's party have endeavored to massacre their wives and children while they were yet with Major Van Dorn in the service of their country.

"In conclusion, it appears, by a paragraph in your commission and instructions, that his excellency entertains the belief that the Indians of the reserves and the agents are parties to these disturbances on our frontier, as he uses the following language, viz:

""This movement is the result of many difficulties and continued quarrels and disturbances between the citizens on that frontier

and the Indians at the agency, which has been unceasing for months past.'

"Had this language been used by any private individual, I should simply denounce it as false; but knowing the desire of his excellency to preserve quiet on the frontier, I can only attribute it to the many rumors put in circulation to prejudice the people of the state against the Indians. I therefore most solemnly protest, on the part of the United States, against the application of that paragraph or sentiment of his excellency to the Indians of this reserve; and will assert, without fear of contradiction, that in no single instance has any Indian quarreled with a frontier citizen on this reserve, or off of it, to my knowledge; and, further, that neither the Indians nor agents have ever had any lot or part in this matter, but have in every case acted in self defense.

"I deem it only necessary, therefore, to assure you and through you, the citizens and executives of the state, that I shall continue, as I have done heretofore, or until the Indians are removed, to use every influence in my command to prevent further collision between the Indians and those who have placed themselves in hostile array against them, and have thereby created all the late difficulties.

"Hoping, gentlemen, that you may be successful in your mission, and that your exertions may restore peace and quiet to our frontier, I am very respectfully, your obedient servant,

"ROBERT S. NEIGHBORS.

"To: Messrs. G. B. Erath. J. M. Smith, Richard Coke. John H. Brown, J. M. Sterner."

**302. The Camp of John Henry Brown and His Command at Caddo Springs.** - For the purpose of preventing further conflicts between the citizens and Indians, John Henry Brown was assigned to a command of one hundred volunteer troops, and instructed to camp somewhere near the Brazos agency. July 11th the command camped at Caddo Springs on the Brazos, just outside of the lower reserve.

**303. The Removal of the Indians to Oklahoma.** - The time and manner of the removal of the Indians to Oklahoma, was vividly outlined by Major Robert S. Neighbors, in his report dated August 18, 1859, and in part was as follows:

"Camp on the False Washita, August 18, 1859.

"Sir: I have the honor to report that I left Brazos agency, Texas, with Indians of that reserve, on the 1st instant, after having instructed Agent Leeper to move forward with the Comanches

from Comanche agency, and form a junction with me at Red River.

"Agent Leeper, with all the Comanches, marched on the 30th ultimo, under an escort of one company of infantry under Captain Gilbert. Our escort consisted of one company of infantry and two companies of second cavalry, all under the command of Major G. H. Thomas.

"Both parties arrived at the crossing of Red River on the evening of the 7th instant, where the parties were, on the 8th, crossed over.

"We arrived at Major Steen's crossing of the False Washita on the 16th. Having communicated with Agent Blair, who was camped about five miles below, and finding that he had not designated the point for the Washita agency I, on the 17th, moved up the river about four miles, where I have established my camp, to await the arrival of Superintendent Rector, or his deputy, to whom I am to turn over the Indians now under my charge. I have this day issued to the Indians under my charge seven days' rations, which is the total amount of provisions brought with me from Texas. This issue was necessary, from the fact that no provision had been completed to furnish the Texas Indians on their arrival.

"Previous to leaving the Brazos agency, I sold the whole stock of hogs belonging to the Indians, and placed Mr. Buttorff, a very respectable citizen, in charge of the agency buildings; and Captain Plummer left a small party of troops at the same point, to guard some supplies belonging to the troops. I also made an arrangement with Mr. Buttorff and several of the stock-raisers in the vicinity, to gather up the Indian cattle, a large portion of which they were unable to collect, on account of the hostile attitude assumed by the State troops and a portion of the citizens, one Indian having already been killed in trying to gather his stock, as heretofore reported.

"Agents Ross and Leeper are both with me. In addition to the necessity for Agent Ross' services on the trip, there was no government property left at the agency, except the buildings, and none of the employes were willing to remain; they were consequently employed for the trip, as teamsters, etc. I have also with me the blacksmith, with all his tools and material."

Captain John Henry Brown and his command accompanied the Indians as far as Red River, and in due time the several reservation tribes were permanently stationed on new reserves near Fort Cobb and not far distant from the present city of Lawton. And from that time forward the reservation Indians of Oklahoma, as well as the wild tribes of the plains, waged an unceasing war against the West Texas frontier.

**304. The Mysterious Disappearance of Mrs. Ed Carnett; and Murder of Major Robert S. Neighbors.** - The mysterious disappearance of Mrs. Ed Carnett has remained a mystery. According to one report, her husband had been indicted and to avoid the trial which was set for the succeeding day, some of his friends took his wife to Collin County, to the home of her mother, and reported that she had been stolen by the Indians. This, of course, caused the court to adjourn and search for Mrs. Carnett. According to another report, she was near her home, which was located adjacent to Barrel or Caddo Springs, and was pulling bark from the rail fence. Moccasin tracks indicated that two Indians came up and took her by the arm and led her away. Her trail was followed for several miles, but was finally lost. The matter was reported to Maj. Robert S. Neighbors, who said that the Indians were innocent.

It seems that Ed Carnett himself, was of the opinion that his wife had been stolen by the Indians; for he and Van Burns, according to reliable information, went to Oklahoma and watched an Indian village by night, in search of his lost wife.

And, according to reports, Maj. Robert S. Neighbors made the statement that the Indians were innocent and since on other occasions he had made some very bitter remarks concerning the citizens, on the 14th of September, 1859, Maj. Robert S. Neighbors, who had been serving Texas and Texans since 1836, was ambushed and shot on the streets of Belknap.

The abandonment of the reserves, and murder of Maj. Robert S. Neighbors ended one of the most picturesque, dramatic and thrilling chapters of Texas history.

Ref.: Before writing the above sections, the author personally interviewed Joe Moore, W. J. Langley, Tobe Palmer, and perhaps one or two others who fought in the reservation fight. Also interviewed Jimmie Stephens, a cousin of Samuel W. Stephens, Ewing Ferguson, Ike Roberts, L. F. Roberts, A. M. Lasater, A. L. Ham, James Wood, Joe Fowler, Lafayette Wilson, John Marlin, a son of Wm. Marlin. F. M. Peveler, Babe Williams, Henry Williams, Mann Johnson, Mrs. H. G. Taylor, Mrs. Huse Bevers, Mrs. M. J. Hart, E. K. Taylor, J. Campbell Jowell, Mrs. Julia Scott, Mrs. Natilda Van Cleve, W. A. (Bill) Ribble, Tom Ribble, C. A. Dalton, W. B. Slaughter, B. C. (Cook) Harris, Mrs. Wm. Metcalf, and several others who were living in Palo Pinto, Stephenville, and Young County, and other points adjacent to the reservation at the time the above events occurred. Further reference: The Repts. of Com. of Ind. Affairs, and the Repts. of the Sec. of War, for 1859, Recds, on file in the office of Com. of Ind. Affairs, in Washington; Hist. of Texas, by John Henry Brown; Hist. of Regulators and Moderators, by Jno. W. Middleton. Also corresponded with J. C. Cureton and M. F. Barber.